

THE HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES aims to make it possible for the East and the West to know each other and so to respect and trust each other.—For us all, as members of the world-family, no duty is more urgent than that of mutual understanding. Thereon depends the mutual goodwill that casts out fear and makes for peace,—the goodwill that BUDDHA insistently and mightily taught two thousand years and more ago.

Henry Clarke Warren
1854–1899

early addressed himself to the inspiring task of carrying on the work of the greatest teacher of pre-Christian Asia. Warren's *Buddhism* is a noble monument to his scholarship, his courage in adversity, and his prophetic vision of what is to-day the world's direst need,
mutual goodwill

The books of this Series are printed at the expense of funds given to Harvard University by Warren. A brief account of his life may be found at the end of volume 30, *Buddhist Legends*. It is reprinted at the end of the seventh and eighth issues (1922) of his *Buddhism*. As a part of President Eliot's *Harvard Classics*, and as volume 3 of this Series, Warren's *Buddhism* has won an exceedingly wide circulation.

A DESCRIPTIVE LIST of the books of this Series may be found at the end of this volume.—To the List are prefixed some statements that concern the Series in general and its bearing upon world-progress.

This work was set up and electrotyped at the University Press,
Oxford, England, by John Johnson, Printer to the University
The press-work was done at the Harvard University Press,
Cambridge, Massachusetts
This first issue was printed in 2000 copies

EDITORIAL NOTE

This work was written and the proof-sheets were corrected by Lord Chalmers while Master of Peterhouse. — The electrotype-plates were sent from Oxford University Press to Harvard University Press in 1931.

Circumstances beyond the control of the undersigned disabled him from attending to duties, partly editorial and partly matters of business, concerning volumes of this Series now outstanding at Bombay and Goettingen and Oxford and here. Among them was this volume, some plate-revision and the press-work of which were long delayed.

That the date of the Preface (1931) differs from that of the title-page (1932), is not an oversight, but the record of a deplorable fact. I hope the delay has not annoyed Lord Chalmers as sorely as it has distressed me. His patience and kindness have been unailing.

HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

EDITED

WITH THE COÖPERATION OF VARIOUS SCHOLARS

BY

CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN

B.A., Yale, 1871

Hon. LL.D., Yale, 1902

Professor of Sanskrit (1880-) at Harvard University

*Correspondant (1908) de l'Académie des Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres
de l'Institut de France*

Volume Thirty-seven



CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS

Harvard University Press

LONDON : HUMPHREY MILFORD

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

1932

B U D D H A ' S T E A C H I N G S

BEING THE

Sutta-Nipāta or Discourse-Collection

EDITED IN THE ORIGINAL PALI TEXT
WITH AN ENGLISH VERSION FACING IT

BY

LORD CHALMERS

G.C.B. Hon. D.Litt., Oxford

*Sometime Master of Peterhouse, Cambridge University
Sometime Governor of Ceylon*



Πάντα γέλως καὶ πάντα κόνις καὶ πάντα τὸ μηδέν·
πάντα γὰρ ἐξ ἀλόγων ἐστὶ τὰ γινόμενα. — GLYCON

CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS

Harvard University Press

LONDON : HUMPHREY MILFORD

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

1932

Some other works by the author of this volume

A History of Currency in the British Colonies. By Robert Chalmers, B.A., of Oriel College, Oxford: and of Her Majesty's Treasury. London: Printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office. 1893

The Jātaka or Stories of the Buddha's Former Births. Translated from the Pali by various hands, under the editorship of Professor E. B. Cowell. Vol. 1. Translated by Robert Chalmers, B.A., of Oriel College, Oxford. Cambridge: at the University Press. 1895

The Majjhima-Nikāya. Edited by Robert Chalmers [in continuation of the edition of V. Trenckner, vol. 1, 1888]: vol. 2, 1898: vol. 3, 1899. London. Published for the Pali Text Society, by the Oxford University Press

Further Dialogues of the Buddha. Translated from the Pali of the Majjhima-Nikāya, by Lord Chalmers, G.C.B. Vol. 1, 1926: vol. 2, 1927. London, Oxford University Press

PRAEPOSITO SOCIISQUE
ORIENTALIBUS
TROPHAEA

PREFACE

SOME time ago, when reading the Sutta-Nipāta, I was led to the conclusion that, while all verse when translated should receive a metrical rendering, it was particularly desirable to make the attempt here, so as to emphasize in English the historically significant varieties of versification found in the Pāli. In 1928 Professor Lanman suggested that, with a Pāli text on the opposite page (as in the Loeb Classics), my metrical experiment should find a place in the Harvard Oriental Series. This volume is the outcome of his suggestion.

My Pāli text has been based on Fausböll's *editio princeps* of 1885 and on the 'new edition' of 1913 for the Pāli Text Society (by Andersen and Helmer Smith),—as modified by the subsequent P.T.S. editions of the Commentary on the Sutta-Nipāta (Paramatthajotikā II) and of the canonical Niddesa. The conclusion borne in on me was that, apart from minor matters and a very few real divergences of readings, the text of the Sutta-Nipāta (thanks to this distinguished *paramparā* of Danish scholars) was practically now a *textus receptus*; and that, in a volume which is primarily intended for English readers, it was unnecessary to discuss various readings which Pāli scholars can readily investigate in the authorities quoted above. Where I have differed, I have aimed at the restoration, not at the conjectural emendation, of the text.

Nor, in the matter of interpretation of the text, have I thought it desirable to cumber the translation with polemic notes or with a record of others' renderings. I have therefore confined myself to an examination (in the *Introduction*) into the literary evolution of the Sutta-Nipāta, so far as it can be traced to-day, and will let the version speak for itself as a commentary no less than as a rendering.

My conclusion is that, while its materials are by no means all of equal antiquity, there is no older *book* in Buddhist literature than the Sutta-Nipāta, and no earlier corpus of primitive Buddhist doctrine than it contains.

While the presence of the Pāli on the opposite page forbids exuberance in translation, the limitations of metre (and I have sought to make the English follow roughly the Pāli scheme of versification) make it no easy matter—even without rhyme—to compress terse Pāli into a relatively modest compass in English. *Ignoscent experti.*

PETERHOUSE,

18 February 1931.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	vii
INTRODUCTION.	xiii

Tabular conspectus of the five main divisions (Vaggas or 'Books')

Book	Name	Suttas	Stanzas	Fausbøll	Name in Pali	
1	Snake Book	12	221	1-221	Uruga vagga	2
2	Short Book	14	183	222-404	Cūla vagga	54
3	Long Book	12	361	405-765	Mahā vagga	98
4	The Octads	16	210	766-975	Aṭṭhaka vagga	184
5	The Way-across	16	174	976-1149	Pārāyana vagga	234

Table of the seventy Suttas or minor divisions

*For some Pali sutta-names (marked with a star) there are alternative Pali names.
These are given below, at end of page xi.*

BOOK 1. THE SNAKE BOOK, OR URAGA VAGGA

Sutta	Name in Pali	
1. As Snakes slough outworn skins	Uragasutta	2
2. Dhaniya, the rich herdsman	Dhaniyasutta	4
3. Alone—like the rhinoceros	Khaggavisāṇasutta	10
4. Bhāradvāja, the franklin	Kasi-Bhāradvāja-sutta	20
5. Cunda, the smith	Cundasutta	24
6. The Twelve Failures	Parābhavasutta	26
7. The Wastrel	*Vasalasutta	30
8. Good-will	Mettasutta	36
9. The Himālayan Sprite	*Hemavatasutta	38
10. The Woodland Sprite	Ālavakasutta	44
11. Disillusion (as to the body)	*Vijayasutta	46
12. The Sage	Munisutta	48

BOOK 2. THE SHORT BOOK, OR CŪLA VAGGA

1. The Three Gems	Ratanasutta	54
2. Carrion	Āmagandhasutta	58
3. Loyalty	Hirisutta	62
4. The Boon of Boons	Mahāmangalasutta	64
5. Inward Growths	Sūcilomasutta	66
6. The Good Life	*Dhammacariyasutta	68
7. Brahminism's Golden Age	Brāhmaṇadhammikasutta	70

<i>Sutta</i>	<i>Name in Pali</i>	
8. The Good Ship	*Nāvāsutta	76
9. Right Conduct	Kimsīlasutta	78
10. Arise!	Uṭṭhānasutta	78
11. To Rāhula	Rāhulasutta	80
12. Kappa's Destiny	*Vangīsasutta	82
13. The Anchorite's Ideal	*Sammāparibbājaniyasutta	86
14. The Almsman's Life and the Householder's	Dhammikasutta	90

BOOK 3. THE LONG BOOK, OR MAHĀ VAGGA

1. Gotama's Pilgrimage	Pabbajjāsutta	98
2. Gotama's Temptation by Māra	Padhānasutta	100
3. Apt Words	Subhāsitasutta	104
4. Offerings	*Sundarika-Bhāradvājasutta	106
5. Māgha; or Largesse	Māghasutta	114
6. Sabhiya's Questions	Sabhiyasutta	120
7. The Superman	Selasutta	132
8. The Pangs of Grief	Sallasutta	144
9. What is a Brahmin?	Vāsetṭhasutta	146
10. Slander's Doom	*Kokāliyasutta	156
11. Asita's <i>Nunc dimittis</i>	*Nālakasutta	164
12. The Dyads: Origin and Ending of Ills	Dvayatānupassanāsutta	172

BOOK 4. BOOK OF OCTADS, OR AṬṬHAKA VAGGA

1. Prologue: Desires	Kāmasutta	184
2. Octad of the Den	Guhattṭhakasutta	184
3. Octad of Malice	Duṭṭhattṭhakasutta	186
4. Octad of Purity	Suddhattṭhakasutta	188
5. Octad of Perfection	Paramattṭhakasutta	192
6. Vita brevis	Jarāsutta	192
7. Lechery	Tissa-Metteyya-sutta	196
8. Warring sects	Pasūrasutta	196
9. Beauty scorned	Māgandiyasutta	200
10. 'Ere dissolution comes'	Purābhedasutta	202
11. Contentions	Kalaha-vivāda-sutta	204
12. Rejoinders	Cūla-viyūha-sutta	210
13. More Rejoinders	Mahā-viyūhasutta	214
14. Without delay	Tuvaṭṭakasutta	220
15. The Armed Hand	Attadaṇḍasutta	224
16. What Sāriputta asked	*Sāriputtasutta	228

BOOK 5. BOOK OF THE WAY-ACROSS, OR PĀRĀYANA VAGGA

Division

1. Prologue: Bāvari and his 16 disciples		Vatthugāthā	234
	<i>Answer to</i>	<i>Sutta</i>	<i>Pucchā</i>
2. Ajita's question	(1)	Ajitamāṇavapucchā	242
3. Tissa Metteyya's question	(2)	Tissametteyyamāṇavapucchā	244
4. Puṇṇaka's question	(3)	Puṇṇakamāṇavapucchā	244
5. Mettagū's question	(4)	Mettagūmāṇavapucchā	246
6. Dhotaka's question	(5)	Dhotakamāṇavapucchā	250
7. Upasīva's question	(6)	Upasīvamāṇavapucchā	252
8. Nanda's question	(7)	Nandamāṇavapucchā	254
9. Hemaka's question	(8)	Hemakamāṇavapucchā	256
10. Todeyya's question	(9)	Todeyyamāṇavapucchā	258
11. Kappa's question	(10)	Kappamāṇavapucchā	258
12. Jatukaṇṇi's question	(11)	Jatukaṇṇimāṇavapucchā	260
13. Bhadrāvudha's question	(12)	Bhadrāvudhamāṇavapucchā	260
14. Udaya's question	(13)	Udayamāṇavapucchā	262
15. Posāla's question	(14)	Posālamāṇavapucchā	264
16. Mogharāja's question	(15)	Mogharājamāṇavapucchā	264
17. Pingiya's question	(16)	Pingiyamāṇavapucchā	266
— Epilogue: lauding Gotama and his Way-across			266

INDEXES

(I) Pali	275
(II) English (by Miss Isaline Horner)	292

Alternative Pali names for Suttas marked above with a star

1.07. Vasala-sutta or Aggi(ka)-Bhāradvāja-sutta (cf. 1.4 and 3.4)	30
1.09. Hemavata-sutta or Sātāgira-sutta	38
1.11. Vijaya-sutta or Kāya-vicchandaniya-sutta	46
2.06. Dhammacariya-sutta or Kapila-sutta	68
2.08. Nāvā-sutta or Dhamma-sutta	76
2.12. Vangīsa-sutta or Nigrodha-Kappa-sutta	82
2.13. Sammā-paribbājaniya-sutta or Muni-sutta or Mahāsamaya-sutta	86
3.04. Sundarika-Bhāradvāja-sutta or Pūḷāsa-sutta	106
3.10. Kokāliya-sutta or Kokālika-sutta	156
3.11. Nālaka-sutta or Moneyya-sutta	164
4.16. Sāriputta-sutta or Thera-paṇha-sutta	228

INTRODUCTION

THE Pāli Canon, as it has come down to us, is divided into three Piṭakas (or 'baskets'), viz.:

- I. Vinaya-p°,—containing the detailed Rule with which (in a simpler form) Gotama's bhikkhus (or 'Almsmen') began their corporate life.
- II. Sutta-p°,—containing (subsequent) discourses and dialogues, embodying doctrinal Buddhism.
- III. Abhidhamma-p°,—containing (still later) scholastic expositions of the Sutta-piṭaka.

The Sutta-Nipāta, which is here translated, contains an ancient, probably the most ancient, part of the Sutta-piṭaka. It belongs to that portion of the Sutta-piṭaka which is named the Khuddaka Nikāya, or 'collection of short' treatises (as distinct from the four long Nikāyas,—called Dīgha, Majjhima, Saṃyutta, and Anguttara).

Of the five Vaggas (or 'books') of the present Sutta-Nipāta, the fifth stands out from its fellows by reason of its purposeful unity. While the Uraga, Mahā, Cūla, and Aṭṭhaka Vaggas consist each of a collection of independent and unconnected poems (sometimes interspersed with prose) called *Suttas*, the Pārāyana aims at a dramatic synthesis. Its prologue and epilogue serve as a setting to the sixteen Questions which elicit Gotama's gradual exposition of the saving 'Way Across',—an exposition which collectively is styled a homily (dhamma-pariyāya) in the prose preface to verse 1124 (cf. v. 1130) and is classified as simply a 'suttanta' (not a Vagga, or 'book' of many suttas) at Paramatthajotikā, II. 163.

Uncertainty still attaches to the sense in which the word 'Sutta' was used in primitive Buddhism. Originally meaning 'a thread', the word has come to denote prose narratives or dialogues concerning the *dhamma*, such as those which, in (e.g.) the Dīgha and Majjhima Nikāyas, characterize the great Sutta-Piṭaka,—in contradistinction to the contents of the Vinaya and Abhidhamma Piṭakas. But this was not the case from the outset. Thus, (a) in the Vinaya (II. 95), we find 'Sutta' specifically applied to the canonical Pātimokkha:—'Ubhayāni assa Pātimokkhāni vitthārena svāgatāni honti . . . *suttato* anuvyañjanaso' ('to him have been handed down accurately and in full both Pātimokkhas, Sutta by Sutta and in extenso'). (b) At the end of the canonical Sutta Vibhanga's exposition of the Pātimokkha (Vin. IV. 351), there occur the words: 'Ettakaṃ tassa Bhagavato *sutta*-gataṃ *sutta*-pariyāpannaṃ anvadhamāsaṃ uddesaṃ āgacchati' ('thus much of the Lord's words, as handed

down in Suttas and as embodied in Suttas, comes in course of recitation once a fortnight'). And (c) at Vinaya, II. 96-7 there is a condemnation of any 'dhamma-kathika', or professed reciter of the Dhamma (not of the Vinaya alone, it will incidentally be noted), who has failed to master not only the Pātimokkha *Suttas* but also the *Sutta-Vibhanga* commentary thereon ('tassa Suttaṃ āgataṃ, no Sutta-vibhango', or—a *fortiori*—'tassa n' eva Suttaṃ āgataṃ no Sutta-vibhango').

While the foregoing quotations prove the use of the term 'Sutta' to include the disciplinary regulations of the young Community, I am not aware of the term being applied in the Canon to isolated apophthegms, which formed the kernel of Gotama's doctrinal teachings. It may well be, I suggest, that the title of 'Sutta' (primarily meaning 'thread' or 'string', cf. Sumangala Vilāsini, I. 18) was reserved from the outset for any consecutive *thread* of argument or narration (whether of Rule or of Doctrine) continuously *strung* together and coherent.¹

II

The compilation of the Pāli Canon must have been spread over centuries, and have employed successive generations of ecclesiastical authors and editors before the present Ti-piṭaka was finally evolved. No credence can be extended to the orthodox Buddhist belief that the whole Pāli Canon—at least in essentials—was settled in its present form at the First Council (which was held immediately after Gotama's death in (?) 483 B.C.). Originally, there were no 'scriptures', only memories of individual utterances by Gotama, and perhaps by his chief lieutenants,—memories like those which, some five and a half centuries later, formed the basic material of the Christian synoptics. Indeed, it cannot safely be assumed that, *in its present form*, any given 'book' of the Canon dates back to before Asoka's Council held at Patna in (perhaps) 240 B.C.

Composition of course preceded compilation; the date (if ascertainable) of the compilation of a canonical 'book' as a whole does not determine the date of composition of its constituents,—which latter may well be more ancient, in whole or part, than the synthetic book into which they have been incorporated.

¹ At Sumangala Vilāsini, I. 23, Buddhaghosa defines 'sutta' as denoting 'the two (Sutta-) Vibhanga, the Niddesa, the Khandhakas and Parivāra (of the Vinaya Piṭaka), the Mangala, Ratana, Nālaka, and Tuvāṭaka Suttas in the Sutta-Nipāta, together with all other utterances of the Tathāgata which are styled Suttas.'

He adds, that all those Suttas which contain both prose and verse are also classified as 'geyya'.

It will be noted, and is (I think) significant, that the list starts with the ancient *Commentaries* on (a) the Vinaya and (b) the Sutta-Nipāta's earliest elements.

In support of the belief now generally accepted that the Pāli Canon was evolved from common material, there is the evidence afforded not only by the constant repetition throughout the great Nikāyas of 'stock passages' (which were as convenient for Eastern recitation as they are wearisome to a Western reader) but also by the frequent incorporation of the same composition, title and all, in more than one canonical book. To take a simple instance from the Sutta-Nipāta:—the Sela and Vāseṭṭha Suttas of our Mahā-vagga recur verbatim under the same titles in the Majjhima Nikāya. Also, the Metta Sutta of our Uruga Vagga, and the Ratana and (Mahā-) Mangala Suttas of our Cūla-vagga, reappear bodily in the canonical Khuddaka Pāṭha. Numerous also are the instances of individual stanzas of the Sutta-Nipāta recurring elsewhere in the Canon;—e.g. verses 45 and 46 are found also in the Majjhima Nikāya (III. 154), and in the Vinaya (I. 350), as well as in the Dhammapada (vv. 328-9).

A special light, however, is thrown on the evolution of our Sutta-Nipāta by the inclusion *in the Canon* of its ancient commentary, called Niddesa (or 'exposition'). Now, this canonical Niddesa is a commentary not on the whole of our 'Sutta-Nipāta' (which it does not name *as such*) but only on its concluding Vaggas (Aṭṭhaka and Pārāyana) and on the Khaggavisāṇa (or 'rhinoceros') Sutta of the Uruga Vagga. The canonical Niddesa, therefore, leaves untouched (i) the whole of the Mahā and Cūla Vaggas, and (ii) eleven out of twelve Suttas of the Uruga Vagga; i.e. it wholly ignores the Sutta-Nipāta's corporate title and two-thirds of its existing contents.

But the Canonical Niddesa is not the sole external authority for the relative age of our Sutta-Nipāta. Further direct (and corroborative) evidence is furnished by the following references to our Sutta-Nipāta in other canonical books, such as the Vinaya and the Saṃyutta and Anguttara Nikāyas,—references, it will be observed, which are specifically restricted to those two Vaggas with which the Niddesa deals. Thus:

- (i) Sn. 844 is quoted at Saṃyutta Nikāya, III. 9 and 12:—*Vuttaṃ idam Bhagavatā Aṭṭhaka-vaggike Māgandiya-paṇhe: 'Okarā pahāya . . . kayirā ti'.*
- (ii) Sn. 1038 is quoted at Saṃyutta Nikāya, II. 47:—*Vuttaṃ idam Pārāyane Ajita-paṇhe: 'Ye ca . . . mārisāti'.*
- (iii) Sn. 1042 is quoted at Anguttara Nikāya, III. 399:—*Vuttaṃ idam Bhagavatā Pārāyane Metteyya-paṇhe: 'Yo ubh' ante . . . accagā ti'.*
- (iv) Sn. 1048 is quoted at Anguttara Nikāya, I. 133 and II. 45:—*Idaṃ ca pana me taṃ sandhāya bhāsitaṃ Pārāyane Puṇṇaka-paṇhe: 'Saṃkhāya . . . brūmīti'.*
- (v) Sn. 1106-7 is quoted at Anguttara Nikāya, I. 134:—*Idaṃ ca pana me taṃ sandhāya bhāsitaṃ Pārāyane Udaya-paṇhe: 'Pahānaṃ . . . pabhedanaṃ'.*

- (vi) At Vinaya, I. 196¹, Soṇa, being asked by Gotama to show what he knew of the Dhamma, recited the whole contents of the Aṭṭhaka Vagga:—Sabbān' eva Aṭṭhaka-vaggikāni sareṇa abbāsi.

Hence it may be concluded that, at the date of its composition, the existing Niddesa covered as a commentary the whole of the then existing 'Sutta-Nipāta'; and that, after the composition of the Niddesa commentary, but before the Pāli Canon was fixed, further material was incorporated with the Pārāyana, the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, and the Khaggavisāṇa Sutta to make up the final Sutta-Nipāta as it has come down to us in the Canon. Thus the Pārāyana, the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, and the Khaggavisāṇa are older, as a compilation, not only than the canonical Niddesa which comments on them, but also than (those portions of) the Vinaya and of the two Nikāyas which specifically cite them.

III

But, as has been noted *supra*, authorship precedes editorial compilation; and the ascertained stages of growth of a compiled 'book' by no means settle the relative date of composition of its contents, a question for the solution of which internal evidence must be invoked, for what it is worth.

Internal evidence may be linguistic, metrical, or doctrinal.

Mainly on linguistic grounds, Fausbøll (in his Introduction to his translation of the Sutta-Nipāta in vol. x of the *Sacred Books of the East*) originally considered 'the greater part of the Mahāvagga and nearly the whole of the Aṭṭhaka-vagga' as very old', arriving at this conclusion from two reasons, first from the language, and secondly from the contents (the latter perhaps not on sufficient grounds). As regards language, 'we not only find here (he said in 1880) what we meet with in other Pāli poetry, the fuller Vedic forms of nouns and verbs in the plural . . . but also unusual (sometimes old) forms² and words. . . . Sometimes we meet also with difficult and irregular constructions, and very condensed expressions. All this (he urged) proves, I think, that these parts of the book are much older than the Suttas in which the language is not only fluent, but of which some verses are even singularly melodious.'

In 1885, however, in the preface to his *editio princeps* of the Pāli text of the Sutta-Nipāta, Fausbøll modified the foregoing view,—solely on external

¹ Repeated at Udāna V. 6, with the specific amplification that Soṇa recited (or 'intoned') 'all the sixteen' Aṭṭhakavaggika Suttas.

In the Pāli Text Society's *Journal* for 1896, and in the *Journal Asiatique* for May 1915, will be found important articles by the late Professor Rhys Davids and by M. Sylvain Lévi, respectively, in which the Soṇa episode is traced beyond the Pāli Canon into Buddhist Sanskrit, Chinese, and Thibetan. A common error of these later translations is the confusion of aṭṭha (= eight) with attha (= welfare).

² I have adopted a suggestion of Professor Lanman that in (e.g.) verse 29 *usabhor iva* represents, by wholly regular sandhi, the old nominative termination *usabhos*. Cf. *thambhor iva* in v. 214, *sāsapor iva* in v. 631, *hamsor iva* in v. 1134; and cf. also *vuttir esā* in vv. 81 and 480.

evidence. 'I ought (he said in 1885) to have added' (*sc.* to the Mahā and Aṭṭhaka Vaggas) 'the Pārāyana Vagga. That my then (1880) expressed opinion holds good about the two last-mentioned at least' (*sc.* the Aṭṭhaka Vagga and the Pārāyana), seems to me to be evident from there being a commentary on them, called Niddesa, which has been incorporated in the Buddhist canon and from their having been quoted' (as Trenckner had pointed out) 'in the Nikāyas and in the Vinaya-piṭaka'.

This frank shifting of linguistic judgement in deference to non-linguistic evidence tends to support Max Müller's general opinion (in his 1880 Introduction to the Dhammapada at p. xix of vol. x of the *S.B.E.*):—'Nor is the language, whether Sanskrit or Pāli, a safe guide for fixing dates. . . . This branch of critical scholarship requires to be cultivated far more extensively and accurately before true scholars would venture to fix the date of a Sanskrit or Pāli text on the strength of linguistic evidence alone.'

To pass from language to metre, anuṣṭubh ślokaś—represented in my translation by blank verse of five accents—constitute a relatively easy metre and thus would naturally be employed, in later recensions, to pad out old triṣṭubh material, which is metrically more difficult to write. Take for example the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, or 'Book of the Octads',—so called because in four of its initial Suttas (Nos. 2–5) there are *eight* stanzas.¹ Though these four eponymous Suttas are all triṣṭubh 'octads', they are now preceded by a Kāma Sutta of only six stanzas, in anuṣṭubh ślokaś, which manifestly forms a late preface to the 'Aṭṭhaka' Vagga as a re-edited whole. So, too, in the Sāriputta Sutta (No. 16) of the same Vagga, the equally edifying ślokaś, Nos. 955–62, suggest an editorial preamble to the vigorous triṣṭubhs with which the Aṭṭhaka Vagga ends. In the Mahāvagga also, the triṣṭubh verse No. 728 persists in the Dvayatānupassanā Sutta as an oasis amid scholastic accretions. So, also, the Pārāyana now consists, as regards nearly three quarters of its contents, of mixed prose and anuṣṭubh ślokaś, which together form as it were a matrix in which are imbedded triṣṭubhs obviously earlier than the interstitial matter surrounding them.

Instances might be multiplied to support the working hypothesis which I venture to advance for the Sutta-Nipāta, that, while all its prose is late, the longer the metrical line the later is the composition likely to have been. It would, however, be straining this working hypothesis unduly to argue that, though in the Pāli Canon triṣṭubhs are most probably ancient, *therefore* all anuṣṭubh ślokaś are necessarily, and in all cases, of late date; for both metres go back to the R̥g-veda.²

¹ The Uruga Vagga is named after its initial Uruga Sutta.

² Charpentier has shown (*Die Suparṇasage*, p. 204 *et seqq.*) that the triṣṭubh is normally used for dialogue in the Vedic hymns and in early narrative poetry, including the Jātaka.

The Pārāyana, which perhaps contains the oldest material in the Sutta-Nipāta and is quoted by name four times in the Nikāyas, calls for special comment. Although the Pārāyana now forms a literary unity, it is made up of divers materials, new and old. Evidently new is:

- (a) the not wholly relevant prologue, dealing with the curse on Bāvarī (? = Babylonian), and
- (b) the epilogue,—except the triṣṭubhs (vv. 1133-4 and 1142-6) which would seem to have been originally a sequel to Pīngiya's Question and to have been amplified subsequently so as to round off the composite Pārāyana.

As regards its sixteen 'Questions', each is in form a separate dialogue dealing with a separate element of Buddhist doctrine; but not all suggest one and the same date of composition. If, tentatively, a metrical test be applied, the triṣṭubhs of the five Questions 3 to 7 (Punnaka's to Nanda's), and of the three Questions 9, 11, and 12 (Todeyya's, Jatukaṇṇī's, and Bhadrāvudha's), would rank as the earlier elements (and, personally, I think such a conclusion probable),—the remaining 'Questions' having been inserted later, when the earliest matter was being supplemented.

Further, there is the direct historical evidence of Asoka's Bhābrū (or Second Bairāt) Rock Edict, which Vincent Smith (*Asoka*, 3rd edition, 1920) would date from Asoka's 13th regnal year, i.e. 257 B.C. As this early Edict cites among seven passages from the Canon at least three from the Sutta-Nipāta (viz. the Muni-sutta (I. 12), the Nālaka-sutta (III. 11), and the Sāriputta-sutta (IV. 16)), there is thus historical evidence for the existence of these Sutta-Nipāta texts before the Patna Council (? 240 B.C.)

The conclusions indicated by the foregoing observations may be summarized as follows:

- (i) The Pārāyana, the Aṭṭhaka Vagga, and the Khaggavisāṇa Sutta are the earliest elements of our present canonical Sutta-Nipāta.
- (ii) These earliest elements preceded in date not only their canonical commentary (the Niddesa) but also those portions (at least) of the Vinaya and of the Saṃyutta and Anguttara Nikāyas which specifically quote them.
- (iii) The date of compilation by Vaggas, which is later than the date of composition of Suttas, does not necessarily fix the date either of original composition, or of later transformations, of Suttas.
- (iv) Metrically, triṣṭubhs suggest the oldest (as prose suggests the latest) elements of our Sutta-Nipāta which, as a composite whole, cannot be dated with any certainty earlier than the final compilation of the Canon.

Introduction

IV

In accord with the foregoing, internal, linguistic and metrical conclusions, are the following considerations—the first based on the primitive connotation of the word ‘buddha’, and the second on the unvarnished presentment in the Sutta-Nipāta of events which later on were overlaid by the exuberance of Oriental fantasy.

(i) Whilst the title of ‘Sambuddha’ (or more fully: ‘Bhagavā Arahaṃ Sammā-sambuddho’) is restricted to him whom we call ‘the Buddha’ (or to his apocryphal seven—later twenty-five—forerunners of other æons), and whilst the uncompounded form ‘buddha’ throughout the Canon usually has the same denotation, there are in the Sutta-Nipāta some half-dozen instances of its use in a more extended sense so as to embrace ‘catusacca-buddhā ariyapuggalā’ (Pj. II. 374), i.e. ‘the Noble ones who are alive to the Four Truths’ of Buddhism. These instances of the plural use of buddhā in the Sutta-Nipāta occur, it will be found, in triṣṭubh stanzas, indicated above as the oldest material of this book; and it seems *a priori* probable that what was in Buddhism at first a title open to all bhikkhus of highest ‘comprehension’ or ‘enlightenment’ (cf. verse 386 d.), came later to be confined to the Founder alone.

(ii) As against the lavish marvels and wonders which, even in canonical writings (e.g. Majjhima Nikāya, Sutta No. 123), embroider the accounts of Gotama’s birth and departure from home, it is with a sense of relief that in the Sutta-Nipāta we find an absence of Nativity prodigies and (in the first two Suttas of the Mahāvagga) a wholesome austerity in the primitive record of his renunciation and of his ascetic quest of Peace. In the Sutta-Nipāta he is simply a well-born Sakyan who left house and home for the higher life and nearly starved himself to death by the implacable rigours of his self-mortifications.

(iii) Notable, too, is the absence from the Sutta-Nipāta of any mention of bhikkhunīs, or *Almswomen*, in connexion with the Buddhist saṅgha or community. It may be that this silence (if not, indeed, accidental) reveals a primitive stage in which there existed Almsmen without Almswomen,—a stage earlier than the accepted account of Gotama’s (eventual) admission of women to his community at the instance of his aunt, Mahā-pajāpati.¹ At all events the Sutta-Nipāta restricts itself to *Almsmen* alone.

(iv) In the Royal Asiatic Society’s Journal for 1898 I advanced the view that the title of ‘Tathāgata’ indicated one who had won through to the truth (tatha). I point out here that this title—given in v. 236 (as usually) to the Buddha—is, in vv. 237–8, extended (in identical terms) to the dhamma and

¹ See Miss Horner’s *Women under primitive Buddhism*, Routledge, 1930.

to the saṅgha. This extension of the title from Gotama to the Doctrine and to the Community excludes from the connotation of tathāgata (as thus extended) those fanciful explanations¹ of Gotama's own career which turn on tathā (=thus), as indicating that Gotama personally followed the exact example, and reproduced the experience, of earlier Buddhas in attaining Buddhahood. As applied here to all three members of the Buddhist Triad alike, tathāgata cannot be restricted in meaning to Gotama's own mental processes and their evolution. These specific processes in time and space, whilst historically untrue of his (subsequent) Community, can have no place in the abstract philosophy of his final Doctrine. The only interpretation of 'tathāgata' which will apply here to dhamma and saṅgha, as well as to the Buddha himself, must be abstract in its nature and not lie in the phenomenal realm of historical sequences. Such an interpretation I find only in deriving the word from *tatha* (=true) and in rendering it in all the three cases alike as 'bringing the Truth'.

But I recognize that the author of vv. 236-8 of the Sutta-Nipāta, in applying the title to dhamma and saṅgha, as well as to 'the Buddha', may simply have failed to understand its meaning.

V

I close this Introduction by adducing two parallels—if, indeed, they are not ultimately one—between Buddhism and Christianity. I premise in advance that there is here no question of one creed borrowing from the other; the relationship goes deeper than that. (In his *Ecclesiastical Polity*, Richard Hooker has affirmed a moral law of divine origin, which is not enshrined in the Bible but is deducible from other sources and derives its sanction from man's rational faculties.)

A. The first of these two parallels relates to what Jeremy Taylor would term 'holy living'. From (e.g.) a 1927 lecture on Ireland and Mediaeval Europe (*Proc. Brit. Acad.* vol. xiii) I quote a Franciscan Exhortation to the clergy of the fifteenth century:

'Be not quick to anger, or loud of voice or covetous. Eat not to fulness, be neither niggard nor liar. Delight not in food. Thy side half-bare, half-cold thy bed . . . knowledge, steadfastness, persistence. Silence, humility, chastity, patience. Take not the world's way.'

It would not be difficult to match from the Buddhist scriptures each individual clause and word of this succinct passage, though it would involve citations from several books, and the elimination of otiose matter. For

¹ e.g. *Sumangala Vilāsinī*, I. 59, et seqq.

brevity's sake I confine myself here to citing from the Sutta-Nipāta the following stanzas of the Mahāmangala Sutta, *infra* (II. 4):

8. 'Tis rev'rent awe, content, prompt gratitude,
and due attendance when the Doctrine's preached;
9. 'tis patience, courtesy, the company
of Almsmen, timely talks on gospel truth;
10. 'tis strict austerity, a holy life,—

'These', observed Gotama (see p. 12 of the first volume of the Dīgha Nikāya), 'are the trifling matters, the minor details, of mere morality.' And so too in the Christian scheme these stages do not rank higher than the 'remote preparation by purgation'. 'Holiness before Peace' was the dictum of Hurrell Froude,—see Brilioth's *Anglican Revival*.

B. In higher realms than such *ἀσκησις* or 'training', Saint Augustine's 'proximate preparation' for Contemplation (*θεωρία*) finds its parallel, I suggest, in the *jhāna* of Buddhism. In the ancient Sutta-Nipāta, *jhāna* ('reverie' or 'meditation') is used in the singular only; in the Nikāyas generally, it has come to be subdivided (e.g. in the 4th Sutta of the Majjhima Nikāya) into the following four stages for eliminating mental process:

1. 'Strenuous effort (says Gotama of himself) won for me perseverance that never flagged; there arose in me mindfulness that knew no distraction, perfect tranquillity of body, steadfastness of mind that never wavered.

'Divested of pleasures of sense, divested of wrong states of consciousness, I entered on, and abode in, the First Jhāna with all its zest and satisfaction—a state bred of inward aloofness but not divorced from observation and reflection.

2. 'As I rose above observation and reflection, I entered on, and abode in, the Second Jhāna with all its zest and satisfaction—a state bred of rapt concentration, above all observation and reflection, a state whereby the heart is focused and tranquillity reigns within.

3. 'By shedding the emotion of zest, I entered on, and abode in, the Third Jhāna, with its poised equanimity—mindful and self-possessed, feeling in my frame the satisfaction of which the Noble say that poise and mindfulness bring abiding satisfaction.

4. 'By putting from me both satisfaction and dissatisfaction, and by shedding the joys and sorrows I used to feel, I entered on, and abode in, the Fourth Jhāna—the state that, knowing neither satisfaction nor dissatisfaction, is the consummate purity of poised equanimity and mindfulness.'

Gotama's four stages lead up to a heart and mind 'steadfast, clarified and purified, clean and cleansed of things impure, tempered and apt for service, stablished and immutable', i.e. to a perfectly tempered instrument for intellectual conquests to be achieved therewith and thereafter.

From Gotama I pass to Augustine of Hippo a thousand years later,—restricting myself here too to the latter's autobiographical records, as marshalled with authority by Dom Cuthbert Butler in his *Western Mysticism*. The *Confessions*, observes the learned Abbot of Downside, are 'the portrayal of an emergence from intellectual error and from moral disorder' by a process 'for the most part intellectual in idea and in language, sometimes being frankly Plotinian'. 'Western mystics (he adds) commonly represent Contemplation' (the older term for mysticism, restored by Dom Cuthbert Butler) 'as attained to by and in absorption in prayer; but for Augustine it seems to have been primarily an intellectual process—informed, indeed, by intense religious warmth, but still primarily intellectual'.

It is after and beyond the 'remote preparation by purgation' that the Christian aspirant proceeds to the Augustinian counterpart of the Buddhist *jhānas*, viz. the proximate preparation for Contemplation by the processes called 'Recollection' and 'Introversion'. Here 'Recollection' is taken in its primary sense of gathering together and concentrating the mind; it consists—and this is the essential link with the *jhānas*—first in the effort to banish from the mind all images and thoughts of external things, all sense-perceptions and thoughts of 'creatures'; then the reasoning processes of the intellect are silenced, and by this exercise of abstraction a solitude is produced wherein the soul may operate in its most spiritual faculties. This shutting off of all internal things from the mind, and emptying it of distracting thoughts, which is the object of 'Recollection', is the prelude to that entering of the mind into itself that is effected by 'Introversion', which is a concentration of the mind on its own highest or deepest part.

With ultimate outlook we are not here concerned. We are not concerned with Gotama's claim to be able both to recall his own previous existences and to foretell the future lot of his fellow creatures; nor on the other hand are we concerned with St. Augustine's claim to have seen God *in actu trepidantis aspectus*. Our sole concern here is not with the vision of a Promised Land but only with the climb up Pisgah's slopes by stages so similar as to approximate to identity.

C.

SUTTA-NIPĀTA
TEXT AND TRANSLATION

(Throughout this volume, Pāli citations are
from the Pāli Text Society's publications.)

I. URAGAVAGGA

1. URASUTTA

1. Yo uppatitaṃ vineti kodhaṃ, [1]
 visataṃ sappaviṣaṃ va osadhehi,
 so bhikkhu jahāti orapāraṃ,
 urago jīṇṇaṃ iva tacaṃ purāṇaṃ.
2. Yo rāgaṃ udacchidā asesāṃ [2]
 bhisapupphaṃ va saroruhaṃ vigayha,
 so bhikkhu jahāti
3. Yo taṇhaṃ udacchidā asesāṃ [3]
 saritaṃ siṅhasaraṃ visosayitvā,
 so bhikkhu
4. Yo mānaṃ udabbadhī asesāṃ [4]
 naḷasetuṃ va sudubbalaṃ mahogho,
 so bhikkhu
5. Yo nājjhagamā bhavesu sāraṃ [5]
 vicīnaṃ pupphaṃ iva udumbaresu,
 so bhikkhu
6. Yass' antarato na santi kopā [6]
 itibhavābhavataṇi ca vītivatto,
 so bhikkhu
7. Yassa vitakkā vidhūpitā [7]
 ajjhattaṃ suvikappitā asesā,
 so bhikkhu
8. Yo nāccasāri na paccasāri [8]
 sabbam accagamā imaṃ papañcaṃ,
 so bhikkhu
9. Yo nāccasāri na paccasāri [9]
 'sabbam vitatham idan' ti ñatvā loke,
 so bhikkhu
10. Yo nāccasāri na paccasāri [10]
 'sabbam vitatham idan' ti vītalobho,
 so bhikkhu

BOOK I. THE SNAKE BOOK

Sutta 1. Snakes

As snakes slough outworn skins, [1]
 an Almsman sheds belief
 in this or after- worlds,
 —who curbs his wrath (as herbs
 quell vipers' poisoned bite);

—who passion extirpates, [2]
 (as divers by the root
 pluck out the lotus plant);

—who cravings extirpates [3]
 by drying up their flow;

—who sweeps away conceit, [4]
 as floods a bridge of reeds;

—who looks for bliss in lives [5]
 to come, as little as
 for flow'rs on fig-tree boughs;

—whose heart no rancour holds; [6]
 who heeds no 'future state';

—whose ev'ry theme of thought [7]
 has through the furnace passed
 to ordered discipline;

—who hurries not nor lags, [8]
 because he 's through this maze;

—who hurries not nor lags, [9]
 because he knows this world
 'has no reality';

—who hurries not nor lags, [10]
 being from wants now freed,
 because the world around
 'has no reality';

11. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī [11]
‘sabbarā vitatham idan’ ti vītārāgo,
so bhikkhu
12. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī [12]
‘sabbarā vitatham idan’ ti vītadoso,
so bhikkhu
13. Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī [13]
‘sabbarā vitatham idan’ ti vītamoho,
so bhikkhu
14. Yassānusayā na santi keci, [14]
mūlā akusalā samūhatāse,
so bhikkhu
15. Yassa darathajā na santi keci [15]
orāṇā āgamanāya paccayāse,
so bhikkhu
16. Yassa vanathajā na santi keci [16]
vinibandhāya bhavāya hetukappā,
so bhikkhu
17. Yo nīvaraṇe pahāya pañca [17]
anīgho tiṇṇakathamkatho visallo,
so bhikkhu jahāti orapārāṇā
urago jiṇṇam iva tacarā purāṇarā.

2. DHANIYASUTTA

1. Pakkodano duddhakhīro ’ham asmi (*iti Dhaniyo goṇo*) [18]
anutīre Mahiyā samānavāso;
channā kuṭi, āhito gini.
Atha ce patthayasī, pavassa, deva.

—who hurries not nor lags,
being from passion freed,
because the world around
'has no reality'; [11]

—who hurries not nor lags,
being from blemish freed,
because the world around
'has no reality'; [12]

—who hurries not nor lags,
being from error freed,
because the world around
'has no reality'; [13]

—whose mind admits no warp;
whose wrongful growths are stubbed; [14]

—who has no fever'd schemes
for getting back to earth; [15]

—who has no undergrowths
to tie him to rebirth; [16]

—who, having shed the five
inward impediments,
abides unharried, sure,
and free from rankling barbs. [17]

Sutta 2. Dhaniya, The Rich Herdsman

Dhaniya: My food is dressed; my kine
are milked; by Māhi's banks
my folk and I abide;
my fire is lit; my roof
will keep the weather out.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [18]

2. Akkodhano vigatakhīlo 'ham asmi (*iti Bhagavā*) [19]
anutīre Mahiy' ekarattivāso;
vivaṭā kuṭi, nibbuto gini.
Atha ce

Andhakamakasā na vijjare (*iti Dhaniyo gopo*) [20]
kacche rūlhatīṇe caranti gāvo
vuṭṭhīm pi saheyyurū āgataṃ.
Atha ce

4. Baddhā hi bhisī susarīkhatā, (*iti Bhagavā*) [21]
tiṇṇo pārāgato vineyya oghaṃ;
attho bhisiyā na vijjati.
Atha ce

5. Gopī mama assavā alolā (*iti Dhaniyo gopo*) [22]
dīgharattaṃ samvāsiyā manāpā;
tassā na suṇāmi kiñci pāpaṃ.
Atha ce

6. Cittaṃ mama assavaṃ vimuttaṃ (*iti Bhagavā*) [23]
dīgharattaṃ paribhāvitaṃ sudantaṃ;
pāpaṃ pana me na vijjati.
Atha ce

7. Attavetanabhato 'ham asmi (*iti Dhaniyo gopo*) [24]
puttā ca me samāniyā arogā;
tesaṃ na suṇāmi kiñci pāpaṃ.
Atha ce

The Lord: My mood is blest; my mind
is tilled; by Máhi's banks
one night I stay; my Fires
are quenched; my Roof yawns wide.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[19]

Dhaniya: No gnats, no gad-flies here!
Amid the fen's lush grass
my cattle roam at large;
they're proof against the rain!
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[20]

The Lord: I framed a well-wrought Raft,
which bore me o'er the Flood;
I need no further rafts.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

Dhaniya: A staunch and loyal dame
have I, by many years
of comradeship endeared,
of whom I hear naught wrong.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[22]

The Lord: A staunch, enfranchised heart
have I, by many years
of discipline subdued;
in me naught wrong persists.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[23]

Dhaniya: No hireling's livelihood
is mine;—I keep myself.
Round me are stalwart sons,
of whom I hear naught wrong.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain.

[24]

8. Nāhaṃ bhatako 'smi kassaci (iti Bhagavā) [25]
nibbiṭṭhena carāmi sabbaloke;
attho bhatiyā na vijjati.
Atha ce

9. Atthi vasā, atthi dhenupā, (iti Dhaniyo gopo) [26]
godharāṇiyo, paveṇiyo pi atthi,
usabho pi gavampatī ca atthi.
Atha ce

10. Na 'tthi vasā, na 'tthi dhenupā, (iti Bhagavā) [27]
godharāṇiyo, paveṇiyo pi na 'tthi;
usabho pi gavampatīdha na 'tthi.
Atha ce

11. Khilā nikhātā asampavedhī, (iti Dhaniyo gopo) [28]
dāmā muñjamayā navā susaṇṭhānā;
na hi sakkhinti dhenupā pi chettuṃ.
Atha ce

12. Usabhor iva chetvā bandhanāni, (iti Bhagavā) [29]
nāgo pūtilataṃ va dālayitvā,
nāhaṃ puna upessaṃ gabbhaseyyaṃ.
Atha ce patthayasī, pavassa, deva.

13. Ninnaṇ ca thalaṇ ca pūrayanto [30]
mahāmegho pāvassi tāvad eva.
Sutvā devassa vassato
imam atthaṃ Dhaniyo abhāsatha :

14. 'Lābhā vata no anappakā,
ye mayaṃ Bhagavantam addasāma!
Saraṇaṃ taṃ upema, cakkhuma!
Satthā no hohi tuvaṃ, mahāmuni!

The Lord: I serve no man for hire;
with what I 'gained' I range
the world, nor need a wage.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [25]

Dhaniya: Both cows and sucking calves
have I, with cows in calf
and heifers ripe to breed,
and o'er my kine a bull.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [26]

The Lord: No cows nor sucking calves
have I, no cows in calf,
no heifers ripe to breed,
nor bull to rule my kine.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [27]

Dhaniya: Stout pales surround my byres;
new ropes secure my kine;
not e'en a calf gets through.
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [28]

The Lord: Breaking my Bonds in twain,
—with strength as of a bull,
or elephant that snaps
a creeper—nevermore
shall I conception know!
—So, an the heavens will,
the storm may burst amain. [29]

Here, flooding hill and dale,
down poured the rain; and, as
he heard it, Dhaniya
thus hailed these happenings:— [30]

Dhaniya: Great gain is ours to view
the Lord. We come, O seer,
for refuge unto thee;
be thou our teacher, sage!

15. Gopī ca ahañ ca assavā [32]
 brahmacariyañ Sugate carāmaṣe;
 jātimaraṇassa pāragā
 dukkhass' antakarā bhavāmaṣe!'
16. Nandati puttehi puttimā; (iti Māro pāpimā) [33]
 gomiko gohi tath' eva nandati;
 upadhī hi narassa nandanā;
 na hi so nandati yo nirūpadhi.
17. Socati puttehi puttimā; (iti Bhagavā) [34]
 gomiko gohi tath' eva socati;
 upadhī hi narassa socanā;
 na hi so socati yo nirūpadhi.

3. KHAGGAVISĀṆASUTTA

1. Sabbesu bhūtesu nidhāya daṇḍaṃ [35]
 aviheṭṭhayaṃ aññataram pi tesam
 na puttam iccheyya kuto sahāyaṃ;
 eko care khaggavisāṇakappo.
2. Saṃsaggajātassa bhavanti snehā, [36]
 sneh' anvayaṃ dukkham idaṃ pahoti;
 ādīnavaṃ snehajaṃ pekkhamāno
 eko care khaggavisāṇakappo.
3. Mitte suhajje anukampamāno [37]
 hāpeti atthaṃ paṭibaddhacitto;
 etaṃ bhayaṃ santhave pekkhamāno
 eko care
4. Vaṃso visālo va yathā visatto [38]
 puttesu dāresu ca yā apekḥā;
 vaṃsākaḷīro va asajjamāno
 eko care

Fain would my dame and I,
follow the Blessed One,
till, birth and death o'erpast,
we make an end of Ills.

Māra: Upon his sons is based [33]
a father's joy,—as on
his herds their owner's joy.
For, man is based on joys,
nor has he any joy
whose life depends on naught.

The Lord: Upon his sons is based [34]
a father's woe,—as on
his herds their owner's woe.
But woes assail not him
whose life depends on Naught.

Sutta 3. The Rhinoceros

Hurt naught that lives; do harm [35]
to none; yearn not for sons
or friends; but live—as lives
th' rhinoceros—alone!

Alone! Companionships [36]
breed fondness; fondness leads
to Ills as consequence;
so mark where fondness ends!

Go forth alone! To live [37]
for friends and comrades means
your own weal sacrificed;
—beware acquaintances!

Alone! A man absorbed [38]
in wife and child is like
a tree with tangled boughs.
Copy the bamboo-shoot,
—which grows up straight and free.

5. Migo araṇṇamhi yathā abandho
yen' icchakaṃ gacchati gocarāya,
viññū naro seritaṃ pekkhamāno
eko care [39]
6. Āmantanā hoti sahāyamajjhe
vāse tḥāne gamane cārikāya;
anabhijjhitaṃ seritaṃ pekkhamāno
eko care [40]
7. Khiḍḍā ratī hoti sahāyamajjhe,
puttesu ca vipulaṃ hoti pemaṃ,
piyavippayogaṃ vijigucchamāno
eko care [41]
8. Cātuddiso appaṭigho ca hoti
santussamāno itarītarena,
parissayānaṃ sahitaṃ achambhī
eko care [42]
9. Dussaṅgahā pabbajitā pi eke,
atho gahaṭṭhā gharam āvasantā;
appossukko paraputtesu hutvā
eko care [43]
10. Oropayitvā gihivyañjanāni,
saṃsīnapatto yathā koviḷāro,
chetvāna vīro gihibandhanāni
eko care
11. Sace labhetha nipakaṃ sahāyaṃ
saddhimcaram sādhuviḥārī' dhīraṃ,
abhibhuyya sabbāni parissayāni,
careyya ten' attamano satīmā. [45]
12. No ce labhetha nipakaṃ sahāyaṃ
saddhimcaram sādhuviḥārī' dhīraṃ,
rājā va raṭṭhaṃ vijitam pahāya
eko care [46]

Alone! As wild things—free
to range the woodlands—browse
at pleasure where they will,
the sage seeks liberty.

[39]

Alone! For, fellows give
a man no peace,—in hall,
on walks, or tours for alms.
No liberty dwells there.

[40]

Alone! Though fellowship
bring mirth, and children joy,
beware the severance
affection's ties entail.

Alone! To all the world
—north, south, and east and west—
be kindly; take what comes;
brave perils manfully.

Alone! Grumbling is rife
with homeless Almsmen, as
in worldlings' homes.—Fret not
o'er sons of other men.

[43]

Alone! As trees shed leaves,
discard the layman's garb
and sever dauntlessly
all ties to house and home.

[44]

Alone! If fortune grant
a trusty, staunch, true friend,
with him brave dangers, cleave
to him,—with mindfulness.

[45]

If fortune grant thee no
such friend, then, like a king
who quits a conquered realm,
go forth and live—alone.

[46]

13. Addhā pasamsāma sahāyasampadaṃ;
seṭṭhā samā sevitabbā sahāyā;
ete aladdhā anavajjabhojī
eko care [47]
14. Disvā suvaṇṇassa pabhassarāṇi
kammāraputtēna suniṭṭhitāni
saṃghaṭṭamānāni duve bhujasmim,
eko care [48]
15. 'Evaṃ dutiyena sahā mam' assa
vācābhilāpo abhisajjanā vā,'—
etaṃ bhayaṃ āyatim pekkhamāno
eko care [49]
16. Kāmā hi citrā madhurā manoramā
virūparūpena mathenti cittaṃ;
ādinavaṃ kāmagaṇesu disvā
eko care . . . [50]
17. 'Īti ca gaṇḍo ca upaddavo ca
rogo ca sallaṇ ca bhayaṇ ca m' etaṃ,'—
etaṃ bhayaṃ kāmagaṇesu disvā,
eko care
18. Sitaṇ ca uṇhaṇ ca, khudaṃ, pipāsaṃ,
vātātape ḍaṃsasasirimsape ca,
sabbāni p'etāni abhisambhavitvā,
eko care [52]
19. Nāgo va yūthāni vivajjayitvā
saṇjātakhandho padumī uḷāro
yathābhirantaṃ vihare araṇṇe,
eko care [53]
20. Aṭṭhāna' taṃ saṃgaṇikāratassa
yaṃ phassaye sāmayaikaṃ vimuttim.
Ādiccabandhussa vaco nisamma,
eko care [54]

Prize comradeship! Choose out
equals, or better men. [47]
But, if such fail, lead thou
a blameless life—alone.

Alone! A lesson learn [48]
from bangles richly wrought,
which clash and jangle if
one wrist wears two at once;

Alone! In company [49]
a squabble may arise
or angry jar; reflect
what troubles thus may come.

With varied winsome charm [50]
pleasures seduce the heart;
their menace recognize
—and go thy way alone.

View pleasure as the plague,
as virus fraught with doom,
as fever's deadly dart;
—and go thy way alone.

Alone! Brave cold and heat, [52]
thirst, hunger, wind and sun,
mosquitos, gnats, and snakes;
o'ercome them one and all.

As some huge elephant, [53]
fair as the lotus, quits
the herd to dwell where'er
he will,—go forth alone.

No boon-companion wins [54]
Release, e'en for a time.
Go forth alone,—as he,
the Sun's great kinsman, taught.

21. Diṭṭhivisūkāni upātivatto [55]
 patto niyāmaṃ paṭiladdhamaggo
 'uppannañāṇo 'mhi anaññāneyyo',
 eko care
22. Nillolupo nikkuho nippipāso [56]
 nimmakkho niddhantakasāvamoho
 nirāsayo sabbaloke bhavitvā,
 eko care
23. Pāpaṃ sahāyaṃ parivajjayetha [57]
 anattadassinaṃ visame niviṭṭhaṃ,
 sayāṃ na seve pasutaṃ pamattaṃ;
 eko care
24. Bahussutaṃ dhammadharaṃ bhajetha [58]
 mittāṃ ulāraṃ paṭibhānavantaṃ;
 aññāya atthāni, vineyya kankhaṃ,
 eko care
25. Khiddaṃ ratinā kāmasukhaṃ ca loka [59]
 analankarivā anapekkhamāno,
 vibhūsanatṭhānā virato, saccavādī,
 eko care
26. Puttaṃ ca dāraṃ pitaraṃ ca mātaraṃ [60]
 dhanāni dhaññāni ca bandhavāni ca
 hitvāna kāmāni yathodhikāni,
 eko care
27. 'Sango eso, parittam ettha sokhyaṃ, [61]
 appassādo, dukkham ettha bhiyyo,
 gaḷo eso' iti ñatvā mutimā,
 eko care
28. Sandālayitvāna saṃyojanāni [62]
 jālaṃ va bhetvā salil' ambucārī,
 aggāva daḍḍhaṃ anivattamāno,
 eko care

Above hypotheses, [55]
in certitude assured,
tread thou the Way alone,
to claim full insight won
and pupilage outgrown.

Alone! *Sans* wants, deceit, [56]
hopes, jealousy! Unsmirched
by fond illusions! Tied
to naught the world can show!

Go forth alone! Discard [57]
evil associates
who prompt no good, whose bent
is wrong. Avoid all such
as chop and change, or flag.

Go forth alone. Secure [58]
a friend of garnered lore,
of shining parts and worth,
to teach thee where Weal dwells
and clear thy mind of doubts.

Alone! Leave jollity, [59]
pleasure and mundane joys;
avoid display; speak truth.

Alone! Quit wife and child; [60]
quit parents, wealth and gear,
and kinsfolk,—all life's joys.

Go forth alone! Be sure [61]
pleasure 's a chain, brief bliss,
short rapture, long-drawn woe,
a baited hook for fools.

Alone! Thy fetters burst, [62]
—as fish the net; be like
the forest fires which ne'er
revisit burnt-out scenes.

29. Okkhittacakkhu, na ca pādalolo,
guttindriyo, rakkhita mānasāno,
anavassuto, aparīḍayhamāno,
eko care [63]
30. Ohārayitvā gihivyañjanāni,
saṁchinnapatto yathā pārīchatto,
kāśāyavattho abhinikkhamitvā,
eko care
31. Rasesu gedhaṁ akaraṁ, alolo,
anaññaṁposī, sapadānacārī,
kule kule appaṭibaddhacitto,
eko care [65]
32. Pahāya pañc' āvaraṇāni cetaso
upakkilese vyapanujja sabbe,
anissito, chetvā sinehadosaṁ,
eko care [66]
33. Vipīṭṭhikatvāna sukhaṁ dukhaṁ ca
pubbe va ca somanassadomanassaṁ,
laddhān' upekhaṁ samathaṁ visuddhaṁ,
eko care [67]
34. Āraddhaviṛiyo paramatthapattiyā,
alīnacitto, akusītavutti,
daḥhanikkamo thāmabalūpapanno,
eko care [68]
35. Paṭisallāṇaṁ jhānaṁ ariñcamāno,
dhammesu niccaṁ anudhammacārī,
ādinavaṁ sammasitā bhavesu,
eko care [69]
36. Taṇhakkhayaṁ patthayaṁ appamatto
anelamūgo sutavā satimā
saṁkhātadhammo niyato padhānavā,
eko care [70]

Alone! With downcast eyes,
not loitering, keep watch
o'er ev'ry faculty;
keep thoughts in leash; let naught
invade, let naught inflame. [63]

Alone! As trees shed leaves,
discard the layman's garb,
and, clad in orange robes,
relinquish house and home. [64]

Alone! Let dainty fare
seduce thee not. With none
to keep besides thyself,
seek alms from door to door,
making no favourites. [65]

Alone! Divest thyself
of all Five Hindrances;
banish the Lesser Faults;
shed likes and dislikes; live
th' emancipated life. [66]

Alone! Leave weal and woe;
leave whilom joys and griefs;
ensue the holy calm
of poised indifference. [67]

Alone! Strive hard to win
the goal of goals,—with heart
unfetter'd, strenuous,
stout, persevering, staunch. [68]

Alone! To lonely thought
and reverie hold fast;
in all thy mental states
the Doctrine keep, alive
to transmigration's doom. [69]

Alone! Toil on to quench
cravings by watchfulness,
by lore, by mindfulness,
by Doctrine's mastery,
by certitude, and grip. [70]

37. Siho va saddesu asantasanto,
vāto va jālamhi asajjamāno,
padumaṃ va toyena alippamāno,
eko care [71]
38. Siho yathā dāṭhabalī pasayha
rājā migānaṃ abhibhuyyacārī,
sevetha pantāni senāsanāni;
eko care [72]
39. Mettaṃ upekhaṃ karuṇaṃ vimuttiṃ
āsevamāno muditaṃ ca kāle,
sabbenā lokena avirujjhamāno,
eko care [73]
40. Rāgaṃ ca dosaṃ ca pahāya moham,
sandālayitvāna saṃyojanāni,
asantaṃ jīvitasamkhamamhi,
eko care [74]
41. 'Bhājanti sevanti ca kāraṇatthā,
nikkāraṇā dullabhā ajja mittā,
attaṭṭhapaññā asuci manussā,'—
eko care khaggavisāṇakappo. [75]

4. KASIBHĀRADVĀJASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Magadhesu viharati Dakkhinā-girismiṃ Ekanālāyaṃ brāhmaṇagāme. Tena kho pana samayena Kasibhārad-vājassa brāhmaṇassa pañcamattāni nangalasatāni payuttāni honti vappakāle. Atha kho Bhagavā, pubbaṇhasamayaṃ nivāsetvā pattacivaraṃ ādāya, yena Kasibhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa kammanto ten' upasaṃkami. Tena kho pana samayena Kasibhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa parivesanā vattati. Atha kho Bhagavā yena parivesanā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā ekamantaṃ aṭṭhāsi. Addasā kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṃ piṇḍāya ṭhitam, disvāna Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Ahaṃ kho, samaṇa, kasāmi ca vapāmi ca, kasitvā ca vāpitvā ca bhuñjāmi; tvam pi, samaṇa, kasassu ca vapassu ca, kasitvā ca vāpitvā ca bhuñjassūti.

Alone! Be undismayed
 (as lions are) by sounds,
 uncaged as whistling wind,
 unspotted by the world
 as lotus by the wave.

[71]

Alone! Dwell far aloof,
 —as, after spring and kill,
 the strong-fanged king of beasts
 seeks out a distant lair.

Alone! In season due
 practise goodwill, and poise,
 pity, and kindness,
 thereby to win Release,
 unthwarted by the world.

[73]

Alone! Oust passion, hate,
 illusion! Burst all bonds!
 Face death intrepidly!

[74]

Alone! Self-seeking sways
 friends nowadays;—few bring
 disinterested hearts.
 Mankind is foul, but quick
 to compass private ends.

[75]

Sutta 4. *Bhāradvāja, the Franklin*

Thus have I heard. Once the Lord was living among the Magadha folk at Dakkhinā-giri in the brahmin village of Eka-Nāḷā, at a time when the brahmin Kasi-Bhāradvāja's five hundred ploughs were harnessed for the sowing. In the morning early, duly robed and bowl in hand, the Lord went to where the brahmin was busy, at an hour when a meal was forward; and stood there to one side. Observing him standing there for alms, the brahmin said:—Before I eat, I plough and sow, anchorite; and you too should plough and sow before you eat.

Aham pi kho, brāhmaṇa, kasāmi ca vapāmi ca, kasitvā ca vāpitvā ca bhuñjāmi.

Na kho pana mayaṃ passāma bhoto Gotamassa yugaṃ vā nangalaṃ vā phālaṃ vā pācanaṃ vā balivadde vā; atha ca pana bhavaṃ Gotamo evaṃ āha: Aham pi kho, brāhmaṇa, kasāmi ca vapāmi ca, kasitvā ca vāpitvā ca bhuñjāmi.

Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Kassako paṭijānāsi, na ca passāma te kasim. [76]
Kasin no pucchito brūhi yathā jānemu te kasim.

2. Saddhā bijam, tapo vuṭṭhi, paññā me yuganangalam, [77]
hiri isā, mano yottam, sati me phālapācanaṃ.

Kāyagutto, vacīgutto, āhāre udare yato, [78]
saccaṃ karomi niddānaṃ, soraccaṃ me pamocanaṃ.

4. Viriyam me dhuradhorayhaṃ, yogakkhemādhivāhanaṃ [79]
gacchati anivattantaṃ, yattha gantvā na socati.

5. Evam esā kaṣi kaṭṭhā; sā hoti amatapphalā; [80]
etaṃ kasim kasitvāna sabbadukkhā pamuccatīti.

Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo mahatiyā kaṃsapātiyā pāyāsaṃ vaḍḍhetvā Bhagavato upanāmesi: Bhuñjatu bhavaṃ Gotamo pāyasaṃ, kassako bhavaṃ, yaṃ hi bhavaṃ Gotamo amatapphalaṃ kasim kasatīti

6. Gāthābhigītaṃ me abhojaneyyaṃ; [81]
samppassataṃ, brāhmaṇa, n' esa dhammo;
gāthābhigītaṃ panudanti buddhā.
Dhamme satī, brāhmaṇa, vuttir esā.

7. Aññaṃ ca kevalinaṃ mahesiṃ [82]
khīṇāsavaṃ kukkucavūpasantaṃ
annena pānena upaṭṭhahassu;
khettaṃ hi taṃ puññapekhaṃ hotīti.

Atha kassa cāhaṃ, bho Gotama, imaṃ pāyasaṃ dammīti?

Na kho 'han taṃ, brāhmaṇa, passāmi sadevake loke samārake sabrahmake sassamaṇabrāhmaṇiyyā pajāya sadevamanussāya yassa so pāyāso bhutto sammāpariñāmaṃ gaccheyya aññaṃ Tathāgatassa vā Tathāgatasāvakassa

I too, brahmin, do plough and do sow before I eat.

We fail, however, to see the worthy Gotama's yoke, or plough, or plough-share, or goad, or ox-team,—albeit he asserts that he ploughs and sows before he eats.

Thereupon, the brahmin addressed the Lord in this stanza:

You claim to be a tiller, though we see [76]
none of your tillage. Tell us how you till;
for of your tilling we would fain hear more.

The Lord: My seed is faith; austerity of life [77]
my rain; wisdom my yoke and plough; my pole
is fear to err,—with thought to strap the yoke,
and mindfulness for ploughshare and the goad.

Watchful o'er word and deed, and temperate [78]
in diet, I make insight weed my crop,
nor rest till final bliss is harvested.

Effort is my stout ox, which turns not back [79]
at headlands;—straight to Peace he bears me on,
to that last bourne where anguish is no more.

Thus have I tilled, with Deathlessness for crop. [80]
And whoso tills as I, is freed from Ills.

Hereon, the brahmin served up milk-rice on a great bronze dish and offered it to the Lord, saying—Eat this, Gotama; a tiller indeed art thou, in that thou tillest a crop that is Deathless.

The Lord: I take no chanter's fee. [81]
—Seers countenance it not;
th' Enlighten'd scout such fees;
and while this Doctrine lasts,
this practice must hold good.

Provide with other fare [82]
a sage of holy calm,
consummate, Cankerless;
merit to reap,—sow *there*.

To whom then am I to give this, Gotama?

Brahmin, in the whole wide world of gods, Māras, and Brahmās, I see no one among anchorites and brahmins, gods and men, who could digest this food except a Truth-finder or the disciple of a Truth-finder. So either throw

vā. Tena hi tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, taṃ pāyāsaṃ appaharite vā chaḍḍehi appāṇake vā udaye opilāpehīti.

Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo taṃ pāyāsaṃ appāṇake udaye opilāpesi. Atha kho so pāyāso udaye pakkhitto ciccīṭayati ciṭṭiṭayati sandhūpāyati sampadhūpāyati. Seyyathāpi nāma phālo divasasantatto udaye pakkhitto ciccīṭayati ciṭṭiṭayati sandhūpāyati sampadhūpāyati, evam eva so pāyāso udaye pakkhitto ciccīṭayati . . . sampadhūpāyati. Atha kho Kasibhāradvājo brāhmaṇo saṃviggō lomahaṭṭhajāto yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavato pādesu sirasā nipatitvā Bhagavantam etad avoca: Abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama; abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama! Seyyathāpi, bho Gotama, nikkujjitaṃ vā ukkujeyya, paṭicchannaṃ vā vivareyya, mūlhassa vā maggaṃ ācikkheyya, andhakāre vā telapajjotaṃ dhāreyya: 'cakkhumanto rūpāni dakkhintīti',—evam evaṃ bhotā Gotamena anekapariyāyena dhammo pakāsito. Esāhaṃ bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ gacchāmi dhammaṃ ca bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca; labheyyāhaṃ bhoto Gotamassa santike pabbajjaṃ, labheyyaṃ upasampadan ti. Alattha kho Kasi-Bhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato santike pabbajjaṃ, alattha upasampadaṃ. Acirūpasampanno kho paṇ' āyasmā Bhāradvājo eko vūpakaṭṭho appamatto ātāpi pahitatto viharanto na-cirass' eva yass' atthāya kulaputtā samma-d-eva agārasmā anagāriyaṃ pabbajanti tad anuttaraṃ brahmacariya-pariyosānaṃ diṭṭhe va dhamme sayam abhiññā sacchikatvā upasampajja vihāsi; 'khiṇā jāti, vusitaṃ brahmacariyaṃ, kataṃ karaṇiyaṃ, nāparaṃ itthattāyāti' abbhaññāsi. Aññataro ca kho paṇ' āyasmā Bhāradvājo arahataṃ ahosi.

5. CUNDASUTTA

Pucchāmi Munim pahūtapaññaṃ (*iti Cundo kammāraputto*) [83]
 Buddhaṃ dhammassāmiṃ vītataṇhaṃ
 dipaduttamaṃ sārathīnaṃ pavaraṃ:
 Kati loka samaṇā? Tad ingha brūhi.

2. Caturo samaṇā; na pañcam' atthi. (*Cundāti Bhagavā*) [84]
 Te te āvikaromi sakkhipuṭṭho:
 —Maggajino, Maggadesako ca,
 Magge jīvati, yo ca Maggadūsī.

it away where little grass grows, or else fling it into water where there are no living creatures.

Thereupon, into water where there were no living creatures the brahmin flung that milk-rice,—which hissed and sputtered, smoked and steamed, just like a ploughshare that has lain broiling in the sun.

Aghast, and with every hair on his body standing erect, the brahmin went over to the Lord, and, bowing his head at the Lord's feet, cried:—Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again what had fallen down, or reveal what had been hidden away, or tell a man who had gone astray which was his way, or bring a lamp into darkness so that those with eyes to see might see the things about them,—even so, in many ways has Gotama made his Doctrine clear! To the reverend Gotama I come for refuge and to his Doctrine and to his Community. Be it mine to receive admission and confirmation at the hands of the Lord! So the brahmin Kasi-Bhāradvāja was admitted and confirmed as an almsman of the Lord. Nor was it long after his confirmation before the Reverend Bhāradvāja, dwelling alone and aloof, strenuous, ardent and purged of self, won after no great time that prize in quest of which young men go forth from home to homelessness as Pilgrims, that prize of prizes which crowns the higher life,—even this did he think out for himself, realize and attain, and in this did he dwell here and now, convinced that for him rebirth was no more, that he had lived the highest life, that his task was done, and that now there was no more left of what he had been. So the Reverend Bhāradvāja was numbered among the Arahats.

Sutta 5. Cunda, the Smith

Cunda: I ask th' Enlightened Sage [83]
 of boundless lore, the Lord
 of Doctrine, craving-free,
 foremost of all mankind,
 man's matchless charioteer,—
 I ask how many kinds
 of anchorites there are?

The Lord: Four kinds there are,—no fifth; [84]
 and here in order are
 the four: Way-master first;
 Way-preacher next; then he
 that treads the Way; and fourth
 the man that fouls the Way.

3. Kaṃ 'Maggajinaṃ' vadanti buddhā? (*iti Cundo kammāraputto*) [85]
 'Maggajjhāyī' kathaṃ atulyo hoti?
 'Magge jīvati' me brūhi puṭṭho.
 Atha me āvikarohi 'Maggadūsiṃ'.
4. Yo tiṇṇakathaṃkatho visallo, [86]
 nibbānābhirato anānugiddho,
 lokassa sadevakassa netā,
 tādiṃ 'Maggajinaṃ' vadanti buddhā.
5. 'Paramaṃ, paramaṃ' ti yo 'dha ñatvā [87]
 akkhāti vibhajati idh' eva Dhammaṃ,
 taṃ kaṃkhacchidaṃ muniraṃ anejaṃ
 dutiyaṃ bhikkhunaṃ āhu 'Maggadesiṃ'.
6. Yo dhammapade sudesite [88]
 magge jīvati saṃyato satimā
 anavajjapadāni sevamāno,
 tatiyaṃ bhikkhunaṃ āhu 'Maggajiviraṃ'.
7. Chadanaṃ katvāna subbatānaṃ [89]
 pakkhandaṃ kuladūsako pagabbho
 māyāvī asamīyato palāpo
 patirūpena caraṃ,—sa 'Maggadūsi'.
8. Ete ca paṭivijjhi yo gahaṭṭho [90]
 sutavā ariyasāvako sapañño
 'sabbe ne tādisā' ti ñatvā,
 iti disvā na hāpeti tassa saddhā.
 Kathaṃ hi duṭṭhena asampaduṭṭhaṃ
 suddhaṃ asuddhena samaṃ kareyya?

6. PARĀBHAVASUTTA

Evam me sutaṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho aññatarā devatā abhikkantāya rattiyā abhikkantavaṇṇā kevalakappaṃ Jetavanaṃ obhāsetvā yena Bhagavā ten'

Cunda: Whom do th' Enlightened call
Way-master? What inspires
the Way's rapt votary?
Who treads—who fouls—the Way?

The Lord: The man who sheds all doubt [86]

and, free from rankling barbs,
Nirvāna's bliss enjoys;
who, craving nothing, guides
the world of gods and men;
—him seers 'Way-master' call.

'Way-preacher' second ranks [87]

among the Almsmen four.
Convinced perfection's here,
he preaches and expounds
the Doctrine, solving doubts,
—a sage from cravings purged.

'Way-farer' ranks as third. [88]

The Path, in texts revealed,
he treads in temperance,
in mindfulness, in zeal,
and blamelessness of life.

'Way-fouler' counterfeits [89]

the good, and homes defiles,
—a reckless ruffian,
a base, low cozeners.

If taught and grounded well, [90]

the saints' lay-hearer knows
these four divergent types,
with faith not undermined.
For, how could he confuse
impure with pure, or take
a rascal for a saint?

Sutta 6. Failures

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure, as night was passing away, a deity of surpassing beauty came to the Lord, flooding the whole grove with radiance,

upasamkamaṃ upasamkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ aṭṭhāsi.
Ekamantaṃ tthitā kho sā devatā Bhagavantam gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Parābhavantam purisaṃ mayam pucchāma Gotamaṃ, [91]
Bhagavantam puṭṭhum āgama: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
2. Suvijāno bhavam hoti, suvijāno parābhavo; [92]
—dhammakāmo bhavam hoti, dhammadessī parābhavo.
3. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; paṭhamo so parābhavo. [93]
Dutiyaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
4. Asant' assa piyā honti; sante na kurute piyaṃ; [94]
asataṃ dhammaṃ roceti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
5. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; dutiyo so parābhavo. [95]
Tatiyaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
6. Niddāsīli sabhāsīli anuṭṭhātā ca yo naro [96]
alaso kodhapaññāno;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
7. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; tatiyo so parābhavo. [97]
Catuttham Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
8. Yo mātaraṃ vā pitaraṃ vā jīṇakaṃ gatayobbanam [98]
pahu santo na bharati;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
9. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; catuttho so parābhavo. [99]
Pañcamam Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
10. Yo brāhmaṇam vā samaṇam vā aññaṃ vā pi vaṇibbakaṃ [100]
musāvādena vañceti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
11. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; pañcama so parābhavo. [101]
Chaṭṭhamam Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
12. Pahūtavitto puriso sahirañño sabhojano [102]
eko bhuñjati sādūni;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
13. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; chaṭṭhamo so parābhavo. [103]
Sattamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
14. Jātitthaddho dhanatthaddho gottatthaddho ca yo naro [104]
saṃ nātiraṃ atimaññeti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
15. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; sattamo so parābhavo. [105]
Aṭṭhamam Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
16. Itthidhutto surādhutto akkhadhutto ca yo naro [106]
laddham laddham vināseti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.

and, after salutation meet, stood to one side, addressing the Lord in these stanzas:—

Concerning him who fails, I come to ask [91]
of Gotama from what that failure springs.

The Lord: Both worth and failure can be quickly seen: [92]
—worth still aspires, but failure hates the light.

The deity: Thus much I see;—first failure stands out plain. [93]
Now tell me whence the second failure comes.

The Lord: The second failure's he who loves the bad, [94]
courts not the good, and favours bad men's creeds.

The deity: Thus much I see;—the second failure's plain. [95]
Now tell me whence the further failures come.

The Lord: Third comes the critic, lazy, indolent, [96]
and sleek; his constant carping marks him out.

Fourth failure's he who, well-to-do himself, [97-8]
supports not aged parents, past their prime.

Fifth failure's he who brahmins guides astray, [99-100]
or anchorites, or other wayfarers.

Sixth comes the wealthy man, with pelf and gear, [101-2]
who keeps his dainties strictly to himself.

He seventh comes whom birth or wealth or clan [103-4]
inflates, till he looks down on kith and kin.

The eighth's the rake who squanders all he gets,
fast as it comes, on women, drink, and dice.

17. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; aṭṭhamo so parābhavo. [107]
Navamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
18. Sehi dārehi asantutṭho vesiyāsu padissati, [108]
dissati paradāresu;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
19. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; navamo so parābhavo. [109]
Dasamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
20. Atītayobbano poso āneti timbarutthanim; [110]
tassā issā na supati;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
21. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; dasamo so parābhavo. [111]
Ekādasamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
22. Itthisoṇḍim vikiraṇim, purisaṃ vā pi tādisaṃ, [112]
issariyasmiṃ ṭhāpeti;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
23. Iti h' etaṃ vijānāma; ekādasamo so parābhavo. [113]
Dvādasamaṃ Bhagavā brūhi: Kim parābhavato mukhaṃ?
24. Appabhogo mahātaṇho khattiye jāyate kule; [114]
so 'dha rajjaṃ patthayati;—tam parābhavato mukhaṃ.
25. Ete parābhave loke paṇḍito samavekkhiya [115]
ariyo dassanasampanno, sa lokam bhajate sivaṃ.

7. VASALASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho Bhagavā pubbaṅhasamayaṃ nivāsetvā pattacivaram ādāya Sāvattthim piṇḍāya pāvisi. Tena kho pana samayena Aggikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa nivesane aggi pajjalito hoti, āhuti pagga-hitā. Atha kho Bhagavā Sāvattthiyaṃ sapadānam piṇḍāya caramāno yena Aggikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa nivesanaṃ ten' upasaṃkami. Addasā kho Aggikabhāradvājō brāhmaṇo Bhagavantam dūrato va āgacchantam disvāna Bhagavantam etad avoca: 'Tatr' eva, muṇḍaka, tatr' eva, samaṇaka, tatr' eva, vasalaka, tiṭṭhāhīti. Evaṃ vutte Bhagavā Aggikabhāradvājāṃ brāhmaṇaṃ etad avoca: Jānāsi pana tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, vasalaṃ vā vasalakaraṇe vā dhamme ti?

Na khvāhaṃ, bho Gotama, jānāmi vasalaṃ vā vasalakaraṇe vā dhamme. Sādhū me bhavaṃ Gotamo tathā dhammaṃ desetu yathāhaṃ jāneyyaṃ vasalaṃ vā vasalakaraṇe vā dhamme ti.

Tena hi, brāhmaṇa, suṇāhi, sādhukaṃ manasikarohi; bhāssissāmīti.

Evam bho ti kho Aggikabhāradvājō brāhmaṇo Bhagavato paccassosi.

Ninth comes the lecher who, not satisfied
with his own wives, is seen about with whores,
or caught in dalliance with others' wives. [107-8]

Tenth comes the dotard who, in failing age,
a maiden takes to wife, with ripe round breasts,
so fair he cannot sleep for jealousy. [109-10]

Eleventh failure's he who puts in charge
a drunken, spendthrift rake,—of either sex. [111-12]

Twelfth comes th' ambitious noble, lacking means, [113-14]
who fondly schemes to get himself made king.

The noble sage, whose penetrating eye [115]
these failures scans, has won the realms of bliss.

Sutta 7. The Wastrel

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying in Sāvatthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure, early one morning, duly robed and bowl in hand, he went into the city for alms, at an hour when there was the sacrificial fire lighted in the dwelling of the brahmin Aggika-Bhāradvāja; and the oblation was elevated. In the course of his house-to-house visitations, the Lord approached the brahmin's dwelling, but was seen some way off by the brahmin, who shouted :—Stop where you are, shaveling! Stop where you are, you wretched anchorite! Stop where you are, wastrel!

Said the Lord to the brahmin :—Do you understand, brahmin, what a 'wastrel' is, or what outlooks make a 'wastrel'?

No, replied the brahmin, I do not understand what a 'wastrel' is or what outlooks make a 'wastrel'. Be so good, Gotama, as to explain it, for my information.

Give ear then, brahmin, and pay attention; I will speak.

Certainly, said the brahmin in assent.

Bhagavā etad avoca:

1. Kodhano upanāhī ca pāpamakkhī ca yo naro
vipannadiṭṭhi māyāvī, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [116]
2. Ekajaṃ vā dijaṃ vā pi yo 'dha paṇaṃ vihiṃsati,
yassa pāṇe dayā na 'tthi, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [117]
3. Yo hanti parirundhati gāmāni nigamāni ca
niggāhako samaññaṭo, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [118]
4. Gāme vā yadi vāraññe yaṃ paresaṃ mamāyitaṃ
theyyā adinnaṃ ādiyati, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [119]
5. Yo have iṇaṃ ādāya cujjaṃāno palāyati
'na hi te iṇaṃ atthīti', taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [120]
6. Yo ve kiñcikkhakamyatā panthasmiṃ vajataṃ janāṃ
hantvā kiñcikkham ādeti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [121]
7. Yo attahetu parahetu dhanahetu ca yo naro
sakkhi puṭṭho musā brūti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [122]
8. Yo ñātīnaṃ sakhānaṃ vā dāresu patidissati
sahasā sampiyena vā, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti.
9. Yo mātaraṃ vā pitaraṃ vā jiṇṇakaṃ gatayobbanāṃ
pahu santo na bharati, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti.
10. Yo mātaraṃ vā pitaraṃ vā bhātaraṃ bhaginiṃ sasuraṃ
hanti roseti vācāya, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [125]
11. Yo atthaṃ pucchito santo anattam anusāsati,
paṭicchannena manteti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [126]
12. Yo katvā pāpakaṃ kammaṃ 'mā maṃ jaññā' ti icchati,
yo paṭicchannakammanto, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [127]
13. Yo ve parakulaṃ gantvā bhutvāna sucibhojanaṃ
āgataṃ na paṭipūjeti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [128]
14. Yo brāhmaṇaṃ vā samaṇaṃ vā aññaṃ vāpi vaṇibbakaṃ
musāvādena vañceti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [129]
15. Yo brāhmaṇaṃ vā samaṇaṃ vā bhakkāle upaṭṭhite
roseti vācā, na ca deti, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [130]
16. Asataṃ yo 'dha pabrūti mohena paliguṇṭhito
kiñcikkhaṃ nijigimsāno, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [131]
17. Yo c' attānaṃ samukkaṃse paraṃ ca-m-avajānāti,
nihiṇo sena mānena, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [132]

The Lord began:—

- Be he as 'wastrel' known, who harbours ire [116]
and rancour, slander, error, and deceit.
- The wastrel's he who injures living things [117]
(or beast or bird), and pities naught that lives.
- The wastrel harries and beleaguers folk [118]
in town and village,—where he's called a scourge.
- The wastrel steals, in village or the waste, [119]
whate'er he covets of another's goods.
- The wastrel, pressed to pay up what he owes, [120]
denies a debt is owing and absconds.
- The wastrel, coveting some trifle, slays [121]
a peaceful traveller for that trifle's sake.
- The wastrel bears false witness in a suit, [122]
to help himself or others, or for cash.
- By force, or with consent, the wastrel holds [123]
commerce with wives of kinsmen or of friends.
- The wastrel's he who, well-to-do himself, [124]
supports not aged parents, past their prime.
- The wastrel strikes, and goads with taunts, his sire, [125]
his mother, brother, sister, mother-in-law.
- The wastrel, asked for counsel, counsels wrong [126]
and clokes pronouncements in obscurities.
- The wastrel hopes his villainies will not [127]
be known as his, and privily proceeds.
- The wastrel gladly shares another's feast, [128]
but, when his host calls, offers no return.
- The wastrel's he who brahmins guides astray, [129]
or anchorites, or other travellers.
- At dinner-time, the wastrel greets with jeers [130]
—not alms—a brahmin or an anchorite.
- The wastrel, greedy for a penny fee, [131]
tells fortunes,—in abysmal ignorance.
- Debased by overweening arrogance, [132]
the wastrel lauds himself, runs others down.

18. Rosako kadariyo ca pāpiccho maccharī saṭho
ahirako anottāpī, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti.
19. Yo Buddhaṃ paribhāsati atha vā tassa sāvakam,
paribbājam gahaṭṭham vā, taṃ jaññā 'vasalo' iti. [134]
20. Yo ve anarahā santo araham paṭijānati,
coro sabrahmake loke, esa kho vasalādhamo.
—Ete kho 'vasalā' vuttā, mayā vo ye pakāsita. [135]
21. Na jaccā 'vasalo' hoti;—na jaccā hoti brāhmaṇo;
kammanā 'vasalo' hoti, kammanā hoti brāhmaṇo.
22. Tad amināpi jānātha yathā me 'dam nidassanam:
Caṇḍālaputto sopāko Mātango iti vissuto.
23. So yasaṃ paramaṃ patto Mātango yaṃ sudullabham;
āgañchurū tass' upaṭṭhānam khattiyā brāhmaṇā bahū. [138]
24. So devayānam āruya virajam so mahāpatham
kāmarāgam virājetvā brahmalokūpago ahu;
—na taṃ jāti nivāresi brahmalokūpapattiyā.
25. Ajjhāyakakule jātā brāhmaṇā mantabandhavā
te ca pāpesu kammesu abhinham upadissare, [140]
26. diṭṭhe va dhamme gārayhā samparāye ca duggati;
na ne jāti nivāreti duggaccā garahāya vā.
27. Na jaccā 'vasalo' hoti;—na jaccā hoti brāhmaṇo.
Kammanā 'vasalo' hoti, kammanā hoti brāhmaṇo ti. [142]

Evam vutte Aggikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantam etad avoca:—
Abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama; abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama! Seyyathāpi, bho
Gotama, nikkujjitaṃ vā ukkujjeyya, paṭicchannaṃ vā vivareyya, mūlhassa vā
maggaṃ ācikkheyya, andhakāre vā telapajjotaṃ dhāreyya 'cakkhumanto
rūpāni dakkhintīti',—evam evaṃ bhotā Gotamena anekapariyāyena dhammo
pakāsito. Esāham bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ gacchāmi dhammaṃ ca
bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca; upāsakaṃ maṃ bhavaṃ Gotamo dhāretu ajjatagge
pāṇupetaṃ saraṇaṃ gataṃ.

The wastrel fosters strife, is miserly,
evil of aspirations, stingy, sly,
devoid of conscience, and unscrupulous. [133]

The wastrel's tongue defames th' Enlighten'd One,
or His disciples, mendicant or lay. [134]

Th' unsaintly wastrel, claiming saint to be,
is master-thief of all the universe,
and vilest wastrel of the wastrel crowd.
—All these are wastrels whom I have portrayed. [135]

No *birth* a wastrel—or a Brahmin—makes;
'tis *conduct* wastrels makes,—and Brahmins too. [136]

And here's an illustration proves my case:—
Low, dog-devouring outcastes had a son [137]

—Mātanga named—whose fame preëminent
drew crowds of brahmins and nobility.

Upborne in heaven's chariot, he soared,
from passion purged, along the spotless path
till bliss was won; nor did his lowly birth
deny him entry into paradise!

But there are brahmins born, in runes profound,
whose evil lives proclaim them what they are,

whom men on earth condemn, whom doom awaits; [141]
nor does their brahmin birth forbid, or bar,
their condemnation here, or future doom.

No birth a wastrel—or a Brahmin—makes;
'tis conduct wastrels makes,—and Brahmins too. [142]

Hereupon, the brahmin Aggika-Bhāradvāja said to the Lord:—Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again what had been cast down, and reveal what had been hidden away, or tell a man who had gone astray which was his way, or bring a lamp into darkness so that those with eyes to see might see the things about them,—even so, in many ways, has Gotama made his Doctrine clear. To the reverend Gotama I come as my refuge, and to his Doctrine, and to his Community. I ask him to accept me as a follower who has found an abiding refuge from this day forth while life lasts.

8. METTASUTTA

1. Karaṇīyam atthakusalena [143]
 yaṇ taṇ santaṇ padaṇ abhisamecca
 sakko uju ca sūjū ca
 suvaco c' assa mudū anatiṃānī,
2. santussako ca subhavo ca [144]
 appakicco ca sallahukavutti
 santindriyo ca nipako ca
 appagabbho kulesu ananugiddho;
3. na ca khuddaṇ samācare kiñci [145]
 yena viññū pare upavadeyyuṃ.
 Sukhino vā khemino hontu
 sabbe sattā bhavantu sukhittā,
4. ye keci pāṇabhūt' atthi [146]
 tasā vā thāvarā vā anavasesā
 dīghā vā ye mahantā vā
 majjhimā rassakā apukathulā,
5. diṭṭhā vā ye vā addiṭṭhā [147]
 ye ca dūre vasanti avidūre
 bhūtā vā sambhavesī vā,
 sabbe sattā bhavantu sukhittā.
6. Na paro paraṇ nikubbetha, [148]
 nātimaññetha katthaci naṃ kañci,
 vyārosanā paṭighasaññā
 nāññamaññassa dukkham iccheyya.
7. Mātā yathā niyaṇ puttāṇ [149]
 āyusā ekaputtam anurakkhe,
 evaṃ pi sabbabhūtesu
 mānasam bhāvaye aparimāṇaṇ.

Sutta 8. Goodwill

When Peace is won, th' adept
in welfare needs to prove
an able, upright man,
of gracious speech, kind mood,
devoid of arrogance,

an easy, grateful, guest,
—no busybody; wants
but few; sense-disciplined,
quick-witted, bluster-free,
never importunate;

and let him never stoop
to conduct mean or low,
evoking grave rebuke.
May creatures all abound

in weal and peace; may all
be blessed with peace always;
all creatures weak or strong,
all creatures great and small;

creatures unseen or seen,
dwelling afar or near,
born or awaiting birth,
—may all be blessed with peace!

[147]

Let none cajole or flout
his fellows anywhere;
let none wish others harm
in dudgeon or in hate.

[148]

Just as with her own life
a mother shields from hurt
her own, her only, child,—
let all-embracing thoughts
for all that lives be thine,

[149]

8. Mettañ ca sabbalokasmim
mānasam bhāvaye aparimāṇam
uddham adho ca tiriyañ ca
asambādham averam asapattam.
9. Tiṭṭham caram nisinno vā
sayāno vā yāvat' assa vigatamiddho
etaṃ satim adhiṭṭheyya,
—'brahmam etaṃ vihāram' idha-m-āhu.
10. Diṭṭhiñ ca anupagamma
sīlavā dassanena sampanno
kāmesu vineyya gedham,
na hi jātu gabbhaseyyam punar eti.

9. HEMAVATASUTTA

- Ajja pannaraso uposatho (iti Sātāgiro yakkho) [153]
divyā ratti upatṭhitā;
anomanāmarā Satthārā
handā passāma Gotamā.
2. Kacci mano supaṇihito (iti Hemavato yakkho) [154]
sabbabhūtesu tādino?
Kacci iṭṭhe aniṭṭhe ca
saṃkapp' assa vasīkatā?
3. Mano c' assa supaṇihito (iti Sātāgiro yakkho) [155]
sabbabhūtesu tādino;
atho iṭṭhe aniṭṭhe ca
saṃkapp' assa vasīkatā.
4. Kacci adinnam nādiyati? (iti Hemavato yakkho) [156]
Kacci paṇesu saṃyato?
Kacci ārā pamādamhā?
Kacci jhānam na riñcati?
5. Na so adinnam ādiyati, (iti Sātāgiro yakkho) [157]
atho paṇesu saṃyato,
atho ārā pamādamhā
buddho jhānam na riñcati.

—an all-embracing love
for all the universe
in all its heights and depths
and breadth, unstinted love,
unmarred by hate within,
not rousing enmity.

So, as you stand or walk,
or sit, or lie, reflect
with all your might on this;
—'tis deemed 'a state divine'.

Ignoring sophists' views,
the good—with insight filled,
and purged of appetite
for sensuous delights—
shall never see rebirth.

Sutta 9. The Himalayan Sprite

Sātāgira: It's mid-month sabbath, and a lovely night;
—to peerless Gotama let us repair.

Hemavata: Has he his thoughts in full control? Does such
control of thoughts extend to all that lives?
Come fair or foul, can he control his mind?

[154]

Sātāgira: He keeps his thoughts in full control, and this
control of thoughts extends to all that lives.
Come fair or foul, he still controls his mind.

Hemavata: Leaves he untouched what is not given him?
Keeps he his hands from harming living things?
Is he remiss in zeal or reverie?

Sātāgira: He leaves untouched what is not given him;
he keeps his hands from harm to living things;
he knows no sloth; he cleaves to reverie.

6. Kacci musā na bhaṇati? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [158]
 Kacci na khīṇavyappatho?
 Kacci vebhūtiyaṃ nāha?
 Kacci samphaṃ na bhāsati?
7. Musā ca so na bhaṇati, (*iti Sātāgiro yakkho*) [159]
 atho na khīṇavyappatho,
 atho vebhūtiyaṃ nāha,
 mantā atthaṃ so bhāsati.
8. Kacci na rajjati kāmesu? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [160]
 Kacci cittaṃ anāvilam?
 Kacci moham atikkanto?
 Kacci dhammesu cakkhumā?
9. Na so rajjati kāmesu, (*iti Sātāgiro yakkho*) [161]
 atho cittaṃ anāvilam,
 sabbamoham atikkanto
 buddho dhammesu cakkhumā.
10. Kacci vijjāya sampanno? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [162]
 Kacci saṃsuddhacāraṇo?
 Kacci 'ssa āsavā khīṇā?
 Kacci na 'tthi punabbhavo?
11. Vijjāya-m-eva sampanno, (*iti Sātāgiro yakkho*) [163]
 atho saṃsuddhacāraṇo;
 sabb' assa āsavā khīṇā;
 na 'tthi tassa punabbhavo.
- 11 A. Sampannaṃ munino cittaṃ kammanā vyappathena ca [163 A]
 vijjācaraṇasampannaṃ dhammato naṃ pasaṃsasi.
- 11 B. Sampannaṃ munino cittaṃ kammanā vyappathena ca [163 B]
 vijjācaraṇasampannaṃ dhammato anumodasi.
12. Sampannaṃ munino cittaṃ kammanā vyappathena ca
 vijjācaraṇasampannaṃ handa passāma Gotamaṃ.
13. Eṇijaṃghaṃ kisaṃ viraṃ appāhāraṃ alolupaṃ
 muniraṃ vanasmiṃ jhāyantaṃ ehi passāma Gotamaṃ.
14. Sihaṃ v' ekacaraṃ, nāgaṃ kāmesu anapekhiṇaṃ
 upasaṃkamma pucchāma maccupāsā pamocanaṃ.

Hemavata: Tell me; do falsehoods ever cross his lips?
Is he harsh-spoken or calumnious?
Or does his speech bewray frivolity?

Sātāgira: Not so. No falsehoods ever cross his lips;
he's not harsh-spoken nor calumnious;
his edifying words proclaim him Seer. [159]

Hemavata: Is he unstained by sensuous delights?
Keeps he a heart unmarred? Has he o'ercome
illusion? Has his eye all outlooks gauged? [160]

Sātāgira: Unstained is he by sensuous delights;
he keeps a heart unmarred; illusion he
has overcome and ev'ry outlook gauged. [161]

Hemavata: Say, has he lore? Walks he in purity?
Are Cankers dead? Will he be born no more?

Sātāgira: Yes, he has lore, and walks in purity;
Cankers are dead; he'll ne'er be born again.

Hemavata: A sage indeed! His mind within is matched
by deed and utterance. Conviction prompts
your praise and gratitude to one who blends
insight and life in one consummate whole. [163A & B]

Sātāgira: Come let us visit this great Gotama.

Hemavata: Yes, let us visit him,—that superman,
lean, self-denying, temperate, the seer
in lonesome forest rapt in reverie. [165]

Seek we this lion lone—this elephant
that heedeth none of pleasure's lures—and ask
the way to gain release from snares of death.

15. Akkhātāraṃ pavattāraṃ sabbadhammāna' pāraguṃ [167]
buddhaṃ verabhayātitaṃ mayaṃ pucchāma Gotamaṃ.
16. Kismiṃ loko samuppanno? (*iti Hemavato yakkho*) [168]
Kismiṃ kubbati santhavaṃ?
Kissa loko upādāya?
Kismiṃ loko vihaññati?
17. Chassu loko samuppanno; (*Hemavatāti Bhagavā*) [169]
chassu kubbati santhavaṃ;
channam eva upādāya
chassu loko vihaññati.
18. Kataman taṃ upādānaṃ yattha loko vihaññati? [170]
Niyānaṃ pucchito brūhi: kathaṃ dukkhā pamuccati?
19. Pañca kāmaguṇā loke manochaṭṭhā paveditā. [171]
Ettha chandaṃ virājetvā evaṃ dukkhā pamuccati.
20. Etaṃ lokassa niyyānaṃ akkhātāraṃ vo yathātathā. [172]
Etaṃ vo aham akkhāmi: Evaṃ dukkhā pamuccati.
21. Ko sū 'dha tarati oghaṃ? Ko 'dha tarati aṇṇavaṃ? [173]
Appatiṭṭhe anālambe ko gambhīre na sīdati?
Sabbadā silasampanno paññavā susamāhito [174]
ajjhatacintī satimā oghaṃ tarati duttaraṃ.
Virato kāmasaññāya, sabbasaṃyojanātigo, [175]
nandibhavaparikkhīno,—so gambhīre na sīdati.
24. Gambhīrapaññaṃ nipuṇatthadassiṃ
akiñcanaṃ kāmabhava asattaṃ,
—taṃ passatha sabbadhi vippamuttaṃ
dibbe pathe kamamānaṃ mahesiṃ!
25. Anomanāmaṃ nipuṇatthadassiṃ [177]
paññādadaṃ kāmālaye asattaṃ,
—taṃ passatha sabbaviduṃ sumedhaṃ,
ariye pathe kamamānaṃ mahesiṃ!

- Sātāgira* Let us together question Gotama,
and **the** great revealer and expounder, who [167]
Hemavata: has gauged all outlooks, won Enlightenment,
and sloughed away transgression's haunting fears.
- Hemavata* How came the world to be? Whereby [168]
to the Lord: gets it relation? What gives it support?
Say, what assails the world? What brings it low?
- The Lord*: From six things springs the world, and six
give it relation; six give it support;
six bring the world to final overthrow.
- Hemavata*: What's this support? What overthrows the world? [170]
Expound Release, and how to end all Ills.
- The Lord*: Five worldly strands has pleasure; mind makes six. [171]
By scouting pleasure comes the end of Ills;
—just this affords Release from worldly toils; [172]
—just this, I testify, ends mortal Ills.
- Hemavata*: Who makes a crossing hence o'er Stream and Flood? [173]
Who braves the shoreless, bottomless abyss?
- The Lord*: Across the raging Flood in safety fares [174]
the virtuous, of comprehending mind,
serene, reflective, watchful evermore.
Th' abyss engulfs not him who—quit of gust [175]
for pleasure, quit of trammels, freed from bonds—
has stifled hankerings for life on life.
- Hemavata*: Mark, sirs, this mighty sage, [176]
—subtle, profound in lore,
stainless, detached from lusts
and dreams of life to come—
who treads the way divine
in full Deliverance.
- Mark, sirs, this mighty sage, [177]
—subtle, as 'peerless' hailed,
giver of lore, immune
from grip of lusts, this seer
who understandeth all
and treads the Noble Way
in full Deliverance.

26. Suddiṭṭhaṃ vata no ajja supphāhātaṃ suhuṭṭhitaṃ [178]
yaṃ addasāma Sambuddhaṃ oghatiṇṇam anāsavaṃ.
27. Ime dasasatā yakkhā iddhimanto yasassino [179]
sabbe taṃ saraṇaṃ yanti; tvaṃ no Satthā anuttaro.
28. Te mayaṃ vicariссāma gāmaṃ gāmaṃ nagāṃ nagaṃ, [180]
namassamānā Sambuddhaṃ, dhammassa ca sudhammataṃ.

10. ĀḶAVAKASUTTA

Evam me sutaraṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā ĀḶaviyaṃ viharati ĀḶavakassa yakkhassa bhavane. Atha kho ĀḶavako yakkho yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkamaṃ, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama, samaṇāti. Sādh' āvuso ti Bhagavā nikkhamaṃ. Pavisā, samaṇāti. Sādh' āvuso ti Bhagavā pāvisi. Dutiyam pi kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama . . . pāvisi. Tatiyam pi kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama . . . pāvisi. Catuttham pi kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: Nikkhama, samaṇāti. Na khvāhan taṃ, āvuso, nikkhamissāmi; yaṃ te karaṇiyaṃ, taṃ karohīti. Pañhan taṃ, samaṇa, pucchissāmi. Sace me na vyākariссasi, cittaṃ vā te khipissāmi, hadayaṃ vā te phāḷessāmi, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipissāmīti.

Na khvāhaṃ taṃ, āvuso, passāmi sadevake loke, sabrahmake, sassamaṇa-brāhmaṇiyyā pajāya sadevamanussāya yo me cittaṃ vā khipeyya, hadayaṃ vā phāḷeyya, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipeyya. Api ca tvaṃ, āvuso, puccha yad ākankhasīti.

Atha kho ĀḶavako yakkho Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Kiṃ sū 'dha vittaṃ purisassa seṭṭhaṃ? [181]
Kiṃ su suciṇṇaṃ sukham āvahāti?
Kiṃ su have sādutaraṃ rasānaṃ?
Kathaṃjīvaṃ jivitaṃ āhu seṭṭhaṃ?
2. Saddh' idha vittaṃ purisassa seṭṭhaṃ; [182]
dhammo suciṇṇo sukham āvahāti;
saccaṃ have sādutaraṃ rasānaṃ;
paññājīvaṃ jivitaṃ āhu setthaṃ.
3. Kathaṃ su taratī oghaṃ? Kathaṃ su taratī aṇṇavaṃ? [183]
Kathaṃ su dukkhaṃ acceti? Kathaṃ su parisujjhati?
4. Saddhāya taratī oghaṃ, appamādena aṇṇavaṃ; [184]
viriyena dukkhaṃ acceti, paññāya parisujjhati.

All the Sprites: A gracious sight, a vision glorious, [178]
 has dawned on us, whose eyes have seen the Lord
 of all Enlightenment, from Cankers purged,
 who o'er the Flood has crossed triumphantly.

We thousand Sprites, most potent, far-renowned, [179]
 with thee seek refuge, guide beyond compare!

Village to village, hill to hill, we'll laud [180]
 the All-Enlighten'd and his matchless creed.

Sutta 10. The Woodland Sprite

Thus have I heard. Once the Lord was staying at Āḷavi in the domain of the Woodland Sprite Āḷavaka, who came to the Lord saying:—Come out, anchorite!

Yes, sir, replied the Lord, as out he came.

Get in again, anchorite, said the Sprite.

Yes, sir, replied the Lord, as in he went.

A second and a third time the same thing happened. But when the Sprite ordered the Lord out for the fourth time, the Lord replied:—No, I will not come out for you, sir. Do what you please.

I will ask you a question, anchorite. If you don't answer me, I will scare you out of your wits, or rive your heart, or fling you by the heels across the Ganges.

Sir, in all the wide world of gods, Māras, and Brahmās, I see no one among anchorites and brahmins, gods or men, who could do to me what you suggest. However, sir, ask what you will.

Hereon, the Sprite Āḷavaka addressed the Lord in these stanzas:—

What forms a man's chief wealth?
 What leads men on to weal?
 What taste excels the rest?
 What life is deemed the best?

The Lord: Faith forms a man's chief wealth; [182]
 the Doctrine leads to weal;
 the sweetest taste is truth;
 a life of wisdom's best.

Āḷavaka: How cross the Surge? How cross the raging Flood? [183]
 How shed besetting Ills? How cleanse the heart?

The Lord: The Surge is crossed by faith, the Flood by zeal; [184]
 Effort sheds Ills; and Insight cleanses hearts.

5. Kathaṃ su labhate paññaṃ? Kathaṃ su vindate dhaṇaṃ?
Kathaṃ su kittiṃ pappoti? Kathaṃ mittāni ganthati?
Asmā lokā paraṃ lokāṃ kathaṃ pecca na socati?
6. Saddahāno arahataṃ dhammaṃ nibbānapattiyaṃ
sussūsā labhate paññaṃ appamatto vicakkhaṇo;
7. patirūpakārī dhuravā uṭṭhātā vindate dhaṇaṃ;
saccena kittiṃ pappoti; dadaṃ mittāni ganthati.
8. Yass' ete caturo dhammā saddhassa ghāramesino
—saccaṃ, dhammo, dhiti, cāgo—, sa ve pecca na socati.
9. Ingha aññe pi pucchassu puthū samaṇabrāhmaṇe
yadi saccā damā cāgā khantya bhiyyo 'dha vijjati.
10. Kathan nu dāni puccheyyaṃ puthū samaṇabrāhmaṇe? [190]
—So 'ham ajja pajānāmi yo attho samparāyiko.
11. Atthāya vata me Buddhō vāsāy' Ālavim āgamā.
—So 'ham ajja pajānāmi yattha dinnarā mahapphalaṃ.
12. So ahaṃ vicarissāmi gāmā gāmaṃ purā purāṃ
namassamāno Sambuddhaṃ dhammassa ca sudhammataṃ.

II. VIJAYASUTTA

1. Caraṃ vā yadi vā tiṭṭhaṃ, nisinno uda vā sayāṃ, [193]
sammiñjati pasāreti,—esā kāyassa iñjaṇā.
2. Aṭṭhīnahārusaṃyutto tacamaṃsāvalepano [194]
chaviyā kāyo paṭicchanno yathābhūtaṃ na dissati.
3. Antapīro udarapūro yakapeḷassa vatthino
hadayassa papphāsassa vakkassa pihakassa ca
4. sirīghāṇikāya khelassa sedassa ca medassa ca
lohitassa lasikāya pittassa ca vasāya ca.

Ālavaka: How's Insight gained? And how are Riches found? [185]
How comes renown? What knits affection's ties?
How, after life on earth, shall sorrow cease?

The Lord: Insight is gained by trust that Arahats [186]
hold saving doctrine; next, by diligent
and close attention to their homilies;

he Riches finds whose life is in the right, [187]
who bears his yoke with strenuous resolve.
Through truth there comes renown; affection's ties
are knit by ready generosity.

Equipped with truthfulness and Doctrine sound, [188]
with stedfast heart and openhandedness,
a man shall cease from sorrow after death.

Go ask of brahmins, ask of anchorites, [189]
if aught on earth surpasses truthfulness,
self-mastery, munificence, and ruth.

Ālavaka: Why should I ask them,—I who grasp to-day [190]
wherein resides true welfare after life?

'Twas well for me there came to Ālavi [191]
th' Enlighten'd Lord, since I have heard to-day
where gifts bestowed ensure a harvest rich.

Village to village, town to town, I'll laud [192]
the All-Enlighten'd and his matchless creed.

Sutta 11. Disillusion

If—walking, standing, sitting, lying-down— [193]
a man draws in a limb or thrusts it forth,
'tis but a movement of a mortal frame.

Whilst knit by bones and sinews, plaster'd o'er [194]
by flesh and tissues, and encased in skin,
the body does not pass for what it is.

Within, 'tis stuffed with entrails, liver, paunch, [195]
with heart and bladder, kidneys, lungs, and spleen;

'tis stuffed with spittle, snot, and sweat, and blood, [196]
joints' lubricating humours, bile, and fat;

5. Ath' assa navahi sotehi asucī savati sabbadā: [197]
—akkhimhā akkhigūthako, kaṇṇamhā kaṇṇagūthako,
6. siṃghāṇikā ca nāsāto, mukhena vamat' ekadā [198]
pittaṃ, semhañ ca vamatī, kāyamhā sedajallikā;
7. ath' assa susiraṃ sīsaṃ matthalungassa pūritaṃ.
subhato naṃ maññati bālo avijjāya purakkhato.
8. Yadā ca so mato seti uddhumāto vinilako
apaviddho susānasmiraṃ, anapekhā honti ñātayo,
9. khādanti naṃ supāṇā ca sigālā ca, vakā kimī [201]
kākā gijjhā ca khādanti, ye c' aññe santi pāpayo.
10. Sutvāna Buddhavacanāṃ bhikkhu paññāpavā idha, [202]
—so kho naṃ parijānāti; yathābhūtaṃ hi passati:
11. 'Yathā idam, tathā etaṃ; yathā etaṃ, tathā idam';
ajjhataṇṇaṃ ca bahiddhā ca kāye chandaṃ virājaye.
12. Chandaṛāgaviratto so bhikkhu paññāpavā idha [204]
ajjhagā amataṃ santiṃ nibbānapadam accutaṃ.
13. Dipādako 'yam asuci duggandho parihīrati [205]
nānākuṇapaparipūro vissavanto tato tato.
14. Etādisena kāyena yo maññe uṇṇametave [206]
paraṃ vā avajāneyya,—kim aññatra adassanā?

12. MUNISUTTA

1. Santhavāto bhayaṃ jātaṃ, niketā jāyate rajo. [207]
Aniketam asanthavaṃ :—etaṃ ve munidassanaṃ.
2. Yo jātaṃ ucchiṇṇa na ropayeyya, [208]
jāyantaṃ assa nānuppavecche,
taṃ āhu ekaṃ muninaṃ carantaṃ :
'Addakkhi so santipadaṃ mahesi'.
Saṃkhāya vatthūni pamāya bījaṃ [209]
sineham assa nānuppavecche.
Sa ve munī jātikhayantadassi
takkaṃ pahāya na upeti saṃkharaṃ.

and evermore from its nine apertures
nine several excretions issue forth, [197]

as eyes and ears, with nostrils, mouth, and skin,
exude abroad their foul discharge of filth, [198]

and brains fill up the hollow cranium. [199]

—‘A fine thing this!’ say fools, by error led.

But, when the livid bloated corpse is flung
out on the charnel-ground, his kin heed not, [200]

while jackals, dogs, wolves, vultures, crows, and worms,
with other living things, devour his flesh. [201]

But th’ Almsman, here in Buddha’s teaching versed, [202]
—he knows the body, sees its nature clear.

So let the thought—‘this corpse was once as you, [203]
and is as you will some day be’, dispel
pride in the body from your heart and mind.

For when such pride and passion pass away, [204]
the Almsman, here in Buddha’s teaching versed,
wins Deathless peace, Nirvāna’s changeless state.

This noisome, two-legged body man parades, [205]
—though inly putrid, though discharging filth.

What is ’t but blindness, for *that* body’s sake, [206]
to plume one’s self or sneer at other men?

Sutta 12. The Sage

From close association perils spring; [207]
a home degrades. Clear-eyed, the sage concludes
to have no home, and no associates.

When ancient growths are dead, [208]
When no fresh growths arise,
the lonely sage is hailed
‘a seer who peace beholds’.

Weigh causes; kill off germs, [209]
before affection grows.
Proof then against rebirth,
the sage is lost to ken.

4. Aññāya sabbāni nivesanāni, [210]
anikāmayam aññataram pi tesam,
sa ve munī vītagedho agiddho
nāyūhati;—pāragato hi hoti.
5. Sabbābhibhum sabbavidum sumedham [211]
sabbesu dhammesu anūpalittam
sabbañjham taphakkhaye vimuttam,
—tam vāpi dhīrā ‘munim’ vedayanti.
6. Paññābalaṃ silavatūpapannam [212]
samāhitaṃ jhānarataṃ satīmam
sangā pamuttaṃ akhilaṃ anāsavam,
—tam vāpi dhīrā ‘munim’ vedayanti.
7. Ekaṃ carantaṃ munim appamattaṃ [213]
nindāpasamsāsu avedhamānam,
sīham va saddesu asantasantaṃ,
vātaṃ va jālamhi asajjamānam,
padumaṃ va toyena alippamānam,
netāram aññesaṃ anaññaneyyam,
taṃ vāpi—p
8. Yo ogahane thambhor ivābhijāyati, [214]
yasmim pare vācāpariyantaṃ vadanti,
taṃ vītāgaṃ susamāhitindriyam,
taṃ vāpi
9. Yo ve ʃhitatto tasaram va ujjum [215]
jigucchati kammehi pāpakehi
vīmaṃsamāno visamaṃ samaṃ ca,
taṃ vāpi. . . .
10. Yo samyatatto na karoti pāpaṃ, [216]
daharo ca majjho ca munī yatatto,
arosaneyyo (so) na roseti kañci,
taṃ vāpi
11. Yad aggato majjhato sesato vā [217]
piṇḍam labhetha paradattūpajīvi,
nālan thutun no pi nipaccavādī,
taṃ vāpi

Alive to errors all,
a prey to none, the Sage
harbours no want, wants naught;
—across the Flood is he.

[210]

The wise acclaim as 'Sage'
a conqueror all-wise,
flawless of thought, without
one tie or craving, Freed;

[211]

—the thinker wise and good,
thought's watchful votary,
released from ties, and quit
of crassness, Canker-free;

[212]

—the Sage who walks aloof,
unmoved by praise or blame,
whom (lion-like) no sounds
dismay, whom (like the wind)
no nets enmesh, who (like
the lotus) sheds whate'er
would tarnish him;—the guide
of others, led by none;

[213]

—tranquil, sense-disciplined,
still imperturbable
(no matter what men say)
as is a timber-balk;

[214]

—who loathes depravity,
as, shuttle-wise, he moves
onward 'twixt right and wrong,

[215]

—the Sage, by self-restraint
through youth and manhood kept
from wrong, who angers none
nor ever anger feels;

—who, careless if his dole
from top or bottom comes,
carps not at what he gets,
nor meagre thanks returns;

12. Munim carantaṃ virataṃ methunasmā,
yo yobbane na upanibajjhate kvaci,
madappamādā virataṃ vippamuttaṃ,
taṃ vāpi [218]

Aññāya lokaṃ paramatthadassim,
oghaṃ samuddaṃ atitariya tādim,
taṃ chinnaganthaṃ asitaṃ anāsavaṃ,
taṃ vāpi dhīrā ‘munim’ vedayanti. [219]

14. Asamā ubho dūravihāravuttino:
gihi dāraposī, amamo ca subbato.
Parapāṇarodhāya gihi asaṃyato;
niccaṃ munī rakkhati pāṇine yato. [220]

15. Sikhī yathā nilagīvo vihangamo
hamsassa nōpeti javaṃ kudācanaṃ,
evaṃ gihi nānukaroti bhikkhuno
munino vivittassa vanamhi jhāyato ti. [221]

—the Sage who chastely lives,
[218] unsnared by youthful charms,
who ne'er gives way to drink
or riotous excess;

—who comprehends the world,
[219] who sees the supreme good
who, safe across the Flood,
has burst his chains and now
no ties nor Cankers knows;
—him wise men hail as 'Sage'.

Unlike and wide apart they stand
[220] in mode of life and livelihood,
—the layman with a house and home,
and virtue's upright, selfless son.
Heedless, the layman kills and slays;
heedful, the Sage shields life from harm.

For all its crest and neck so blue
[221] the peacock ne'er can match in flight
the swan, nor layman emulate
an Almsman, when in lonesome wilds
the Sage is plunged in Reverie.

End of the Snake Book

II. CŪLAVAGGA

1. RATANASUTTA

Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [222]
 bhum māni vā yāni va antalikkhe,
 sabbe va bhūtā sumanā bhavantu;
 atho pi sakkacca suṇantu bhāsitaṃ.

2. Tasmā hi bhūtā nisāmetha sabbe: [223]
 mettaṃ karotha mānusiya pajāya
 divā ca ratto ca haranti ye baliṃ.
 Tasmā hi ne rakkhatha appamattā.

Yaṃ kiñci vittaṃ idha vā huraṃ vā [224]
 saggesu vā yaṃ ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ,
 na no samaṃ atthi tathāgatenā.
 Idam pi Buddhē ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!

Khayaṃ virāgaṃ amataṃ paṇītaṃ
 yad ajjhagā Sakyaṃ unī samāhito,
 na tena Dhammena sam' atthi kiñci.
 Idam pi Dhamme ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!

Yaṃ Buddhasēṭṭho parivaṇṇayī suciraṃ [226]
 ('samādhim ānatarikaṇ' ñaṃ āhu),
 samādhinā tena samo na vijjati.
 Idam pi Dhamme ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!

6. Ye puggalā aṭṭha satam pasatthā [227]
 (cattāri etāni yugāni honti),
 te dakkhiṇeyyā Sugatassa sāvakā;
 etesu dinnāni mahapphalāni.
 Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
 Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!

II. THE SHORT BOOK

Sutta 1. The Three Gems

May denizens of earth
and sky assembled here,
may beings all, rejoice
and hearken unto me. [222]

List, beings all, and show
goodwill to men, who bring
oblations night and day.
So shield mankind from harm.

No wealth in earth or skies,
no gem divine, can vie [224]
with Him who found the Truth.
This gem the Buddha holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

The perfect Peace He preached [225]
—our Sage's Deathless Peace—
can find no match elsewhere.
This gem the Doctrine holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

'Rapt contemplation's meed', [226]
which matchless Buddha praised,
can find no match elsewhere.
This gem the Doctrine holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

His faithful followers, [227]
Conversion's eightfold ranks
(four Paths, four Fruits, in all),
deserve oblations; gifts
to them yield rich returns.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

7. Ye suppayuttā manasā daḷhena
nikkāmino Gotamasāsanamhi,
te pattipattā amataṃ vigayha,
laddhā mudhā nibbutiṃ bhūñjamānā.
Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu! [228]
8. Yath' Indakhīlo paṭhavirū sito siyā
catubbhi vātehi asampakampiyo,
tathūpamaṃ sappurisaṃ vadāmi,
yo ariyasaccāni avecca passati.
Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu! [229]
9. Ye ariyasaccāni vibhāvayanti
gambhīrapaññena sudesitāni,
kiñcāpi te honti bhusappamattā,
na te bhavaṃ aṭṭhamaṃ ādiyanti.
Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu! [230]
10. Sahā v' assa dassanasampadāya,
tayas su dhammā jahitā bhavanti:—
sakkāyaditṭhi vicikicchitaṃ ca
sīlabbataṃ vāpi yad atthi kiñci;
catūh' apāyehi ca vippamutto
cha cābhiṭhānāni abhabbo kātuṃ.
Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu! [231]
11. Kiñcāpi so kammaṃ karoti pāpakaṃ
kāyena vācā uda cetasā vā,
abhabbo so tassa paṭicchādāya;
—abhabbatā ditṭhapadassa vuttā.
Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu! [232]
12. Vanappagumbe yathā phusitagge
gimhānamāse paṭhamasmirū gimhe,
tathūpamaṃ Dhammavaraṃ adesayi
nibbānagāmirū parama-m-hitāya.
Idam pi Buddhe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu! [233]

And they whose stedfast hearts,
by lusts unswayed, are set
on Gotama's behests,
—these win their goal; these taste
a bliss right cheaply earned.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[228]

As Indra's deep-sunk balk
defies all winds that blow,
so stedfast stand the good
who grasp the Noble Truths.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[229]

All who absorb those Truths
which our deep thinker preached,
though they backslide, shall see
not more than seven births.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[230]

And when full vision comes,
three outlooks pass away:—
doubt, personality,
and ritual. Thus freed
from dread of hell and doom,
man cannot perpetrate
the six dire, deadly sins.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[231]

And if one should transgress
in word or deed or thought,
he cannot cloke his fault,
since he has 'seen the light'.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

As when in spring the brake
is gay with flow'r and leaf,
this best of gospels lights
the way Nirvāna-ward.
This gem the Buddha holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[233]

13. Varo varaññū varado varāharo [234]
anuttaro Dhammavaraṃ adesayi.
Idam pi Buddh'e ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
14. 'Khīṇaṃ purāṇaṃ, navaṃ na 'tthi sambhavaṃ', [235]
virattacittā āyatike bhavasmim
te khīṇabījā avirūḷhichandā
nibbanti dhīrā yathāyama padīpo.
Idam pi Saṃghe ratanaṃ paṇītaṃ.
Etena saccena suvatthi hotu!
15. Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [236]
bhummaṇi vā yāni va antalikkhe,
tathāgataṃ devamanussapūjitaṃ
Buddhaṃ namassāma; suvatthi hotu!
16. Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [237]
bhummaṇi vā yāni va antalikkhe,
tathāgataṃ devamanussapūjitaṃ
Dhammaṃ namassāma; suvatthi hotu!
17. Yānīdha bhūtāni samāgatāni [238]
bhummaṇi vā yāni va antalikkhe,
tathāgataṃ devamanussapūjitaṃ
Saṃghaṃ namassāma; suvatthi hotu!

2. ĀMAGANDHASUTTA

1. Sāmākacingulakacīnakāni [239]
pattapphalaṃ mūlapphalaṃ gavippphalaṃ
dhammena laddhaṃ sata-m-asamānā
na kāmakāmā alikaṃ bhaṇanti.
2. Yad asaṃāno sukataṃ suniṭṭhitaṃ [240]
parehi dinnāṃ payataṃ paṇītaṃ
sālīnaṃ annaṃ paribhuñjamāno,
so bhuñjati, Kassapa, āmagandhaṃ.

He is—He knows—He gives—
the best; His Doctrine 's best.
This gem the Buddha holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[234]

'The old is dead; no fresh
growths rise', cry saints, who, quit
of germs and hopes, reject
all life to come and pass
away like lamps unfed.
This gem the Order holds;
—and may that truth bless all!

[235]

Praise, denizens of earth
and skies, praise, beings all,
the Buddha, dear to gods
and men,—who brings the Truth;
—and may a blessing come!

[236]

Praise, denizens of earth
and skies, praise, beings all,
the Doctrine, dear to gods
and men,—which brings the Truth;
—and may a blessing come!

[237]

Praise, denizens of earth
and skies, praise, beings all,
the Order, dear to gods
and men,—which brings the Truth:
—and may a blessing come!

[238]

Sutta 2. Carrion

A brahmin: The millet-grain, palm-nuts,
pulse, bulbs, and wilding shoots,
—this diet, rightly got,
ne'er prompts the good to lie.

[239]

'Tis eating carrion
to touch a host's rich fare,
well-dressed and delicate !

[240]

3. 'Na āmagandho mama kappatīti' [241]
 icc-eva tvaṃ bhāsasi, Brahmabandhu,
 sālīnam annaṃ paribhuñjamāno
 sakuntamaṃsehi susaṃkhatehi.
 Pucchāmi taṃ, Kassapa, etaṃ atthaṃ:
 Kathappakāro tava āmagandho?
4. Pāṇātipāto vadhachedabandhanaṃ [242]
 theyyaṃ musāvādo nikaṭi vañcanāni ca
 ajjhenakujjaṃ paraḍārasevanā,
 —es' āmagandho, na hi maṃsabhojanaṃ.
5. Ye idha kāmesu asaṃyatā janā [243]
 rasesu giddhā asucikamissitā
 natthikadiṭṭhī visamā durannayā,
 —es' āmagandho, na hi maṃsabhojanaṃ.
6. Ye lūkhasā dāruṇā piṭṭhimaṃsikā [244]
 mittadduno nikkaruṇātimānino
 adānasilā, na ca denti kassaci,
 —es' āmagandho—pe—
7. Kodho mado thambho paccupaṭṭhāpanā
 māyā usuyyā bhassasamussayo ca
 mānātimāno ca asabbhi santhavo,
 —es' āmagandho
8. Ye pāpasilā iṇaghātasūcakā
 vohārakūṭṭhā idha pāṭirūpikā
 narādhamā ye 'dha karonti kibbisam,
 —es' āmagandho
9. Ye idha pāpesu asaṃyatā janā
 paresam ādāya vihesam uyyutā
 dussilaluddā pharusā anādarā,
 —es' āmagandho
10. Etesu giddhā, viruddhātipātino
 nicc' uyyutā pecca tamaṃ vajanti ye,
 patanti sattā nirayaṃ avarāṃsira,
 —es' āmagandho

Though you (a brahmin!) say
you touch no carrion,
you eat choice dishes made
with flesh of birds.—I ask
what you term 'carrion'.

[241]

Kassapa
(*a former Buddha*): Killing and maiming, stripes,
bonds, theft, lies, fraud, deceit,
adultery,—not meats,
but these, are carrion.

[242]

Pursuit of pleasure, lust
for guzzling, life unclean,
blatant dissent,—not meats,
but these, are carrion.

[243]

Backbiting, cruelty,
betrayals, ruthless pride,
mean stinginess,—not meats,
but these, are carrion.

[244]

Anger, conceit, revolt,
guile, envy, bluster, pride,
low company,—not meats,
but these, are carrion.

Base living, slander, fraud,
cheating, the trickster's wiles,
foul infamies,—not meats,
but these, are carrion.

[246]

The lust to kill and hurt
and rob, the evil trade
of hunters fierce,—not meats,
but these, are carrion.

This rage to slay and steal,
these crimes, are fraught with doom
and end in hell;—not meats,
but these, are carrion.

[248]

11. Na macchamaṃsaṃ nānāsakattaṃ,
na naggiyaṃ muṇḍiyaṃ jaṭājallaṃ
kharājināni vā,
nāggihuttass' upasevanā va yā,
ye vā pi loke amarā bahū tapā,
mantāhuti yañña-m-utūpasevanā
sodhenti maccaṃ avitṭṇakankhaṃ. [249]
12. Sotesu gutto vijitindriyo care
dhamme t̥hito ajjavamaddave rato
sangātigo sabbadukkhappahīno
na lippati diṭṭhasutesu dhiro. [250]
13. Icc' etam attham Bhagavā punappunaṃ
akkhāsi; taṃ vedayi mantapāragū.
Citrāhi gāthāhi Muni-ppakāsaya
nirāmagandho asito durannayo.
14. Sutvāna Buddhassa subhāsitaṃ padaṃ
nirāmagandhaṃ sabbadukkhāpanūdanaṃ,
nīcamano vandi Tathāgatassa;
tatth' eva pabbajjam arocayittha. [252]

3. HIRISUTTA

1. Hirin tarantaṃ vijigucchamānaṃ,
'sakhāham asmi' iti bhāsamānaṃ,
sayhāni kammāni anādiyantaṃ,
'N' eso maman' ti iti naṃ vijaññā. [253]
2. Ananvayaṃ piyaṃ vācaṃ yo mittesu pakubbati,
'Akarontaṃ bhāsamānaṃ' pariṇānanti paṇḍitā. [254]

No abstinence from meat
 and fish, no nudity,
 no top-knots, shaven crowns,
 no grime or garb of pelt,
 no cult of sacred fire,
 no stark austerities
 to purchase future bliss,
 no runes, burnt-off'rings, rites,
 —can cleanse the man who doubts.

Control thy senses, rule
 thy powers, hold to Truth,
 be kind. The saint who leaves
 all ties and vanquishes
 all Ills, is stained by naught
 he either sees or hears.

[250]

What thus the Lord set forth,
 the brahmin realized,
 as, verse by verse, he heard
 th' unswerving mystic Sage,
 all 'carriage' above.

Hearing the Buddha preach
 these lofty, saving truths,
 denouncing 'carriage'
 and sweeping Ills away,
 the brahmin meekly knelt
 and asked to be enrolled
 an Almsman then and there.

Sutta 3. Loyalty

Renounce dishonest men
 who flout their plighted word
 and, though they pose as friends,
 perform not what they might.

[253]

When glozing protestations end in naught,
 then sage observers style it 'words, not deeds'.

[254]

Na so mitto yo sadā appamatto
bhedāsarīkī randham evānupassī;
yasmiñ ca seti urasīva putto,
sa ve mitto yo parehi abhejjo.

4. Pāmujjakaraṇaṃ tñānaṃ paṣaṃsāvahanāṃ sukhāṃ
phalānisaṃso bhāveti vāhanto porisaṃ dhuraṃ.
5. Pavivekarasam pītṽ rasāṃ upasamassa ca
niddaro hoti nippāpo dhammapītirasāṃ pivāṃ. [257]

4. MAHĀMANGALASUTTA

Evam me sutāṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho aññatarā devatā abhikkantāya rattiyaṃ abhikkantavaṇṇā kevalakappaṃ Jetavanaṃ obhāsetṽ yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitṽ Bhagavantaṃ abhivādetṽ ekamantaṃ aṭṭhāsi. Ekamantaṃ tñitā kho sā devatā Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Bahū devā manussā ca mangalāni acintayum, [258]
ākankhamānā sotthānaṃ:—brūhi mangalam uttamaṃ.
2. Asevanā ca bālānaṃ, paṇḍitānaṃ ca sevanā, [259]
pūjā ca pūjanīyānaṃ;—etaṃ mangalam uttamaṃ.
3. Patirūpadesavāso ca, pubbe ca katapuññatā,
attasammāpaṇidhi ca;—etaṃ mangalam uttamaṃ.
4. Bāhusaccaṃ ca sippaṃ ca vinayo ca susikkhito
subhāsītā ca yā vacā;—etaṃ mangalam uttamaṃ.
5. Mātāpitu upaṭṭhānaṃ, puttadārassa sangaho, [262]
anākulā ca kammantā;—etaṃ mangalam uttamaṃ.
6. Dānaṃ ca dhammacariyā ca, ñātakānaṃ ca sangaho, [263]
anavajjāni kammāni;—etaṃ mangalam uttamaṃ.
7. Ārati virati pāpā majjapānā ca saṃyamo, [264]
appamādo ca dhammesu;—etaṃ mangalam uttamaṃ.

No friend is he whose eye
[255]
is ever on the watch
to spy shortcomings out,
—against a future breach.
But if you rest secure,
like babe on mother's breast,
you have a friend indeed,
whom none can rob you of.

Whoso, while shouldering man's common lot,
[256]
has reaped a harvest blest, accomplishes
a happy life and well-earned meed of praise.

But he who, in aloofness, tastes true Peace,
[257]
puts haunting dread away, and wickedness,
and quaffs those draughts of bliss the Doctrine gives.

Sutta 4. The Boon of Boons

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasaunce, a certain deity of surpassing beauty illumined the whole grove as night was on the wane, and, coming to the Lord, stood to one side after meet salutations, addressing the Lord in the following stanzas :—

In quest of weal, full many gods and men
have ponder'd over fortune's choicest boons.
Tell me, I pray, what boon stands out supreme.

The Lord: 'Tis shunning fools, consorting with the wise,
[259]
and heartfelt worship of the worshipful;

'tis life in scenes befitting spent, a past
[260]
of garner'd goodness, aspiration high;

'tis lore profound and skill, obedience
[261]
to rules prescribed, and well-weighed utterance;

'tis ministry to parents, tender care
[262]
for wife and child, an undistracting trade;

'tis largesse, pious living, tender care
[263]
for kith and kin, conduct beyond reproach;

'tis shunning and eschewing wickedness,
[264]
forswearing drink, keeping right states of mind;

8. Gāravo ca nivāto ca santuṭṭhī ca kataññitūā [265]
kālena dhammasavanam;—etam mangalam uttaram.
9. Khantī ca sovacassatā samañānañ ca dassanam [266]
kālena dhammasācchā;—etam mangalam uttaram.
10. Tapo ca brahmacariyā ca, ariyasaccāna' dassanam, [267]
nibbānasacchikiriya ca;—etam mangalam uttaram.
11. Phuṭṭhassa lokadhammehi cittam yassa na kampati [268]
asokam virajam khemam;—etam mangalam uttaram.
12. Etādisāni katvāna sabbattha-m-aparājita [269]
sabbattha sotthim gacchanti;—tam tesam mangalam uttaram.

5. SŪCİLOMASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṁ samayam Bhagavā Gayāyam viharati Tāṁkita-maṇce Sūcilomassa yakkhassa bhavane. Tena kho pana samayena Kharo ca yakkho Sūcilomo ca yakkho Bhagavato avidūre atikkamanti. Atha kho Kharo yakkho Sūcilomam yakkham etad avoca: Eso samaṇo ti.

N' eso samaṇo; samaṇako eso. Yāva jānāmi yadi vā so samaṇo yadi vā samaṇako ti.

Atha kho Sūcilomo yakkho yena Bhagavā ten' upasamkami, upasamkamitvā Bhagavato kāyam upanāmesi. Atha kho Bhagavā kāyam apanāmesi. Atha kho Sūcilomo yakkho Bhagavantam etad avoca: Bhāyasi maṁ, samaṇāti.

Na khvāhan tam, āvuso, bhāyāmi; api ca kho te samphasso pāpako ti.

Pañham tam, samaṇa, pucchissāmi. Sace me na vyākarissasi, cittam vā te khipissāmi, hadayam vā te phāḷessāmi, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipissāmi.

Na khvāhan tam, āvuso, passāmi sadevake loke samārake sabrahmake sassamaṇabrāhmaṇiyā pajāya sadevamanussāya yo me cittam vā khipeyya, hadayam vā phāḷeyya, pādesu vā gahetvā pāra-Gangāya khipeyya. Api ca tvam, āvuso, puccha yad ākankhasīti.

Atha kho Sūcilomo yakkho Bhagavantam gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Rāgo ca doso ca kutonidānā? [270]
Aratī ratī lomahamso kutojā?
Kuto samuṭṭhāya mano vitakkā,
kumārakā varikam iv', ossajanti?
2. 'Rāgo ca doso ca itonidānā;
aratī ratī lomahamso itojā;
ito samuṭṭhāya mano vitakkā,
kumārakā varikam iv', ossajanti.

'tis rev'rent awe, content, prompt gratitude,
and due attendance when the Doctrine's preached; [265]

'tis patience, courtesy, the company
of Almsmen, timely talks on gospel truth; [266]

'tis strict austerity, a holy life,
the Noble Truths seen clear, Nirvāṇa won; [267]

a heart untouched by wordly things, a heart
from sorrow freed, th' unspotted heart at Peace. [268]

—To them who live that life, defeat ne'er comes,
but always weal;—this 'boon of boons' is theirs! [269]

Sutta 5. Inward Growths

Thus have I heard. Once, while the Lord was staying at Gayā near Stone-Couch in the domain of the sprite Sūciloma, the sprites Khara and Sūciloma were passing close by the Lord.

That's an anchorite, said Khara.

No, it is not, answered Sūciloma;—though he looks anchoritish. Wait till I make sure whether he is a real anchorite or only looks like one.

Accordingly, the sprite, with bristles like needles, went and brushed up against the Lord,—who drew back.

You're afraid of me, anchorite, said the sprite.

No, said the Lord; I am not afraid of you; but contact with you is unpleasant.

I will ask you a question, anchorite; if you do not answer it, I'll scare you out of your wits, or rive your heart, or fling you by the heels across the Ganges.

Sir, replied the Lord, in all the wide world of gods, Māras, and Brahmās, I see no one among anchorites and brahmins, gods or men, who could do to me what you suggest. However, sir, ask what you will.

Hereupon, the sprite Sūciloma addressed the Lord in these stanzas:—

Whence spring ill-will and lusts? [270]
Whence likes, dislikes, and dread?
Whence thoughts which plague the mind
as boys a captive crow?

The Lord: 'Self' breeds ill-will and lusts,
dislikes and likes and dread,
and thoughts which plague the mind
as boys a captive crow.

3. Snehajā attasambhūtā nigrodhassēva khandhajā,
puthū visattā kāmesu māluvā va vitatā vane. [272]
4. Ye naṃ pajānanti yatonidānaṃ,
te naṃ vinodenti (suṇohi yakkha!);
te duttaraṃ oghaṃ imaṃ taranti
atiṇṇapubbaṃ apunabbhavāya. [273]

6. DHAMMACARIYASUTTA

1. Dhammacariyaṃ brahmacariyaṃ, etad āhu vasuttamaṃ.
Pabbajito pi ce hoti agārasmā anagāriyaṃ, [274]
2. so ce mukharajātiko vihesābhirato mago,
jīvitaṃ tassa pāpiyo, rajaṃ vaḍḍheti attano. [275]
3. Kalahābhirato bhikkhu mohadhammena āvaṇo
akkhātamaṃ pi na jānāti Dhammaṃ Buddhena desitaṃ.
4. Vihesaṃ bhāvitattānaṃ avijjāya purakkhato
saṃkilesaṃ na jānāti maggaṃ niraya-gāminaṃ. [277]
5. Vinipātaṃ samāpanno, gabbhā gabbhaṃ, tamā tamaṃ,
sa ve tādīsako bhikkhu pecca dukkhaṃ nigacchati. [278]
6. Gūthakūpo yathā assa sampuṇṇo gaṇavassiko,
yo evarūpo assa; dubbisodho hi sangaṇo. [279]
7. Yaṃ evarūpaṃ jānātha, bhikkhavo, gehanissitaṃ
pāpicchaṃ pāpasamkappaṃ pāpa-ācāragocaraṃ, [280]
8. sabbe samaggā hutvāna abhinibbijayātha naṃ,
kāraṇḍavaṃ niddhamatha, kasamburaṃ apakassatha; [281]
9. tato palāpe vāhetha assamaṇe samaṇamānina,
niddhamitvāna pāpicche pāpa-ācāragocare, [282]
10. suddhā suddhehi saṃvāsaṃ kappayavho patissatā;
tato samaggā nipakā dukkhassa' antaṃ karissatha. [283]

Like banyan saplings, these are inward growths [272]
 by 'Self' begotten, craving's progeny,
 which spread abroad a tangled growth of lusts,
 like creepers rank that overgrow the woods.

All such as know their source, [273]
 dispel the brood (give ear!)
 and cross life's Flood at last,
 to know rebirth no more.

Sutta 6. The Good Life

The good, the holy life is hailed 'supreme'! [274]
 Though one goes forth from home to homelessness,

but shows himself harsh-tongued, and brutishly [275]
 delights to harry others, then his life
 is evil and he waxes fouler still.

The wrangling Almsman, in blank folly pent,
 misses the Doctrine which the Buddha preached.

By ignorance impelled to harry saints, [277]
 he fails to see his guilt leads straight to hell.

Passed now to doom—to birth on birth always, [278]
 darkness succeeding darkness—, this life o'er
 that Almsman goes to dree his weird of woe.

E'en as a jakes chock-full through years of use, [279]
 that man would be;—since guilt is hard to cleanse.

Almsmen, if such a parasite ye find, [280]
 of evil wants and aims, of evil life,

let all with one accord him shun, as chaff [281]
 him winnow out, as refuse cast away.

So, cart away, like empty husks, those frauds [282]
 who pose as Almsmen, being vile at heart.

Be pure, and only with the pure consort;
 and ye, in concord sage, shall end all Ills.

7. BRĀHMAṆADHAMMIKASUTTA

Evam me sutarū. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho sambahulā Kosalakā brāhmaṇamahāsālā jiṇṇā vuddhā mahallakā addhagatā vayo anuppattā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṅkamimsu, upasaṅkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodimsu, sammodayaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ vītisaṅgetvā ekamantaṃ nisīdimsu. Ekamantaṃ nisinnā kho te brāhmaṇamahāsālā Bhagavantaṃ etad avocurū: Sandissanti nu kho, bho Gotama, etarahi brāhmaṇā porāṇānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ brāhmaṇadhamme ti?

Na kho, brāhmaṇā, sandissanti etarahi brāhmaṇā porāṇānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ brāhmaṇadhamme ti.

Sādhu no bhavaṃ Gotamo porāṇānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ brāhmaṇadhammaṃ bhāsatu, sace bhoṭo Gotamassa agarūti.

Tena hi, brāhmaṇā, suṇātha sādhukaṃ manasikarotha, bhāsissāmi.

Evam bho ti kho te brāhmaṇamahāsālā Bhagavato paccassosum. Bhagavā etad avoca:—

Isayo pubbakā āsum saṃyatattā tapassino; [284]
pañca kāmaguṇe hitvā atta-d-attham acārisum.

2. Na pasū brāhmaṇā' āsum, na hiraññaṃ, na dhāṇiyaṃ; [285]
sajjhāyadhaṇḍhaññaṃ, brahmaṇaṃ nidhiṃ apālayum.

3. Yaṃ tesarū pakataṃ āsi dvārabhattaṃ upaṭṭhitaṃ
saddhāpakatam esānaṃ dātave tad amaññisum.

4. Nānārattehi vatthehi sayaneh' āvasatthehi ca
phitā janapadā raṭṭhā te namassimsu brāhmaṇe.

5. Avajjhā brāhmaṇā āsum ajeyyā dhammarakkhitā; [28]
na ne koci nivāresi kuladvāresu sabbaso.

6. Aṭṭhacattārisaṃ vassāni komārabrahmacariyaṃ carimsu te; [289]
vijjācaraṇapariyitṭhiṃ acarum brāhmaṇā pure.

7. Na brāhmaṇā aññaṃ agamum, na pi bhariyaṃ kiṇimsu te; [290]
sampiyen' eva saṃvāsaṃ sangantvā samarocayum.

8. Aññatra tamhā samayā utuveramaṇiṃ pati [291]
antaraṃ methunaṃ dhammaṃ nāssu gacchanti brāhmaṇā.

Sutta 7. Brahminism's Golden Age

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure-grounds, there came to him a number of Kosalan brahmins of great wealth—broken and old, aged and stricken in years, drawing to their life's close—who, after courteous salutations, took their seats to one side, saying: Are the brahmins of to-day in accord, Gotama, with the brahminic outlook of the brahmins of old?

No, brahmins; they are not.

If it is agreeable to you, sir, please tell us what was the brahminic outlook of the brahmins of old.

Give ear then and hearken; I will tell you.

Certainly, sir, answered they in assent.

The Lord began:—

In self-control and strict austerity [284]
the ancient sages dwelt; the fivefold strands
of pleasure they renounced, themselves to save.

No herds had brahmins then, no gold or pelf; [285]
their wealth was holy lore and holy life.

They deemed the common scraps outside folks' doors [286]
to be faith's offering for brahmin needs.

The rich of country sides and realms at large [287]
great court and homage to these brahmins paid
with garments dyed and couches and abodes.

Inviolable, invincible were they, [288]
shielded from harm by holiness of life;
and on a brahmin no man closed his doors.

For eight and forty years as celibates [289]
the early brahmins lived, in quest devout
of ken and vision and of holy life.

For wives these brahmins sought no other caste, [290]
and never purchased brides; 'twas their delight
to pass their wedded lives in bonds of love.

'Twas only when a period was o'er, [291]
that brahmins knew their wives,—and not between.

9. Brahmacariyaṃ ca sīlaṃ ca ajjavaraṃ maddavaṃ tapaṃ
soraccaṃ avihimsaṃ ca khantiṃ cāpi avaṇṇayum. [292]
10. Yo nesaṃ paramo āsi brahmā dāḥaparakkamo,
sa vāpi methunaṃ dhammaṃ supinante pi nāgamā. [293]
11. Tassa vattaṃ anusikkhantā idh' eke viññujātikā
brahmacariyaṃ ca sīlaṃ ca khantiṃ cāpi avaṇṇayum. [294]
12. Taṇḍulaṃ sayanaṃ vatthaṃ sappitelaṃ ca yāciya
dhammena samudānetvā tato yaññaṃ akappayum;
upaṭṭhitasmim̐ yaññasim̐ nāssu gāvo haniṃsu te. [295]
13. 'Yathā mātā pitā bhātā aññe vāpi ca nātakā,
gāvo no paramā mittā, yāsu jāyanti osadhā, [296]
14. annadā baladā c' etā vaṇṇadā sukhadā tathā,
—etam atthavaṣaṃ ñatvā nāssu gāvo haniṃsu te. [297]
15. Sukhumālā mahākāyā vaṇṇavanto yasassino
brāhmaṇā sehi dhammehi kiccākiccesu ussukā,
yāva loke avattiṃsu sukham edhittha ayam pajā. [298]
16. Tesāṃ āsi vipallāso. Disvāna aṇuto aṇum
rājino ca viyākāraṃ, nariyo ca samalankatā, [299]
17. rathe c' ājaññasamyutte sukate, cittasibbane,
nivesane, nivese ca vibhatte bhāgaso mite, [300]
18. gomaṇḍalaparibbūhaṃ, nārivaragaṇāyutaṃ,
ulāraṃ mānusaṃ bhogaṃ abhijjhāyimsu brāhmaṇā. [301]
19. Te tattha mante ganthetvā Okkākaṃ tad' upāgamum:
—Pahūtaḍḍhanadhañño si;
yajassu, bahu te vittaṃ; yajassu, bahu te dhanam! [302]
20. Tato ca rājā samyatto brāhmaṇehi rathesabbo,
assamedhaṃ purisamedhaṃ sammāpāsaṃ
vājapeyyaṃ niraggaṃ,—
ete yāge yajitvāna brāhmaṇānaṃ adā dhanam, [303]
21. —gāvo, sayanaṃ ca, vatthaṃ ca, nariyo ca samalankatā,
rathe c' ājaññasamyutte sukate, cittasibbane, [304]
22. nivesanāni rammāni suvibhattāni bhāgaso
nānādhāññaṃ pūretvā brāhmaṇānaṃ adā dhanam. [305]

F. 292]	<i>Book 2, Sutta 7. Brahminism's Golden Age</i>	73
	Brahmins prized holy living, rectitude, meek kindly gentleness, austerities, patient forbearance, tender mercy, ruth.	[292]
	The pattern brahmin—steadfast, resolute— not e'en in dreams had carnal intercourse.	[293]
	By his example, wisdom's sons were brought to prize forbearance, virtue, holy life.	[294]
	They asked but rice, beds, garments, ghee, and oil; and with such gifts they made their offerings; —no cows were slaughter'd for their sacrifice.	[295]
	Holding that cows,—like parents, brothers, kin— were their best friends, the source of healthful things, of food, well-being, goodliness, and strength, —grateful for this, they never slaughter'd cows.	[296] [297]
	Tall, goodly, debonair, and famous men were brahmins then, inspired by zeal to grow to their own standards high of right and wrong; and, while these lived on earth, mankind fared well.	[298]
	Then came corruption. Bit by bit, they saw the monarch's splendour, women richly dight,	[299]
	steeds yoked to chariots, gay coverlets, stately abodes, and chamber'd palaces,	[300]
	girt round with crowded byres, and graced with troops of women fair to view;—vast mundane wealth those brahmins saw, and, seeing, coveted.	[301]
	Thereon, they framed these verses and they sought Okkāka;—'King', said they, 'abounding wealth is thine and substance; offer sacrifice! great store, great wealth hast thou; make sacrifice!'	[302]
	Thereon the king, that doughty charioteer, won o'er by brahmins, offered sacrifice of horses, human victims, and the rest; and, at the close, to brahmins largesse gave of kine, beds, garments, women richly dight, steeds yoked to chariots, gay coverlets, stately abodes, and chambered palaces, filled full of gear.—The king this largesse gave.	[303] [304] [305]

23. Te ca tattha dhanam laddhā sannidhiṃ samarocayum; [306]
tesaṃ icchāvatiṇṇānaṃ bhiyyo taṇhā pavaḍḍhatha.
Te tattha mante ganthetvā Okkākaṃ puna-m-upāgamum:
24. 'Yathā āpo ca paṭhavi ca hiraṇṇadhanadhāniyaṃ, [307]
evaṃ gāvo manussānaṃ; parikkhāro so hi pāpinaṃ.
Yajassu, bahu te vittaṃ; yajassu, bahu te dhanam!
25. Tato ca rājā saṃyatto brāhmaṇehi rathesabho [308]
'nekā satasahassiyo gāvo yaññe aghātayi.
26. Na pādā na visāṇena nāssu hiṃsanti kenaci [309]
gāvo eḷakasamānā soratā kumbhadūhanā,
—tā visāṇe gahetvāna rājā satthen' aghātayi.
27. Tato ca devā pitaro Indo asura-rakkhasā
'Adhammo' iti pakkandum yaṃ satthaṃ nipatī gave.
28. Tayo rogā pure āsurā:—icchā, anasanaṃ, jarā;
pasūnaṃ ca samārambhā aṭṭhānavuti-m-āgamum.
29. Eso adhammo daṇḍānaṃ okkanto purāṇo ahū,
adūsikāyo haññanti, dhammā dhamṃsenti yājakā,
30. —evam eso aṇudhammo porāṇo viññūgarahito; [313]
yattha edisakaṃ passati, yājakaṃ garahati jano.
31. Evaṃ dhamme viyāpanne vibhinnā sudda-vessikā, [314]
puthu vibhinnā khattiyā, pati' bhariyā 'vamaññatha.
32. Khattiyā Brahmandhū ca ye c' aññe gottarakkhitā
jātivādaṃ niraṃkatvā kāmānaṃ vasam upāgamun ti.

Evaṃ vutte te brāhmaṇamahāsālā Bhagavantaṃ etad avocum: Abhik-kantaṃ, bho Gotama; abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama! Seyyathā pi, bho Gotama, nikkujjitaṃ vā ukkujjeyya, paṭicchannaṃ vā vivareyya, mūlhasa vā maggaṃ ācikkheyya, andhakāre vā telapajjotaṃ dhāreyya 'cakkhumanto rūpāni dak-khinti', evam evaṃ bhotā Gotamena anekapariyāyena dhammo pakāsito. Ete mayaṃ bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ gacchāma dhammaṃ ca bhik-khusaṃghaṃ ca; upāsake no bhavaṃ Gotamo dhāretu ajjatagge pāṇupetaṃ saraṇaṃ gate.

But largesse fired their passion more to get; [306]
 their craving grew and grew. Once more they sought
 Okkāka, with these verses newly framed :—

'As earth and water, gold and silver, so [307]
 are cows a primal requisite of man.
 Great store, great wealth is thine; make sacrifice!'

Thereon the king, that doughty charioteer, [308]
 won o'er by brahmins, for the sacrifice
 doomed cows by hundred-thousands to the knife.

—The cows that do no hurt with horn or hoof, [309]
 yes, gentle lamblike cows that fill the pail,
 he bade be taken by the horn and slain.

' 'Tis wrong! 'tis wrong!' arose th' united wail [310]
 of Brahmās, Indra, Titans, ogres too,
 as cows were butcher'd for the sacrifice.

Diseases, which of yore were only three [311]
 —desires, and hunger, and senility—
 with cattle-killing rose to ninety-eight!

'Of old began this outrage; harmless cows [312]
 are slain by guilty sacrificers' hands':—

thus, thus, the wise condemn this ancient guilt, [313]
 and folk condemn the sacrificers' crime.

When right thus perished, straightway discord split [314]
 farmers and serfs, and split the nobles' ranks,
 while wives looked down upon their lords with scorn;

nobles and 'Brahmā's kin', with folk of rank, [315]
 flouting their birthright, fell a prey to lusts.

Hereupon, those brahmins of great wealth said to the Lord :—Wonderful, Gotama! quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again what had been cast down, or reveal what had been hidden away, or tell a man who had gone astray which was his way, or bring a lamp into the dark so that those with eyes to see might see the things about them,—even so in many ways has Gotama made his Doctrine clear. We come to the reverend Gotama as our refuge, and to his Doctrine and to his Community. We ask him to accept us as followers who have found an abiding refuge from this day forth while life lasts.

8. NĀVĀSUTTA

1. Yasmā hi Dhammaṃ puriso vijaññā. [316]
Indaṃ va naṃ devatā pūjayeyya;
so pūjito tasmiṃ pasannacitto
bahussuto pātukaroti Dhammaṃ.
2. Tad aṭṭhikatvāna nisamma dhīro [317]
dhammānudhammaṃ paṭipajjamāno
viññū vibhāvī nipuṇo ca hoti,
yo tādisaṃ bhajati appamatto.
3. Khuddaṇ ca bālaṃ upasevamāno [318]
anāgatatthaṇ ca usūyakaṇ ca
idh' eva Dhammaṃ avibhāvayitvā
avitiṇṇakankho maraṇaṃ upeti.
4. Yathā naro āpagaṃ otarivā [319]
mahodikaṃ salilaṃ sīghasotaṃ,
so vuyhamāno anusotagāmī
—kiṃ so pare sakkhati tārayetuṃ?
5. Tath' eva Dhammaṃ avibhāvayitvā, [320]
bahussutānaṃ anisāmay' atthaṃ,
sayāṃ ajānaṃ avitiṇṇakankho
—kiṃ so pare sakkhati nijjhapetuṃ?
6. Yathā pi nāvaṃ daḥhaṇ āruhitvā [321]
phiyeṇ' arittena samangibhūto,
so tāraye tattha bahū pi aññe
tatr' ūpāyaññū kusalo mutimā;
7. —evam pi yo vedagu bhāvitatto [322]
bahussuto hoti avedhadhammo,
so kho pare nijjhapaye pajānaṃ
sotāvadhānūpanisūpāpanne.
8. Tasmā have sappurisaṃ bhajetha [323]
medhāvinaṇ c' eva bahussutaṇ ca;
aññāya atthaṃ paṭipajjamāno
viññātadhammo so sukhaṃ labhethāti.

Sutta 8. The Good Ship

As gods their homage pay
to Indra, pay thou thine
to him who teaches thee.
Well-pleased thereby, thy sage
will make the Doctrine plain.

When earnest study guides
along the way ordained,
the leal disciple comes,
through converse with his sage,
to grasp, to see, to know.

But with a sorry dolt,
who fails to win the goal,
yet envies those who do,
the student misses Truth
and dies with doubts still rife.

As one whom th' headlong rush
of some vast stream in spate
whirls willy-nilly down,
—can he help others o'er?

So he who grasps not Truth [320]
and heeds not learning's voice,
a doubter, knowing nought,
—can he gain others o'er?

As on a good stout ship, [321]
equipped with helm and oar,
a man expert and skilled
can ferry many o'er;

—so he who knows, who's trained, [322]
deep student, calmly sure,
by his full knowledge wins
hearers who're ripe to learn.

So pick a good and wise [323]
and learned teacher; tread
the path of Truth he shows,
till insight bring thee bliss.

9. KIMSĪLASUTTA

1. Kimsīlo, kimsamācāro, kāni kammāni brūhayaṃ
naro sammāniviṭṭh' assa uttamatthaṃ ca pāpuṇe? [324]

2. Vaddhāpacāyī anusuyyako siyā, [325]
kālaññu c' assa garūnaṃ dassanāya
dhammiṃ kathaṃ erayitaṃ khaṇaṇṇū
suṇeyya sakkacca subhāsītāni.

Kālena gacche garūnaṃ sakāsaṃ [326]
thambhaṃ nirankatvā nivātavutti
atthaṃ dhammaṃ saṃyamaṃ brahmacariyaṃ
anussare c' eva samācare ca.

4. Dhammārāmo Dhammarato
Dhamme ṭhito Dhammavinicchayaññū
n' evācare Dhammasandosavādaṃ,
tacchehi niyyetha subhāsītehi.

5. Hassaṃ jappaṃ paridevaṃ padosaṃ [328]
māyākataṃ kuhanāṃ giddhimānaṃ
sārambhakakassakasāvamucchaṃ
hitvā care vītamado ṭhitatto.

6. Viññātasārāni subhāsītāni, [329]
sutaṃ ca viññātaṃ samādhisaṃraṇṇaṃ,
na tassa paññā ca sutaṃ ca vaḍḍhati
yo sāhaso hoti naro pamatto.

Dhamme ca ye ariyapavedite ratā [330]
anuttarā te vacasā manasā kammanā ca,
te santisoraccasamādhisaṇṭhitā
sutassa paññāya ca sāram ajjhagū

10. UṬṬHĀNASUTTA

1. Uṭṭhahatha! nisīdatha! Ko attho supitena vo? [331]
Āturānaṃ hi kā niddā sallaviddhāna' ruppatam?

Sutta 9. Right Conduct

Sāriputta: What conduct, code, or scheme of things to do, [324]
will make man sure, and bring the highest good?

The Lord: Revere and envy not [325]
thine Elders; go to them
at seasons due; betimes
attend their homilies
and hear their weighty words.

Betimes thine Elders seek [326]
with meek humility;
weigh, follow, what they teach
of Doctrine, self-control,
the higher life, and Weal.

Be Doctrine thy delight [327]
and joy; in it stand fast;
plumb, plumb its depths; eschew
unworthy, vapid talk;
be Truth thy lofty theme.

Quit merry japes, laments, [328]
deceit and fraud, greed, pride,
brawls, taunts, the triple taint,
—quit, quit them each and all
and live self-poised, serene.

An exhortation's crown [329]
is comprehension, merged
in concentration rapt.
No growth in ken and lore
attends remiss self-will.

But they who find their joy [330]
in Buddha's Doctrine, shine
in word and thought and deed.
Full ken and lore reward
the meek, th' intent, the calm.

Sutta 10. Arise !

Arise! Sit up! Of what avail is sleep? [331]
What slumbers visit sick men writhing sore
beneath the barbed arrow's rankling smart?

2. Uṭṭhahatha! nisīdatha! Daḷhaṃ sikkhatha santiyā,
mā vo pamatte viññāya maccurājā amohayittha vasānuge. [332]
3. Yāya devā manussā ca sitā tiṭṭhanti atthikā,
tarath' etaṃ visattikaṃ, khaṇo ve mā upaccagā.
Khaṇātītā hi socanti nirayamhi samappitā. [333]
4. Pamādo rajo, pamādā pamādānupatito rajo.
Appamādena vijjāya abbūḷhe sallam attano. [334]

II. RĀHULASUTTA

1. 'Kacci abhiñhasaṃvāsā nāvajānāsi paṇḍitam?
Ukkādhāro manussānaṃ kacci apacito tayā?' [335]
2. 'Nāhaṃ abhiñhasaṃvāsā avajānāmi paṇḍitaṃ;
ukkādharo manussānaṃ niccaṃ apacito mayā'. [336]
3. Pañca kāmaguṇe hitvā piyarūpe manorame,
saddhāya gharā nikkhamma dukkhass' antakaro bhava. [337]
4. Mitte bhajassu kalyāṇe pantaṇ ca sayanāsanaṃ
vivittaṃ appanigghosaṃ; mattaññū hohi bhojane, [338]
5. cīvare piṇḍapāte ca paccaye sayanāsane;
etesu taṇhaṃ mā 'kāsi, mā lokaṃ punar āgami. [339]
6. Saṃvuto pātimokkhasmiṃ indriyesu ca pañcasu;
satī kāyagatā ty-atthu; nibbidābahulo bhava. [340]
7. Nimittaṃ parivajjehi subhaṃ rāgūpasamhitaṃ,
asubhāya cittaṃ bhāvehi, ekaggaṃ susamāhitaṃ,
8. animittaṃ ca bhāvehi, mānānusayam ujjaha:
tato mānābhisamayā upasanto carissasīti. [342]

Itthaṃ sudaraṃ Bhagavā āyasmantaṃ Rāhulaṃ imāhi gāthāhi abhiñhaṃ ovadati.

Arise! Sit up! Strive hard for inward Peace;
let not Death's monarch, finding you remiss, [332]
snare and befool you as his thralls and dupes.

O'ercome the toils which trap both gods and men. [333]
Let not the moment idly pass; for, they
who let it slip, repine—too late—in hell.

Sloth is defilement; hard aheel of sloth [334]
defilement comes; by zeal and knowledge pluck
the barbed arrow from your rankling wound.

Sutta 11. To Rāhula

The Lord: Does constant dwelling with thy teacher leave [335]
thee scornful? Dost thou inly honour him
who bears aloft the torch that lights mankind?

Rāhula: No constant dwelling with my teacher leaves [336]
me scornful; always do I honour him
who bears aloft the torch which lights mankind.

The Lord: Leave pleasure's fivefold strands,—so sweet, so dear; [337]
and, led by Faith, leave home, to end all Ills.

Choose worthy friends; a distant lodging seek, [338]
remote and quiet; sparing be in food

and raiment, alms, the requisites, and bed. [339]
Crave not for these, lest back to earth thou come.

Obeys the code; control thy senses five; [340]
watch well thy body; grow to loathe the world.

Forsake the gay appearances of things, [341]
where passion reigns. In things austere, not gay,
school thou thy heart to fixity and calm.

Foster what harbours no appearances. [342]
Discard all trend to pride; pride comprehend
and thou shalt go thy way serene and calm.

It was in this wise that, in these stanzas, the Lord again and again exhorted the reverend Rāhula.

12. VANGĪSASUTTA

Evam me sutarū. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Āḷaviyaṃ viharati, Aggāḷave cetiye. Tena kho pana samayena āyasmato Vangīsassa upajjhāyo Nigrodhakappo nāma thero Aggāḷave cetiye aciraparinibbuto hoti. Atha kho āyasmato Vangīsassa rahogatassa paṭisallinassa evaṃ cetaso parivitakko udapādi:—Parinibbuto nu kho me upajjhāyo? udāhu no parinibbuto ti? Atha kho āyasmā Vangīso sāyaṇhasamayaṃ paṭisallānā vuṭṭhito yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisīno kho āyasmā Vangīso Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Idha mayhaṃ, bhante, rahogatassa paṭisallinassa evaṃ cetaso parivitakko udapādi 'Parinibbuto nu kho me upajjhāyo? udāhu no parinibbuto ti?' Atha kho āyasmā Vangīso vuṭṭhāyāsanā ekaṃsaṃ cīvaraṃ katvā yena Bhagavā ten' añjalim paṇāmetvā Bhagavantam gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:

1. Pucchāma Satthāraṃ anomapaññaṃ [343]
 diṭṭhe va dhamme yo vicikicchānaṃ chettā:
 Aggāḷave kālam akāsi bhikkhu
 ñāto yasassī abhinibbutatto.
2. Nigrodhakappo iti tassa nāmaṃ [344]
 tayā kataṃ, Bhagavā, brāhmaṇassa;
 so taṃ namassaṃ acari mutyapekho
 āraddhaviriyo dāḥhadhammadassī.
3. Taṃ sāvakaṃ, Sakka, mayam pi sabbe [345]
 aññātum icchāma, samantacakkhu;
 samavaṭṭhitā no savanāya sotā;
 —tuvan no Satthā, tvam anuttaro si.
4. Chind' eva no vicikicchaṃ; brūhi m' etaṃ: [346]
 parinibbutaṃ vedaya, bhūripañña,
 majje va no bhāsa, samantacakkhu,
 Sakko va devānaṃ sahasanetto.
5. Ye keci ganthā idha mohamaggā [347]
 aññānapakkhā vicikicchaṭhānā
 Tathāgataṃ patvā na te bhavanti;
 —cakkhurū hi etaṃ paramaṃ narānaṃ.

Sutta 12. Kappa's Destiny

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying in the Agg-Ālava shrine in Ālavi, there had passed away at the shrine, not long before, the Elder Nigrodha-Kappa, who had been the director of the reverend Vangīsa; and Vangīsa in his private meditations speculated whether his old director had, or had not, passed utterly away. Rising from these meditations at eventide, the reverend Vangīsa betook him to the Lord, and, taking his seat to one side after due salutations, told the Lord of his speculations about his old director. Then, rising up from his seat, with his right shoulder respectfully bared, and with his folded palms extended towards the Lord, the reverend Vangīsa addressed him in these stanzas:—

Teacher beyond compare, [343]
 who solvest here and now
 all doubts, we come to ask
 about an Almsman famed
 who died in placid calm.

As 'Banyan-Kappa' thou [344]
 didst name that brahmin, Lord,
 (so leal to thee) who sought
 Release with tireless zeal
 and unrelaxing grip.

All-seeing Sākyān, [345]
 reveal thy servant's lot.
 Teacher without a peer,
 we long to learn of thee;

resolve our doubts; declare [346]
 if he has ceased to be!
 O thou, who seest all,
 speak out among us here
 as speaks among the gods
 Sakka the thousand-eyed.

Deluding bondages, [347]
 —th' allies of ignorance,
 the harbourers of doubt—
 vanish before the Lord,
 whose gaze transcends man's sight.

6. No ce hi jātu puriso kilese
(vāto yathā abbhaghaṇaṃ) vihaṇe,
tamo v' assa nivuto sabbaloko,
na jotimanto pi narā tapeyyuṃ. [348]
7. Dhīrā ca pajjotakarā bhavanti.
Taṃ taṃ ahaṃ, Vīra, tath' eva maññe,
vipassinaṃ jānaṃ upāgamamha,
parisāsu no āvikarohi Kappaṃ! [349]
8. Khippaṃ giraṃ eraya vagguvagguṃ
haṃsā va paggayha saṇiṃ nīkūja
bindussarena suvikappitena;
sabbe va te ujugatā : [350]
9. Pahīna-jātimaṇaṃ asesāṃ
niggayha dhonaṃ vadessāmi dhammaṃ.
Na kāmakāro hi puthujjanaṇaṃ;
saṃkheyyakāro ca Tathāgataṇaṃ.
10. Sampannaveyyākaraṇaṃ tava-y-idaṃ
samujjupaṇṇassa samuggahitaṃ.
Ayaṃ añjaliṃ pacchimo suppaṇāmito;
mā mohayi jānaṃ, anomapaṇṇa. [352]
11. Parovaraṃ ariyadhammaṃ veditvā,
mā mohayi jānaṃ, anomaviriya;
vāriṃ yathā ghammani ghammatatto
vācābhikankhāmi. Sutaṃ pavassa! [353]
12. Yadatthiyaṃ brahmacariyaṃ acāri
Kappāyano, kacci 'ssa taṃ amoghaṃ?
Nibbāyi so? ādu sa-upādi-seso?
Yathā vimutto ahu, taṃ suṇāma! [354]

If One dispelled not vice,
as wind the clouds, a pall
of darkness would enshroud
the world entire; not e'en
the Sons of Light could shine.

[348]

The wise illumine. Sure
that thou art wise and can'st
illumine, we, who know
thy scope, beg thee to tell
this conclave Kappa's lot.

[349]

Haste then to lift thy voice
so sweet, and, like a swan
with outstretched neck, ring out
in strains melodious;
—apt audience are we.

[350]

Yes; He who's cleansed and done
with birth and death, will tell!
'Tis not to please the crowd
I ask this; but to learn
the verdict of Truth's Lords.

[351]

Thy comprehension holds
the power to make all clear.
Once more, with clasped hands,
we pray thee, matchless sage,
to leave us not astray.

[352]

O thou, whose vision spans
all truth! Untiring sage,
O leave us not astray!
As folk in summer heat
for water pine, pine I
to hear thy words flow forth.

[353]

Did Kappa's higher life
prove fruitless in the end?
Has all he was quite gone?
Or does some part survive?
Say, what Release was his?

[354]

13. 'Acchecchi taṇhaṃ idha nāmarūpe. (ti Bhagavā) [355]
 Kaṇhassa sotaṃ digharattānusayitaṃ
 atāri jātimaraṇaṃ asesam.'
 —Icc' abravī Bhagavā pañcasetṭho.
14. Esa sutvā pasidāmi vaco te, isisattama; [356]
 'Amoghaṃ kira' me puṭṭhaṃ; na maṃ vañcesi Brāhmaṇo.
15. Yathāvādī tathākārī ahū Buddhassa sāvako; [357]
 acchidā Maccuno jālaṃ tatarā māyāvino daḥhaṃ.
16. Addasa, Bhagavā, ādiṃ upādānassa Kappiyo; [358]
 accagā vata Kappāyano maccudheyyaṃ suduttaraṃ.

13. SAMMĀPARIBBĀJANIYASUTTA

Pucchāmi Munim pahūtaṇṇaṃ [359]
 tiṇṇaṃ pāragataṃ parinibbutaṃ t̥hitattaṃ :—
 Nikkhamma gharā, paṇujja kāme,
 kathaṃ bhikkhu sammā so loka paribbajeyya?

2. Yassa mangalā samūhatā (ti Bhagavā) [360]
 uppādā supinā ca lakkhaṇā ca,
 sa mangaladosavippahīno
 sammā so loka paribbajeyya.
3. Rāgaṃ vinayetha mānusesu [361]
 dibbesu kāmesu cāpi bhikkhu,
 atikkamma bhavaṃ samecca Dhammaṃ
 sammā so loka paribbajeyya.
4. Vipit̥thikatvā pesuṇāni, [362]
 kodhaṃ kadariyaṃ jaheyya bhikkhu,
 anurodhavirodhavippahīno
 sammā so—pe—
5. Hitvāna piyaṃ c' eva appiyaṃ ca [363]
 anupādāya anissito kuhiñci,
 saṃyojanīyehi vippamutto
 sammā so

The Lord: On earth he shed the craze [355]
 for 'personality';
 across dark Māra's stream,
 he's safe from birth and death.
 (Said He who taught the Five.)

Vangisa: Seventh in line of Seers, I hail thy words! [356]
 For, when I asked if Kappa's life had proved
 no failure, Brahmin, thou hast spoken out!

So then, thy henchman's words and deeds conformed; [357]
 he burst false Māra's wide-spread net so strong.

Lord! Kappa found whence transmigration springs, [358]
 and passed beyond fell Māra's grisly realms!

Sutta 13. The Anchorite's Ideal

A Questioner: Deep sage, who, safe 'Across', [359]
 art spent, consummate, sure,
 —declare how th' Almsman here,
 who quits his house and home
 and pleasure's path forsakes,
 best proves true anchorite?

The Lord: Best anchorite is he [360]
 who heeds not omens, dreams,
 portents, or prodigies;
 who sets no store by luck;

whom passion cannot tempt
 with joys of men or gods,
 because rebirth is quenched,
 because the Truth is won;

who resolutely turns [362]
 his back on calumny
 and wrath and selfishness,
 till love and hate are dead;

who bans dislikes and likes, [363]
 whom nought sustains, whom nought
 supports, whom nought enchains;

6. Na so upadhīsu sāram eti [364]
āḍānesu vineyya chandarāgaṃ,
so anissito anaññaneyyo
sammā so loke paribbajeyya
7. Vacasā manasā ca kammanā ca [365]
aviruddho sammā viditvā Dhammam,
nibbānapadābhipatthayāno
sammā so
8. Yo ‘vandati man’ ti na upnameyya, [366]
akkuṭṭho pi na sandhiyetha bhikkhu,
laddhā parabhojanaṃ na majje,
sammā so
9. Lobhañ ca bhavañ ca vippahāya [367]
virato chedanabandhanāto bhikkhu,
so tiṇṇakathaṃkatho visallo
sammā so
10. Sārūppam attano viditvā [368]
na ca bhikkhu himseyya kañci loke,
yathātathiyaṃ viditvāna Dhammaṃ,
sammā so
11. Yassānusayā na santi keci, [369]
mūlā akusalā samūhatāse,
so nirāsaya anāsayaṇo
sammā so
12. Āsavakhīṇo pahīnamāno [370]
sabbaṃ rāgaṭṭhaṃ upātivatto
danto parinibbuto tītatatto
sammā so
13. Saddho sutavā niyāmadassī [371]
vaggagatesu na vaggasāri dhīro
lobhaṃ dosaṃ vineyya paṭighaṃ
sammā so

who never sets his hopes
on mundane things, nor lives
for pelf, whom naught upholds,
who follows no man's lead; [364]

whom words nor thoughts nor deeds
distract from grasping Truth;
who for Nirvāna yearns; [365]

whom homage ne'er inflates
nor scoffs depress, nor feasts
of honour can elate; [366]

who casts out covetise
and lust for life to come;
who harbours no desire
to chain or maim; whose doubts,
with inward barbs, are gone; [367]

whom sense of duty keeps
from harming anyone,
because his eyes have seen
the Doctrine's verities; [368]

whom wrong proclivities
lead not astray because
their harmful roots are gone;
who nothing needs nor seeks; [369]

whose Cankers are destroyed;
who casts forth pride, and quells
all passion,—schooled and sure;
who, being quick, is dead; [370]

whom Faith and Lore have led
to find salvation's road;
whom sects can ne'er pervert;
whom no resentment moves,
nor hate, nor covetise;

14. Saṁsuddhajino, vivattacchaddo,
dhammesu vasī, pāragū, anejo,
saṁkhāranīrodhaññāpakusalo,
sammā so loke paribbajeyya. [372]
15. Atītesu anāgatesu cāpi
kappātīto aticca suddhipañño
sabbāyatanehi vippamutto,
sammā so [373]
16. Aññāya padarū samecca Dhammaṁ
vivataṁ disvāna pahānam āsavānaṁ
sabbūpadhīnaṁ parikkhayā,
sammā so loke paribbajeyya. [374]
17. 'Addhā hi, Bhagavā, tath'eva etaṁ;
—yo so evaṁvihārī danto bhikkhu
sabbasaṁyojaniye ca vītivatto
sammā so loke paribbajeyya.' [375]

14. DHAMMIKASUTTA

Evam me sutarū. Ekaṁ samayaṁ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṁ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho Dhammiko upāsako pañcahi upāsaka-satehi saddhim yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṁkami, upasaṁkamitvā Bhagavantarū abhivādetvā ekamantarū nisīdi. Ekamantarū nisinno kho Dhammiko upāsako Bhagavantarū gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Pucchāmi taṁ, Gotama bhūripañña:—
Kathaṁkaro sāvako sādhu hoti:
yo vā agārā anāgāram eti?
agārino vā pan' upāsakāse? [376]
2. Tvaṁ hi lokassa sadevakassa
gatiṁ pajānāsi parāyanaṁ ca;
na t'atthi tulyo, nipuṇatthadassī;
tuvaṁ hi Buddhaṁ pavaraṁ vadanti. [377]
3. Sabbaṁ tuvaṁ ñāṇam avecca, Dhammaṁ
pakāsesi satte anukampamāno,
vivattacchaddo 'si, samantacakkhu,
virocasi vimalo sabbaloke. [378]

whom purity has crowned [372]
 with victory; who strips
 the veil from things, and knows
 all outlooks, mast'ring all,
 wantless, and fully skilled
 to quench each Plastic Force;
 who outgrows time—to come, [373]
 or past—by purity
 and insight, with Release
 from all that springs from sense;
 who knows the path and grasps [374]
 the Doctrine, seeing clear
 how he may Cankers oust
 by sapping mundane ties;
 —best anchorite is he.

The Questioner: 'Tis surely so, O Lord! [375]
 The Almsman schooled to live
 like this, who bursts all bonds,
 is best of anchorites.

Sutta 14. Dhammika's Enquiry

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasure-ground, there came to him, with five hundred other lay-followers, the lay-follower Dhammika, who, after due salutations, took his seat to one side and addressed the Lord in the following stanzas:—

Dhammika: What conduct, Gotama, [376]
 perfects, as followers,
 both those that homeless are
 and those that dwell in homes?
 For, thou know'st well the lot [377]
 and goal of gods and men,
 —thou matchless judge of Weal,
 'Buddha most excellent'!
 In pity (knowledge won) [378]
 thou did'st reveal the Truth
 and unveil all, pure seer,
 to flood the world with light.

4. Āgañchi te santike nāgarājā,
Erāvaṇo nāma, 'Jino' ti sutvā;
so pi tayā mantayitvājjhagamā
'sādhūti' sutvāna patītarūpo. [379]
5. Rājā pi taṃ Vessavaṇo Kuvero
upeti, Dhammaṃ paripucchamāno;
tassāpi tvaṃ pucchito brūsi, dhīra;
so cāpi sutvāna patītarūpo. [380]
6. Ye kec' ime titthiyā vādasilā
(Ājivikā vā yadi vā Nigaṇṭhā),
paññāya taṃ nātitaranti sabbe
—ṭhito vajantaṃ viya sīghagāmiṃ. [381]
7. Ye kec' ime brāhmaṇā vādasilā
vuddhā cāpi brāhmaṇā santi keci,
sabbe tayi atthabaddhā bhavanti,
—ye vāpi c' aññe vādino maññamānā. [382]
8. Ayaṃ hi Dhammo nipuṇo sukho ca,
yo 'yaṃ tayā, Bhagavā, suppavutto,
tam eva sabbe sussūsamānā;
tvaṃ no vada pucchito, Buddhasseṭṭha. [383]
9. Sabbe c' ime bhikkhavo sannisinnā,
upāsakā cāpi, tath' eva sotuṃ
suṇantu Dhammaṃ vimalenānubuddhaṃ
subhāsitaṃ, Vāsavassēva devā. [384]
10. Suṇātha me, bhikkhavo, sāvaṃyāmi vo
Dhammaṃ dhutaṃ, taṃ ca dharātha sabbe,
iriyāpathaṃ pabbajitānulomikaṃ;
sevetha naṃ atthadassī mutimā. [385]
11. Na ve vikāle vicareyya bhikkhu,
gāmaṃ ca piṇḍāya careyya kāle;
akālacāriṃ hi sajanti sangā;
—tasmā vikāle na caranti buddhā. [386]
12. Rūpā ca saddā ca rasā ca gandhā
phassā ca ye sammadayanti satte,
etesu dhammesu vineyya chandaṃ
kālena so pavise pātarāsaṃ. [387]

News of 'a Conqueror'
drew Indra's elephant
(of elephants the king),
who joyed to hear thy talk. [379]

Came too the fairies' king, [380]
thy Doctrine to explore.
Such answers thou didst give
as he rejoiced to hear.

Trained Jains and Mendicants [381]
all failed to vanquish thee,
—as they who stand stock-still
catch not the fleet of foot.

Trained brahmins, ripe in years, [382]
—with others keen to air
their point of view—are led
t' embrace thy saving Truth.

For, 'tis thy saving Truth,— [383]
subtile, but preached so well—
for which all yearn. Vouchsafe,
an answer, Lord, to us!

Let th' Almsmen seated round [384]
with these lay followers
learn from thy lips (as gods
hearken to Indra's words)
thy Lore immaculate!

The Lord: Give ear, ye Almsmen! Hear, [385]
and keep, the rules prescribed:—
Let seekers after Weal,
behave as anchorites.

Go not thy round when noon [386]
is past; betimes seek alms.
Snares greet th' untimely guest;
th' enlighten'd time their rounds.

Before thou seek'st thy meal, [387]
clear thou thy mind of zest
for forms, sounds, odours, taste,
and touch,—which turn men's heads.

13. Piṇḍaṇ ca bhikkhu samayena laddhā [388]
eko paṭikkamma raho nisīde
ajjhatacintī; na mano bahiddhā
nicchāraye sangahītattabhāvo.
14. Sace pi so sallape sāvakena [389]
aññena vā kenaci bhikkhunā vā,
Dhammaṁ paṇitaṁ tam udāhareyya,
na pesuṇaṁ, no pi parūpavādaṁ.
15. Vādaṁ hi eke paṭiseniyanti. [390]
Na te pasaṁsāma parittapaññe;
tato tato ne pasajanti sangā,
cittaṁ hi te tattha gamenti dūre.
16. Piṇḍaṁ vihāraṁ sayanāsanaṁ ca [391]
āpaṇ ca saṁghāṭirajūpavāhanaṁ
sutvāna Dhammaṁ Sugatena desitaṁ
saṁkhāya seve varapaññāsāvako.
17. Tasmā hi piṇḍe sayanāsane ca [392]
āpe ca saṁghāṭirajūpavāhane,
etesu dhammesu anūpalitto
bhikkhu, yathā pokkhare vāribindu.
18. Gahaṭṭhavattaṁ pana vo vadāmi, [393]
yathākaro sāvako sādhu hoti.
—Na h' eso labbhā sapariggahena
phassetuṁ yo kevalo bhikkhudhammo.
19. Pāṇaṁ na hane, na ca ghātayeyya, [394]
na cānujaññā hanataṁ paresaṁ,
sabbesu bhūtesu nidhāya daṇḍaṁ
ye thāvara ye ca tasanti loke.
20. Tato adinnaṁ parivajjayeyya [395]
kiñci kvaci sāvako bujjihamāno;
na hāraye, harataṁ nānujaññā;
sabbaṁ adinnaṁ parivajjayeyya.
21. Abrahmacariyaṁ parivajjayeyya, [396]
angārakāsuṁ jalitaṁ va, viññū;
asambhuṇanto pana brahmacariyaṁ
parassa dāraṁ na atikkameyya.

Thine alms received, return
alone, to sit apart [388]
and think,—with fixed mind
that never strays abroad.

In talk with pious folk [389]
or Almsmen, let thy theme
the Doctrine's virtues be,
—not spite, not finding fault.

If men assail, let us [390]
not heed these shallow pates,
who cling to this or that
as vagrant minds dictate.

Let wisdom's son, who heard
his Lord, treat alms, cell, bed,
water and rinsings, just
as means, and nothing more.

Such reason'd use will leave [392]
an Almsman as unstained
as lotus-leaf,—whereon
no drop of water rests.

To conduct which perfects [393]
lay-followers I pass.
(For, marriage these forbids
to grow to Almsmen's scope.)

Slay not, nor doom to death, [394]
nor sanction slaughter. Do
no violence to aught
that lives,—or strong or weak.

No layman, wittingly, [395]
should thief, or order theft,
or sanction any theft;
—take but what others give.

And shun incontinence [396]
as 'twere a pit of fire,
or, failing continence,
debauch no wedded wife.

22. Sabhaggato vā parisaggato vā [397]
 ekassa v' eko na musā bhaṇeyya,
 na bhāṇaye, bhaṇataṃ nānujaññā;
 sabbaṃ abhūtaṃ parivajjayeyya.
23. Majjaṇi ca pānaṃ na samācareyya [398]
 —Dhammaṃ imaṃ rocaye yo gahaṭṭho—
 na pāyaye, pipataṃ nānujaññā,
 ummādanantaṃ iti naṃ viditvā.
24. Madā hi pāpāni karonti bālā, [399]
 kāronṭi c' aññe pi jane pamatte;
 etaṃ apuññāyatanāṃ vivajjaye
 ummādanaṃ mohanaṃ bālakantaṃ.
25. “Pāṇam na hane, na cādinnaṃ ādiye, [400]
 musā na bhāse, na ca majjapo siyā,
 abrahmacariyā virameyya methunā,
 rattim na bhuñjeyya vikālabhojanaṃ,
26. mālāṃ na dhāre, na ca gandham ācare, [401]
 mañce chamāyaṃ va sayetha santhate”.
 —Etaṃ hi aṭṭhangikam āh' uposathaṃ
 Buddhena dukkhantaṃ pakāsitaṃ.
27. Tato ca pakkhass' upavass' uposathaṃ [402]
 —‘cātuddasiṃ pañcadasiṃ aṭṭhamiṃ’—
 pāṭihāriyapakkhaṇi ca pasannamānaso
 aṭṭhangupetaṃ susamattarūpaṃ.
28. Tato ca pāto upavutthuposatho [403]
 annena pānena ca bhikkhusaṃghaṃ
 pasannacitto anumodamāno
 yathārahaṃ saṃvibhajetha viññū.
29. Dhammena mātāpitara bhareyya, [404]
 payojaye dhammikaṃ so vaṇijjam;
 —etaṃ gihi vattayaṃ appamatto
 Sayampabhe nāma upeti deve ti.

In conclaves, courts, or talk, [397]
 let him not lie; let him
 not prompt or sanction lies;
 —let him renounce untruth.

Layman, observe this law:— [398]
 Shun drink; make no man drink;
 sanction no drinking. Mark
 how drink to madness leads.

Through drink fools sin, and egg [399]
 lax brethren on to sin.
 So flee this maddening vice,
 this folly, bliss of fools.

“Slay not, nor steal, nor lie; [400]
 from strong drink keep away;
 refrain from lechery;
 touch not wrong meals o' nights;

eschew both scents and wreaths; [401]
 spread on the ground thy bed.”
 (These eightfold sabbath-rules
 the saving Buddha framed.)

So make thy sabbath vows [402]
 as week succeeds to week,
 and keep with pious hearts
 this eightfold festival.

At morn, these vows performed, [403]
 with pious, thankful heart
 be wise and of thy means
 give Almsmen food and drink.

Cherish thy parents well; [404]
 follow a righteous trade.
 —Thus shall the layman staunch
 reach realms of light above.

End of the Short Book

III. MAHĀVAGGA

1. PABBAJJĀSUTTA

1. Pabbajjaṃ kittayissāmi, yathā pabbaji Cakkhumā, [405]
yathā vimaṃsamāno so pabbajjaṃ samarocayi.
2. 'Sambādho 'yaṃ gharāvāso, rajass' āyatanam' iti, [406]
'Abbhokāso ca pabbajjā',—iti disvāna pabbaji.
3. Pabbajitvāna kāyena pāpakammaṃ vivajjayi, [407]
vacīduccaritaṃ hitvā ājīvaṃ parisodhayi.
4. Agamā Rājagahaṃ Buddho Magadhānaṃ Giribbajam [408]
piṇḍāya abhihāresi ākiṇṇavaralakkhaṇo.
5. Tam addasā Bimbisāro pāsādasmiṃ patiṭṭhito;
disvā lakkhaṇasampannaṃ, imaṃ atthaṃ abhāsatha:—
6. 'Imaṃ, bhonto, nisāmetha. Abhirūpo, brahā, suci, [410]
caraṇena c'eva sampanno, yugamattaṃ ca pekkhati
7. okkhittacakkhu satimā; nāyaṃ nīcakulā-m-iva.
Rājadūtā vidhāvantu, kuhiṃ bhikkhu gamissati.'
8. Te pesitā rājadūtā piṭṭhito anubandhiṣuṃ:— [412]
'Kuhiṃ gamissati bhikkhu? Katthavāso bhavissati?'
9. Sapadānaṃ caramāno, guttadvāro, susaṃvuto, [413]
khippaṃ pattaṃ apūresi sampajāno patissato.
10. Sa piṇḍacāraṃ caritvā, nikkhamma nagarā, muni
Paṇḍavaṃ abhihāresi: 'Etthavāso bhavissati'.
11. Disvāna vāsūpagataṃ tato dūtā upāvisuṃ,
eko ca dūto āgantvā rājino paṭivedayi:
12. 'Esa bhikkhu, mahārāja, Paṇḍavassa puratthato
nisinno vyagghusabho va siho va girigabbhare.'

III. THE LONG BOOK

Sutta 1. Gotama's Pilgrimage

My tongue shall tell his going forth from home, [405]
 shall tell how he, our Seer, left house and home
 for Pilgrimage, and why he chose that life.

Because he saw 'a hole and corner life' [406]
 was all a house and home could give, the Lord
 went forth from home, embracing homelessness.

A Pilgrim now, he shunned all evil deeds [407]
 and lived his life aright, with blameless lips.

To Rājagāha come, th' Enlighten'd One, [408]
 by high distinction stamped, in quest of alms
 entered the hill-girt gorge of Māgadā.

As from his royal palace he looked down, [409]
 King Bimbisāra thus addressed his court:—

'Mark, sirs, that man, so handsome, tall, and calm, [410]
 of goodly gait, with gaze a plough's length on,

with eyes on earth downcast, of set intent! [411]
 He comes, methinks, of no mean humble stock.
 Let servants speed to track that Almsman down.'

So royal servants tracked the Almsman's steps [412]
 to find where he would go and where would stay.

With senses' portals guarded, self-controll'd, [413]
 from house to house he duly went for alms
 and quickly filled his bowl,—mindful, alert.

His round for alms now o'er, from out the town [414]
 our sage departed, climbing Pāṇḍavā
 to find a lodging on its craggy heights.

Marking his lodging down, the messengers [415]
 drew near, while one went back who told the king:—

'Like puissant tiger, or a lion, sire,
 within a cavern on the eastward crags
 of rugged Pāṇḍava, your Almsman sits.'

13. Sutvāna dūtavacanāṃ bhaddayānena khattiyo
taramānarūpo niyyāsi yena Paṇḍavapabbato. [417]
14. Sa yānabhūmiṃ yāyitvā yānā oruyha khattiyo
pattiko upasaṃkamma āsajja naṃ upāvisi. [418]
15. Nisajja rājā sammodi kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ tato
kathaṃ so vītisāretvā imam atthaṃ abhāsatha:— [419]
16. ‘Yuvā ca daharo cāsi paṭhamuppattiko susu
vaṇṇārohena sampanno, jātimā viya khattiyo [420]
17. sobhayanto anikaggaṃ nāgasamghapurakkhato. [421]
Dadāmi bhoge, bhuñjassu, jātiṃ c’ akkhāhi pucchito.’
18. ‘Ujū janapado, rāja, Himavantassa passato [422]
dhanaviriyena sampanno, Kosalesu niketino,
19. Ādiccā nāma gottena, Sākiyā nāma jātiyā; [423]
tamhā kulā pabbajito [rāja] na kāme abhipatthayaṃ,
20. kāmesv ādīnavaṃ disvā, nekkhammaṃ datṭhu khemato, [424]
padhānāya gamissāmi; ettha me rañjati mano’ ti.

2. PADHĀNASUTTA

1. Tam maṃ padhānapahitattaṃ, nadirā Nerañjaram pati, [425]
viparakkamma jhāyantaṃ yogakkhemassa pattiyaṃ,
2. Namuci karuṇaṃ vācaṃ bhāsamāno upāgami:— [426]
‘Kiso tvam asi dubbhaṇṇo; santike maraṇaṃ tava.
3. Sahassabhāgo maraṇassa, ekaṃso tava jīvitaṃ. [427]
Jīva, bho ! Jīvitaṃ seyyo;—jīvaṃ puññāni kāhasi.
4. Carato ca te brahmacariyaṃ, aggihuttaṃ ca jūhato,
pahūtaṃ cīyate puññaṃ.—Kiṃ padhānena kāhasi?
5. Duggo maggo padhānāya, dukkaro durabhisambhavo.’ [429]
—Imā gāthā bhaṇaṃ Māro aṭṭhā Buddhassa santike.

Hearing the news, with speed the noble prince
drove forth from town towards Mount Paṇḍava; [417]

and when no further he could ride, on foot [418]
the monarch made his way till him he reached.

Then, seated, after courteous exchange [419]
of seemly greetings, thus the monarch spoke :

'Thou 'rt young,—a stripling still in early bloom! [420]
Thy goodly mien bespeaks a gallant prince

his host arraying, elephants in van. [421]

Lo! Here I offer wealth to spend thereon,
and ask thee to disclose thy lineage.'

The Lord: Flanking Himālaya, in Kósala, [422]
yonder extends a land both rich and brave.

By lineage 'the Kinsmen of the Sun' [423]
are we, and Sākiyans by family.

—Such was the stock I left behind me, sire,
having no appetite for pleasure's toys.

Alive to all the perils pleasure brings, [424]
and finding in Renunciation peace,
I'll struggle onward.—Thus my mind finds bliss.

Sutta 2. Gotama's Struggle

As, purged of self by struggles stern, I sat [425]
in Reverie beside Nerāñjarā,
resolved to win by insight perfect peace,

came Māra, breathing words of ruth, to say [426]
how lean and ill I looked, how nigh to death.

'Death owns' (said he) 'a thousand parts of thee, [427]
and life can claim but one. Hold fast to life!
Life's best; for, living, thou 'lt store merit up.

If thou wilt lead a pious life and tend [428]
the fires of sacrifice, much merit will
accrue. By struggles what wilt thou achieve?

Rough is the road, the struggle desperate.' [429]
(Thus Māra, standing by the Buddha's side.)

6. Taṃ tathā-vādināṃ Māraṃ Bhagavā etad abravi:— [430]
Pamattabandhu pāpima, yen' atthena idhāgato,
7. aṇumattena pi puññaṇa attho mayhaṃ na vijjati. [431]
Yesaṃ ca attho puññaṇaṃ, te Māro vattum arahati.
8. Atthi saddhā, tato viriyaṃ, paññā ca mama vijjati! [432]
Evaṃ maṃ pahitattaṃ [pi] kiṃ jīvaṃ anupucchasi?
9. Nadānam api sotāni ayaṃ vāto visosaye, [433]
kiṃ ca me pahitattassa lohitaṃ n' upasussaye?
10. Lohite sussaṃānaṃhi pittaṃ semhaṃ ca sussati; [434]
maṃsesu khīyamānesu bhiyyo cittaṃ pasidati,
bhiyyo sati ca paññā ca samādhī mama tiṭṭhati.
11. Tassa mēvaṃ viharato, pattassa uttamavedanaṃ, [435]
kāmesu nāpekkhate cittaṃ.—Passa sattassa suddhataṃ!
12. Kāmā te paṭhamā senā, dutiyā arati vuccati, [436]
tatiyā khuppiṇā te, catutthī taṇhā pavuccati,
13. pañcamī thīnamiddhaṃ te, chaṭṭhā bhīrū pavuccati, [437]
sattamī vicikicchā te, makkho thaṃbho te aṭṭhamo,
14. lābho siloko sakkāro micchāladdho ca yo yaso, [438]
yo c' attānaṃ samukkaṃse pare ca avajānati;
15. —esā, Namuci, te senā Kaṇhassābhipphāraṇī; [439]
na naṃ asūro jīnāti, jetvā ca labhate sukhaṃ.
16. Esa muñjaṃ parihare? Dhi-r-atthu idha jīvaṃ! [440]
Sangāme me mataṃ seyyo, yañce jīve parājito!
17. Pagāḷhā ettha na dissanti eke samaṇabrāhmaṇā [441]
taṃ ca maggaṃ na jānanti yena gacchanti subbatā.
18. Samantā dhajiniṃ disvā yuttaṃ Māraṃ savāhanaṃ [442]
yuddhāya paccuggacchāmi. Mā maṃ ṭhānā acāvayi.
19. Yaṃ te taṃ na-ppasahati senaṃ loko sadevako, [443]
taṃ te paññāya vecchāmi, āmaṃ pattaṃ va asmanā.

To Māra's words the Lord made answer thus:—

[430]

The Lord: Thou Evil One! Thou congener of sloth!

I lack no peddling rudiments like these;
no jot of suchlike 'merit' profits me!
Māra should speak to those who 'merit' lack.

[431]

Seeing that faith and energy and lore
have purged all Self away, why talk of 'life'?

[432]

The wind dries rivers up;—shall this my blood
still course when Self is dead, when Self has gone?

[433]

While blood is drying up, the humours too
dry up; and with decay of flesh my mind
grows calmer; stronger grows its watchfulness,
its garner'd Lore, its concentration rapt.

[434]

As thus I dwell, who 've braved and borne pain's worst,
my heart for pleasure feels no zest at all.
Behold then, Māra, how a man is cleansed.

[435]

Pleasures of sense compose thy foremost ranks;
dislikes thy second; thirst and hunger form
thy third array; cravings come fourth; the fifth

[436]

is sloth and torpor; sixth faintheartedness;
doubts make the seventh; th' eighth,—pretence, hard heart,

[437]

and pelf, repute, the pride of place, with fame
ill-gotten, scorn of others, praise of self.

[438]

Black Māra, such is thine attacking force,
which only heroes overcome in fight,
and in their conquest find abiding Weal.

[439]

Shall I cry craven? Nay; a pest on life!
I'd sooner die than brook defeat—and live.

[440]

(Engulfed in this world's bogs, some anchorites
and brahmins wholly sink from sight and view,
and never come to know the path saints tread.)

[441]

Seeing this host arrayed, with Māra there
riding his elephant of war, I go
to fight him. May he never beat me back!

[442]

Thy hosts—which neither men nor gods can rout—
with Lore I'll crush, as pebbles smash a bowl.

[443]

20. Vasimkaritvā saṃkappaṃ satīṃ ca sūpatiṭṭhitāṃ [444]
raṭṭhā raṭṭhaṃ vicariṣsaṃ sāvake vinayaṃ puthu.
21. Ty-appamattā pahitattā mama sāsanakārakā [445]
akāmassa, te gamiṣṣanti yattha gantvā na socare.
22. “Satta vassāni Bhagavantāṃ anubandhiṃ padā padāṃ, [446]
otāraṃ nādhigacchissaṃ Sambuddhassa satimato.
23. Medavaṇṇaṃ va pāsāṇaṃ vāyaso anupariyagā: [447]
‘Ap’ ettha mudu vindema, api assādanā siyā.’
24. Aladdhā tattha assādaṃ vāyas’ etto apakkami. [448]
—Kāko va selāṃ āsajja nibbijjāpema Gotamaṃ.”
25. Tassa sokaparetassa viṇā kacchā abhassatha; [449]
tato so dummano yakkho tatth’ ev’ antaradhāyatha.

3. SUBHĀSITASUTTA

Evam me sūtaṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvattiyaṃ viharati Jetavane—pe—Bhagavā etad avoca:—Catūhi, bhikkhave, angehi samannāgatā vācā subhāsītā hoti na dubbhāsītā, anavajjā ca ananuvajjā ca viññūnaṃ. Katamehi catūhi? Idha, bhikkhave, bhikkhu subhāsitaṃ ñeva bhāsati no dubbhāsitaṃ, Dhammaṃ ñeva bhāsati no adhammaṃ, piyaṃ ñeva bhāsati no appiyaṃ, saccaṃ ñeva bhāsati no alikaṃ. Imehi kho, bhikkhave, catūhi angehi samannāgatā vācā subhāsītā hoti na dubbhāsītā, anavajjā ca ananuvajjā ca viññūnaṃ ti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā; idaṃ vatvā Sugato athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

1. Subhāsitaṃ uttamam āhu santo; [450]
dhammaṃ bhaṇe nādhammaṃ,—tam dutiyaṃ;
piyaṃ bhaṇe nāppiyaṃ,—taṃ tatiyaṃ;
saccaṃ bhaṇe nālikaṃ,—taṃ catutthan ti.

Atha kho āyasmā Vangiso uṭṭhāyāsanaṃ ekamsaṃ cīvaraṃ katvā yena Bhagavā ten’ añjaliṃ paṇāmetvā Bhagavantāṃ etad avoca: ‘Paṭibhāti maṃ, Sugatāti.’ ‘Paṭibhātu taṃ, Vangīsāti’ Bhagavā avoca. Atha kho āyasmā Vangiso Bhagavantāṃ sammukhā sārubbhāhi gāthāhi abhithavi:—

2. Tam eva vācaṃ bhāseyya yāy’ attānaṃ na tāpaye, [451]
pare ca na vihiṃseyya;—sā ve vācā subhāsītā.
3. Piyavācam eva bhāseyya, yā vācā patinanditā, [452]
yaṃ anādāya pāpāni paresaṃ bhāsate piyaṃ.

As Captain of my thoughts, with set resolve,
from realm to realm I'll find me followers [444]

zealous and purged of Self, whom loyalty [445]
to my commandments and their lust-free Lord,
shall bring where sorrows find no place at all.

Māra: 'For seven years I might keep dogging him, [446]
yet with the watchful Buddha get no chance!

To see if it was soft and good to eat, [447]
a crow hopped round a stone that looked like fat;

but, disappointed, flew away again. [448]
—In like disgust I give up Gotama!

The Lord: In grief, the sprite then let his lute slip down, [449]
as, sick at heart, he vanished out of sight.

Sutta 3. Apt words

Thus have I heard. Once while staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove (Śc.), the Lord spoke as follows:—There are four respects which characterize words apt and not inapt, words irreproachable and beyond reproach from the discerning. And what are the four? Take the case, Almsmen, of an Almsman who always speaks aptly and never inaptly, whose discourse is of the Doctrine only and not of vain matters, whose words are always kindly and never unkind, always truthful and never false. These four respects characterize apt speech. Thus spoke the Lord; and when the Blessed One had thus spoken, he, as Master, went on to say:—

Apt speech the good rank first, [450]
and, second, Doctrine's themes,
the third is kindly speech,
and fourth is truthfulness.

Here the reverend Vangīsa rose from his seat and, with his right shoulder bared and with folded palms outstretched, said to the Lord that a thought had struck him. Being bidden to express it, Vangīsa extolled the Lord to his face in suitable verses, saying:—

Speak thou what neither breeds thyself remorse [451]
nor hurts another.—Suchlike speech is apt.

Speak only kindly words, welcome to hear; [452]
avoid all railing; kindly be thy words.

4. 'Saccam ve amatā vācā', esa dhammo sanantano; [453]
 'sacce atthe ca Dhamme ca', āhu, 'santo patiṭṭhitā'.
5. Yam Buddhō bhāsati vācam khemaṃ nibbānapattiyā, [454]
 dukkhass' antakiriya, —sā ve vācānam uttamā.

4. SUNDARIKABHĀRADVĀJASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Kosalesu viharati Sundarikāya nadiyā tīre. Tena kho pana samayena Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Sundarikāya nadiyā tīre aggim juhati aggihuttam paricarati. Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo aggim juhivā aggihuttam paricaritvā uṭṭhāyāsana samantā catuddisā anuvilokesi: Ko nu kho imam havvasesam bhuñjeyyāti? Addasā kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantam avidūre aññatarasmim rukkhamūle sasīsam pārutam nisinnam, disvāna vāmena hatthena havvasesam gahetvā dakkhiṇena hatthena kamaṇḍalum gahetvā yena Bhagavā ten' upasamkami. Atha kho Bhagavā Sundarikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa padasaddena sīsam vivari. Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo 'Muṇḍo ayaṃ bhavaṃ! Muṇḍako ayaṃ bhavaṃ ti', tato va puna nivattitukāmo ahosi. Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājassa brāhmaṇassa etad ahosi: Muṇḍa pi hi idh' ekacce brāhmaṇā bhavanti; yaṃ nūnāhaṃ upasamkamitvā jātīm puccheyyan ti?

Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo yena Bhagavā ten' upasamkami, upasamkamitvā Bhagavantam etad avoca: Kimjacco bhavaṃ ti?

Atha kho Bhagavā Sundarikabhāradvājāṃ brāhmaṇaṃ gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Na brāhmaṇo no 'mhi, na rājaputto, [455]
 na vessāyano, uda koci no 'mhi.
 Gottam pariññāya puthujjanānam
 akiñcano manta carāmi loke.
2. Saṃghātivāsī agiho carāmi [456]
 nivuttakeso abhinibbutatto,
 alippamāno idha mānavehi.
 Akalla' maṃ pucchasi gotta-pañham.

'Pucchanti ve, bho, brāhmaṇā brāhmaṇehi saha: Brahmaṇo no [457]
 bhavaṃ ti?'

'Brāhmaṇo [hi] ce tvaṃ brūsi, mañ ca brūsi abrahmaṇaṃ,
 taṃ taṃ Sāvittim pucchāmi tipadaṃ catuvīsāt-akkharaṃ.'

'Truth is Nirvāna's speech' (the adage runs); [453]
truth, weal, and Doctrine (so 'tis said) make saints.

The Buddha's words of peace, which show the way [454]
to win Nirvāna and to end all Ill,
rank far above all other spoken words.

Sutta 4. Offerings

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying among the Kosalans on the banks of the river Sundarikā, the brahmin Sundarika-Bhāradvāja was busy there with fire offerings and with ministering to the sacrificial fire; and when all was over and done, he rose up and was looking round in all the four directions to find on whom to bestow what remained over from his sacrifice, when he became aware of the Lord seated close by at the foot of a tree, enveloped—head and all—in his cloak. So, taking in his left hand the remains from the sacrifice and the waterpot in his right hand, the brahmin moved towards the Lord. At the sound of the brahmin's approaching footsteps, the Lord uncovered his head. 'Why, it's only a shaveling, a wretched shaveling!'—said the brahmin to himself and he was minded to turn back. But he bethought him that there were some brahmins too who shaved their heads, and that he might ask the Lord about his descent. So the brahmin came up and asked the Lord what he was by birth.

The Lord: No brahmin I, no prince, [455]
no farmer, or aught else.
All worldly ranks I know,
but, knowing, go my ways
as—simply nobody.

Homeless, in Pilgrim garb, [456]
with shaven crown, I go
my way alone, serene.
—To ask my birth is vain.

The Brahmin: Nay, sir; when brahmins meet they never fail to ask if 'tis a brahmin they address.

The Lord: If you deny to me the brahminhood [457]
you claim, I ask you then of Sāvittī,
with clauses three, two dozen syllables.

4. 'Kiṃ nissitā isayo manujā khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṃ yaññaṃ akappayimṃsu puthū idha loke?' [458]

'Ya-d-antagū vedagū yañña-kāle
yassāhutiṃ labhe, tass' ijjhe ti brūmi.'

5. 'Addhā hi tassa hutam ijjhe (ti brāhmaṇo) [459]
yaṃ tādisaṃ vedaguṃ addasāma;
tumhādisānaṃ hi adassanena
añño jano bhuñjati pūraḷāsaṃ.'

6. 'Tasmātiha tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, atthena atthiko upasaṃkamma puccha.

Santaṃ vidhūmaṃ anighaṃ nirāsaṃ [460]
appev' idha abhivinde sumedhaṃ.'

7. 'Yaññe ratāhaṃ, bho Gotama, yaññaṃ yiṭṭhukāmo nāhaṃ pajānāmi,
anusāsatu maṃ bhavaṃ; [461]

yattha hutam ijjhate, brūhi me taṃ.'

'Tena hi tvaṃ, brāhmaṇa, odahassu sotaṃ, Dhammaṃ te desessāmi:—

8. Mā jātīm puccha, caraṇaṃ ca puccha. [462]
Kaṭṭhā have jāyati jātavedo;
nīcākulino pi munī dhitimā
ājāniyo hoti hirinisedho,

9. saccena danto, damasā upeto, [463]
vedantagū, vusitabrahmacariyo;
kālena tamhi havyaṃ pavecche,
yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.

10. Ye kāme hitvā agihā caranti, [464]
susaṃyatattā tasaraṃ va ujju
kālena tesu havyaṃ pavecche
yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.

The Brahmin: What moved so many sages—brahmins, nobles, and others
—to make oblations to deities here on earth? [458]

The Lord: If saints partake (say I),
the donor's thereby blest.

The Brahmin: A blessing sure is mine [459]
who find a saint in thee.
Had I not found thy like,
my cake had gone elsewhere.

The Lord: Well, brahmin, since you are in quest of Weal, draw near and
question me.

You'll find in me a sage [460]
good, taint-less, want-less, calm.

The Brahmin: My delight, Gotama, is in offerings; I am anxious to make
offerings; but know not how.

Pray, teach me, sir,— [461]
what offerings will bless.

The Lord: Hearken, then, brahmin; and I will expound the Doctrine to
you:—

Judge not by birth, but life. [462]
As any chips feed fire,
mean birth may breed a sage
noble and staunch and true.

Let brahmins 'merit' seek [463]
by offerings where truth
and self-control hold sway,
with lore and holy life;

and where the homeless, dead [464]
to pleasure, temperate,
press—shuttle-wise—straight on;

11. Ye vītārāgā susamāhitindriyā [465]
cando va Rāhugahaṇā pamuttā,
kālena tesu—pe—
12. Asajjamānā vicaranti loke [466]
sadā satā, hitvā mamāyitāni,
kālena tesu
13. Yo kāme hitvā abhibhuyyacārī, [467]
yo vedi jātimaṇaṇassa antaṃ
parinibbuto udakarahado va sīto,
Tathāgato arahati pūraḷāsaṃ.
14. Samo samehi, visamehi dūre, [468]
Tathāgato hoti anantapañño;
anūpalitto idha vā huraṃ vā,
Tathāgato arahati pūraḷāsaṃ.
15. Yamhi na māyā vasati na māno, [469]
yo vītalobho amamo nirāso,
panuṇṇakodho abhinibbutatto,
so Brāhmaṇo sokamalaṃ ahāsi;
Tathāgato—pe—
16. Nivesanaṃ yo manaso ahāsi, [470]
pariggahā yassa na santi keci,
anupādiyāno idha vā huraṃ vā,
Tathāgato
17. Samāhito yo udatāri oghaṃ
Dhammaṃ ca nāsi paramāya diṭṭhiyā,
khīṇāsavo, antimadehadhārī,
Tathāgato
18. Bhavāsavā yassa vacī kharā ca [472]
vidhūpitā, atthagatā, na santi,
sa vedagū sabbadhi vipamutto,
Tathāgato
19. Sangātigo, yassa na santi sangā, [473]
yo mānasattesu amānasatto,
dukkhaṃ parīññāya sakhettaṇṇaṃ,
Tathāgato
20. Āsaṃ anissāya, vivekadassī, [474]
paravediyaṃ diṭṭhiṃ upātivatto,
ārammaṇā yassa na santi keci,
Tathāgato

and where the passion-free
in peace have found Release,
—like moons from Rāhu's jaws;

and where th' emancipate [466]
in ceaseless vigilance
move, calling nothing theirs.

Victor by quelling lusts, [467]
Ender of birth and death,
calm, cool as is a lake,
Truth's Finder claims your gifts;

to former Buddhas peer, [468]
remote from lesser men,
stainless, of boundless Lore;

who, void of guile and pride, [469]
cares not to get or have,
true Brahmin, wrathless, spent;

whose mind, from errors freed,
retains no hankerings,
who clings to naught at all;

who stoutly crossed the Flood,
whose vision saw the Truth,
whose Cankers now are gone,
whom clay shall clothe no more;
the sage of full Release, [472]
from whom the lust to live
(and biting tongue) have gone
and left no smould'ring trace;

who, bursting ties, is free, [473]
who, pride-less 'mong the proud,
has plumbed Ill's cause and range;

who, craving nothing, soars [474]
to heights no others knew,
with naught to cause rebirth;

21. Parovarā yassa samecca dhammā [475]
vidhūpitā, atthagatā, na santi;
santo, upādānakhaye vimutto,
Tathāgato
22. Saṃyojanarñjātikhayantadassī [476]
yo 'pānudi rāgapatham asesam,
suddho niddoso vimalo akāco,
Tathāgato
23. Yo attanā 'Attānam' nānupassati, [477]
samāhito ujjugato t̥hitatto,
sa ve anejo akhilo akankho,
Tathāgato
24. Mohantarā yassa na santi keci, [478]
sabbesu dhammesu ca nāpadassī,
sarīraṇi ca antimaṇi dhāreti,
patto Sambodhiṃ anuttaraṃ sivaṃ
(ettāvatā yakkhassa suddhi),
—Tathāgato arahati pūraḷāsam.'
25. 'Hutaṇ ca mayhaṇi hutam atthu saccaṃ, [479]
yaṃ tādisaṃ vedagunaṃ alatthaṃ.

Brahmā hi sakkhi! Patigaṇhātu me Bhagavā, bhuñjatu me Bhagavā,
pūraḷāsam!'

26. 'Gāthābhigītāṃ me abhojaneyyam. [480]
Sampassataṃ, brāhmaṇa, n' esa dhammo;
gāthābhigītāṃ panudanti buddhā;
Dhamme sati, brāhmaṇa, vuttir esā.
27. Aññena ca kevalinaṃ mahesim, [481]
khīṇāsavaṃ kukkucavūpasantaṃ
annena pānena upaṭṭhahassu;
khettaṃ hi taṃ puññapekhaṇaṃ hoti.'
28. 'Sādhāham, Bhagavā, tathā vijaññaṃ [482]
yo dakkhiṇaṃ bhuñjeyya mādisassa,
yaṃ yaññaḷakāle pariyesamāno,
pappuyya tava sāsaṇaṃ.'
29. 'Sārambhā yassa vigatā, cittaṃ yassa anāvilam, [483]
vip̐pamutto ca kāmehi, thīnaṃ yassa panūditam,

beneath whose gaze all 'creeds',
consumed to ashes, die;
who, being spent, is freed;

[475]

who saw how bonds and birth
could be destroyed and cease;
who—passion swept away—
is cleansed, unmarred, and pure;

[476]

who finds no inward 'Self';
who—fixed, unswerving, sure—
is schooled, craves not, nor doubts;

[477]

he who with mind unwarped
fathoms each mental state,
whose body is his last,
who in Enlightenment
won bliss which crowns the pure;
—Truth's Finder claims your gifts.

[478]

The Brahmin: May mine prove off'ring true,
who find a sage like thee.

[479]

Brahmā be witness! Lord, vouchsafe to take my cake.

The Lord: I touch no chanter's fee!
Seers countenance it not;
th' enlighten'd scout such fees;
and while the Doctrine lasts,
this practice must obtain.

[480]

Provide with other fare
a sage of holy peace,
consummate, Canker-less.
—Merit to reap, sow *there*!

[481]

The Brahmin: Who, Lord, should have my cake?
Whom would'st thou bid me seek,
at time of sacrifice,
to eat a cake of mine?

[482]

The Lord: Seek him who's done with strife, unmarred of heart,
lust-free, and roused from crass stolidity;

[483]

30. *simantānaṃ vinetāraṃ, jātimaṇḍakavidāraṃ,* [484]
muniṃ moneyyasampannaṃ, tādisaṃ yaññaṃ āgataṃ
31. *bhakuṭṭiṃ vinayitvāna pañjalikā namassatha,* [485]
pūjetha annapānena;—evaṃ ijjhanti dakkhiṇā.'
32. 'Buddho bhavaṃ arahati pūraḷāsaṃ, puññaḷakkhettaṃ anuttaraṃ, [486]
 āyāgo sabbalokassa; bhoto dinnāṃ mahapphalānaṃ ti.'

Atha kho Sundarikabhāradvājo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca:
 Abhikkantaṃ . . . (&c. as at page 24) . . . arahataṃ ahoṣi.

5. MĀGHASUTTA

Evam me sutāṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Rājagahe viharati Gijjhakūṭe pabbate. Atha kho Māgho māṇavo yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkamaṃ, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodi, sammodaniyaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Māgho māṇavo Bhagantaṃ etad avoca:—Ahaṃ hi, bho Gotama, dāyako dānapati vadaññū yācayogo; dhammena bhoge pariyesāmi; dhammena bhoge pariyesitvā, dhammaladdhehi bhogehi dhammādhigatehi ekassa pi dadāmi, dvinnam pi dadāmi, tiṇṇam pi dadāmi, catunnam pi dadāmi, pañcannam pi dadāmi, channam pi dadāmi, sattannam pi dadāmi, aṭṭhannam pi dadāmi, navannam pi dadāmi, dasannam pi dadāmi, viśāya pi dadāmi, timsāya pi dadāmi, cat-tārisāya pi dadāmi, paññāsāya pi dadāmi, satassa pi dadāmi, bhiyyo pi dadāmi. Kaccāhaṃ, bho Gotama, evaṃ dadanto, evaṃ yajanto, bahuraṃ puññaṃ pasavāmīti?

Taggha tvaṃ, māṇava, evaṃ dadanto evaṃ yajanto bahuraṃ puññaṃ pasavasi. Yo kho, māṇava, dāyako dānapati . . . ekassa pi dadāti—pe—satassa pi dadāti, bhiyyo pi dadāti, bahuraṃ so puññaṃ pasavatīti.

Atha kho Māgho māṇavo Bhagavantaṃ gāthāya ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Pucchāmi' ahaṃ bho Gotamaṃ vadaññuraṃ (*iti Māgho* [487]
kāsāyavāsim agihaṃ carantaṃ:— māṇavo)
 Yo yācayogo dānapatī gahaṭṭho
 puññaṭṭhiko yajati puññaṭṭhiko
 dadāmi paresaṃ idha annapānaṃ,
 —kathaṃ hutaṃ yajamānassa sujjehe?

who teaches folk the bounds of rectitude
and, versed in birth and death, is 'perfect sage'.
When such a one draws near the sacrifice,

[484]

scorn not but welcome him; entreat him well.
'Tis thus that offerings a blessing bring.

[485]

The Brahmin: Th' Enlighten'd Lord is chief recipient;
for, he is merit's richest field, a shrine
for all the world's oblations;—gifts to him
bring forth abundant fruit in rich return!

[486]

Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again . . . (Śc., as at p. 25) . . . Sundarika-Bhāradvāja was numbered among the Arahats.

Sutta 5. Largesse

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying near Rājagaha at Vulture's Peak, a young brahmin named Māgha came to him and after courteous greetings took his seat to one side, saying to the Lord:—I am generous, Gotama, accessible and openhanded. I seek my substance aright, and from what I thus get and obtain I give away to a single individual, or to two or more recipients—up to a hundred or more. Now tell me, Gotama, do I by all these doles and oblations store up much merit?

Certainly you do, young brahmin; so would anyone who is generous, accessible and openhearted,—seeking his substance aright and, from what he has thus got and obtained, giving away to a single individual, or to two or more recipients, up to a hundred or more.

Thereupon, Māgha addressed the Lord in these stanzas:—

Māgha: Skilled judge of men's requests,
who goest, yellow-robed,
thy homeless way,—I ask
thee, Gotama, to whom
should open-handed folk,
who merit seek, do well
to offer food and drink?

[487]

2. Yo yācayogo dānapatī gahaṭṭho (*Māghāti Bhagavā*) [488]
 puññatthiko yajati puññapekho
 dadam̐ paresam̐ idha annapānam̐,
 ārādhaye dakkhiṇeyyehi tādi.
3. Yo yācayogo dānapatī gahaṭṭho (*iti Māgho māṇavo*) [489]
 puññatthiko yajati puññapekho
 dadam̐ paresam̐ idha annapānam̐,
 —akkhāhi me, Bhagavā, “dakkhiṇeyye”?
4. Ye ve asattā vicaranti loke, [490]
 akiñcanā kevalino yatattā,
 kālena tesu havyam̐ pavecche
 yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.
5. Ye sabbasaṃyojanabandhanacchidā,
 dantā vimuttā anighā nirāsā,
 kālena tesu havyam̐ pavecche
 yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.
6. Ye sabbasaṃyojanavippamuttā, [492]
 dantā vimuttā anighā nirāsā,
 kālena—pe—
7. Rāgañ ca dosañ ca pahāya moham̐ [493]
 khīṇāsavā vusitabrahmacariyā,
 kālena
8. Yesu na māyā vasatī, na māno, [494]
 ye vītalobbhā amamā nirāsā,
 kālena
9. Ye ve na taṇhāsu upātipannā, [495]
 vitareyya ogham̐, amamā caranti
 kālena
10. Yesam̐ taṇhā na ’tthi kuhiñci loke, [496]
 bhavābhavāya idha vā huram̐ vā,
 kālena
11. Ye kāme hitvā agihā caranti, [497]
 susaṃyatattā, tasaram̐ va ujju,
 kālena

The Lord: Success will crown their gifts
if he who takes has worth.

[488]

Māgha: In what consists that worth?

[489]

The Lord: When 'merit' is the aim,
let brahmins give to saints
who walk in self-control,
without belongings, freed;

[490]

—to those who, bursting Bonds,
are schooled, free, want-less, calm;

[491]

—to those who, loosed from Bonds,
are schooled, free, want-less, calm;

[492]

—to those, from passion, hate,
and error purged, who live
th' uncanker'd, holy life;

[493]

—to those in whom no guile
nor pride abides; who care
neither to get nor have;

[494]

—to those who—cravings quelled—
unburthened cross the Flood;

[495]

—to those who nowise crave
a future term of life,
on earth or anywhere;

[496]

—to those who, rid of lusts,
pursue their homeless way
straight onward, shuttle-wise,
in perfect self-control;

[497]

12. Ye vītarāgā susamāhitindriyā, [498]
cando va Rāhugahaṇā pamuttā,
kālena
13. Samitāvino vītarāgā akopā [499]
yesaṃ gatī na 'tthi idha vipphāya,
kālena
14. Jahetvā jātimaraṇam asesam, [500]
kathamkatham sabbam upātivattā,
kālena
15. Ye attadīpā vicaranti loke, [501]
akiñcanā sabbadhi vippamuttā,
kālena
16. Ye h' ettha jānanti yathātathā idam: [502]
'Ayaṃ antīmā, na 'tthi punabbhavo' ti,
kālena
17. Yo vedagū jhānarato satimā, [503]
sambodhipatto, saraṇam bhunnam,
kālena tamhi havyam pavecche,
yo brāhmaṇo puññapekho yajetha.
18. Addhā amoghā mama pucchanā ahu; [504]
akkhāsi me Bhagavā "dakkhiṇeyye".
Tvaṃ h' ettha jānāsi yathātathā idam,
tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.
19. Yo yācayogo dānapatī gahaṭṭho (*iti Māgho māṇavo*) [505]
puññaṭṭhiko yajati puññapekho
dadam paesaṃ idha annapānam,
—akkhāhi me, Bhagavā, "yaññasampadam".
20. 'Yajassu; yajamāno, Māghā, (*ti Bhagavā*) [506]
sabbattha ca vipphāsi cittaṃ;
ārammaṇam yajamānassa yañño,
ettha patiṭṭhāya jahāti dosaṃ.
21. So vītarāgo, pavineyya dosaṃ, [507]
mettaṃ cittaṃ bhāvayaṃ appamaṇam,
rattimdivaṃ satataṃ appamatto
sabbā disā pharate appamaññaṃ.'

—to those, to passion dead,
[498] with pow'rs in leash, Released
(like moons from Rāhu's jaws),

at peace, meek, passionless,
[499] who've barred all further births,

who've done with birth and death,
and overcome all doubts;

—to those who're their own light,
unburthened, wholly freed;

—to those who realize:—
'This life's my last! my last!'

—to Him, the watchful seer,
[503] whose Lore and Reveries
won him Enlightenment
to shelter multitudes;
—on Him let brahmins gifts
bestow, who merit seek.

Māgha: Not vainly did I ask.
[504] For now the Lord (who knows
and clearly sees it all)
has shown to whom to give.

When open-handed folk
[505] who merit seek to win,
bestow their food and drink
on others as a gift,
—does that a 'blessing' bring?

The Lord: In giving, purge thy heart,
[506] till giving fills thy thought
and Blemishes depart.

Thus, shalt thou,—calm, benign,
[507] zealous by night and day—
breed limitless goodwill
embracing all the worlds.

22. Ko sujjihati?—muccati?—bajjhatī ca? [508]

Ken' attanā gacchati Brahmaloḥam?
Ajānato me, Muni, brūhi puṭṭho!
(Bhagavā hi me sakkhi, Brahm' ajja diṭṭho;
tvaṃ hi no Brahmasamo ti saccaṃ!)
Kathaṃ upapajjati Brahmaloḥam, jutimā?

23. Yo yajati tividhaṃ yaññasampadaṃ [509]

(Māghāti Bhagavā)

ārādhaye dakkhiṇeyyehi tādi,
evaṃ yajitvā sammā yācayogo
upapajjati Brahmaloḥam ti brūmīti.

Evaṃ vutte Māgho māṇavo Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca: 'Abhikkantaṃ bho Gotama—pe—ajjatangge pāṇupetaṃ saraṇaṃ gatan ti.'

6. SABHIYASUTTA

Evaṃ me sutarā. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Rājagahe viharati Veḷuvane Kalandakanivāpe. Tena kho pana samayena Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa purāṇasālohitāya devatāya pañhā uddiṭṭhā honti:—'Yo te, Sabhiya, samaṇo vā brāhmaṇo vā ime pañhe puṭṭho vyākaroṭi, tassa santike brahmacariyaṃ careyyāsīti.' Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako, tassā devatāya santike te pañhe uggahetvā, ye te samaṇabrāhmaṇā saṃghino gaṇino gaṇācariyā ñātā yasassino tithakaraṃ sādhusammatā bahujanassa, seyyathidaṃ: Pūraṇo Kassapo, Makkhali Gosālo, Ajito Kesakambali, Pakudho Kaccāyano, Sañjayo Belaṭṭhiputto, Nigaṇṭho Nātaputto,—te upasaṃkamitvā te pañhe pucchati. Te Sabhiyena paribbājakena pañhe puṭṭhā na sampāyanti; asampāyantā kopaṇ ca dosaṇ ca appaccayaṇ ca pātukaronti; api ca Sabhiyaṃ yeva paribbājakaṃ paṭipucchanti. Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahosi:—'Ye kho te bhonto samaṇabrāhmaṇā saṃghino gaṇino gaṇācariyā ñātā yasassino tithakaraṃ sādhusammatā bahujanassa, seyyathidaṃ: Pūraṇo Kassapo—pe—Nigaṇṭho Nātaputto, te mayā pañhe puṭṭhā na sampāyanti; asampāyantā kopaṇ ca dosaṇ ca appaccayaṇ ca pātukaronti; api ca maṃ yev' ettha paṭipucchanti. Yan nūnāhaṃ hīnāy' āvattitvā kāme paribhuñjeyyan ti?'

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahosi:—'Ayam pi samaṇo Gotamo saṃghī c' eva gaṇī ca gaṇācariyo ca ñāto yasassī tithakaro sādhusammato bahujanassa. Yan nūnāhaṃ samaṇaṃ Gotamaṃ upasaṃkamitvā ime pañhe puccheyyan ti?'

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahosi:—'Ye pi kho te bhonto samaṇabrāhmaṇā jīṇṇā vuddhā mahallakā addhagatā vayo anuppattā therā

Māgha: Who's cleansed, or freed, or bound?

[508]

Whereby can one secure
passage to Bráhmā's realms?

I know not; tell me, Sage,

—thou Bráhmā manifest!

I vow thee Bráhmā's peer!

How, Lord of light, can man
pass hence to Bráhmā's realms?

The Lord: Let him whose gifts are graced

[509]

by gifts' three virtues, find
recipients of worth;

—Such openhandedness
admits to Bráhmā's realms.

Hereon, the young brahmin Māgha said to the Lord:—Wonderful, Gotama, quite wonderful! Just as a man might set upright again . . . (*Śc.*, as at p. 35) . . . from this day forth while life lasts.

Sutta 6. Sabhiya's Questions

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Rājagaha in the Bamboo grove where the squirrels were fed, a certain deity who in life on earth had been a relation of Sabhiya the Wanderer, propounded certain questions, with the injunction to Sabhiya to follow any anchorite or brahmin who could answer them. After learning these questions from the deity, Sabhiya betook him to anchorites and brahmins who had confraternities and schools, and were known and famed as heads of schools and founders of saving creeds and were held in high popular repute,—such as Pūraṇa Kassapa, Makkhali Gosāla, Ajita Kesa-Kambali, Pakudha Kaccāyana, Sañjaya Belaṭṭhi-putta, and Nāta-putta the Jain; and to each of these six he put those questions. But not one of them could furnish the answers; each and all of them, on being questioned by Sabhiya, showed temper and irritation and resentment, and put counter-questions of their own to Sabhiya, till he was tempted to abandon the higher life for a life of pleasure.

But the thought came to him that, over and above these six, there was the anchorite Gotama, who equally had a confraternity and a school of his own, and was known and famed as the head of a school and the founder of a saving creed, and was held in high popular repute. Why not ask Gotama?

Then followed the thought that all those personages whom he had already asked without success, were old and venerable men of long standing as

rattaññū cirapabbajitā saṁghino gaṇino . . . maṁ yev' ettha paṭipucchanti. Kiṁ pana me samaṇo Gotamo ime pañhe puṭṭho vyākariṣṣati? Samaṇo hi Gotamo daharo c' eva jātiyā navo ca pabbajjāyāti.'

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahoṣi:—'Samaṇo kho daharo ti na uññātabbo, na paribhotabbo; daharo pi ce samaṇo hoti, so ca hoti mahiddhiko mahānubhāvo. Yan nūnāhaṁ samaṇaṁ Gotamaṁ upasaṁkamitvā ime pañhe puccheyyan ti?'

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako yena Rājagahaṁ tena cārikaṁ pakkāmi, anupubbena cārikaṁ caramāno yena Rājagahaṁ, Veḷuvanaṁ, Kalandakanivāpo, yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṁkami, upasaṁkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṁ sammodi, sammodanīyaṁ kathaṁ sārāṇīyaṁ vītisaṛetvā ekamantaṁ nisīdi. Ekamantaṁ nisinno kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavantaṁ gāthāya ajjha-bhāsi:—

1. Kamkhī vecikicchī āgamaṁ (iti Sabhiyo) [510]
pañhe pucchituṁ abhikaṁkhamāno;
tes' antakaro bhavāhi me, pañhe me puṭṭho
anupubbaṁ anudhammaṁ vyākaroṇi me.

2. Dūrato āgato si (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [511]
pañhe pucchituṁ abhikaṁkhamāno;
—tes' antakaro bhavāmi te, pañhe te puṭṭho
anupubbaṁ anudhammaṁ vyākaroṇi me.

3. Puccha maṁ, Sabhiya, pañhaṁ yaṁ kiñci manas' icchasi, [512]
tassa tass' eva pañhassa ahaṁ antaṁ karomi te ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyassa paribbājakassa etad ahoṣi:—'Acchariyaṁ vata bho; abbhutaṁ vata bho! yaṁ vatāhaṁ aññesu samaṇabrāhmaṇesu okāsamattam pi nālatthaṁ, tam me idaṁ samaṇena Gotamena okāsakammaṁ katan ti', attamano pamodito udaggo pītisomanassajāto Bhagavantaṁ pañhaṁ pucchi:—

4. Kimpattinaṁ āhu 'bhikkhunaṁ?' (iti Sabhiyo) [513]
'Soratam' kena? Kathaṁ ca 'dantaṁ' āhu?
'Buddho' ti kathaṁ pavuccati?
Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroṇi.

5. Pajjena katena attanā (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [514]
parinibbānagato vitiṇṇakaṁkho,
vibhavaṁ ca bhavaṁ ca vippahāya,
vusitavā khīnapunabbhavo,—sa "bhikkhu".

anchorites, and that, as they had all failed to answer the questions, how could answers be expected from Gotama,—who was so junior in years and had only become an anchorite so recently?

But here came the thought to Sabhiya that an anchorite was not to be despised and scorned on grounds of youth, and that if a young man became an anchorite, he attained great potency and powers. So why not ask Gotama the questions?

Thereupon, Sabhiya the Wanderer set out on an alms-pilgrimage to Rājagaha and at last found the Lord in the Bamboo grove where the squirrels were fed and, after courteous greetings sat down to one side, addressing the Lord in these stanzas:—

Sabhiya: Doubt and perplexity
bring me with questions here;
I pray you make all clear;
expound their full import
as I put each in turn.

The Lord: Thou comest from afar
with questionings; and I
will answer each in turn
and show its full import.

So ask me what thou wilt
and I will answer it.

Thought Sabhiya to himself:—It is wonderful, it is marvellous, how the anchorite Gotama has accorded me the hearing which all those other anchorites and brahmins refused me! So in gladness and joy, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya asked the Lord the following question:—

What stamps 'the Almsman true'? [513]
What makes him 'meek' and 'schooled'?
What marks 'Enlightenment'?
Answer me, Lord, I pray.

The Lord: The 'Almsman true' is he
who treads his chosen path
up to Nirvāna, quit
of doubts, not troubling if
life closes or runs on,
—the man who greatly lived
and now hath slain rebirth.

6. Sabbattha upekhako satimā,
na so hiṃsati kañci sabbaloke,
tiṇṇo samaṇo anāvilo,
ussadā yassa na santi, “sorato” so.
7. Yass’ indriyāni bhāvitāni,
ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke;
nibbijjha imaṃ paraṃ ca lokam
kālaṃ kaṃkhati bhāvito, sa “danto’
8. Kappāni viceyya kevalāni,
saṃsāraṃ dubhayaṃ cutūpapātāṃ,
vigatarajaṃ ananganam visuddham,
pattam jātikkhayaṃ,—tam āhu “buddhan” ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavato bhāsitaṃ abhinanditvā anumoditvā attamano pamodito udaggo pītisomanassajāto Bhagavantaṃ uttarim pañham apucchī:—

9. Kimpattinaṃ āhu “brāhmaṇam”? (iti Sabhiyo) [518]
“samaṇam” kena? kathaṃ ca “nhātako” ti?
“nāgo” ti katham pavuccati?
—Putṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi.
10. Bāhetvā sabbapāpakāni, (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [519]
vimalo sādhusamāhito ñhitatto,
saṃsāraṃ aticca kevalī so
asito tādi pavuccate “brahmā”.
11. Samitāvi, pahāya puññapāpaṃ, [520]
virajo, ñatvā imaṃ paraṃ ca lokam,
jātimaraṇam upātivatto,
“samaṇo” tādi pavuccate tathattā.

[515]

The man of watchful poise
 who harms no living thing,
 the stainless anchorite
 —beyond life's Flood, devoid
 of arrogance,—is 'meek'.

He's 'schooled' who drills each thought
 —self-bred or from without—,
 whom scrutiny of this
 and other worlds has taught
 calmly to wait death's call.

'Enlightenment' is his
 whose piercing eye surveys
 all ages, and perceives
 how creatures come and go
 to tramp their dismal round;
 who—spotless, stainless, pure—
 has done with birth and death.

Thereon, in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant
 Sabhiya asked his next question:—

What stamps a 'Brahmin', Lord?
 —an 'Anchorite'?—a 'Saint'?
 What makes a 'Paragon'?
 Answer me, Lord, I pray.

The Lord: 'Brahmin' is he who—quit
 of evil, steadfast, rapt—
 has left rebirth behind
 for calm, consummate Peace.

True 'Anchorite' is he
 who, finding anchorage
 beyond works good or bad,
 by faultlessness has plumbed
 both this and other worlds,
 and vanquished birth and death.

[520]

12. Nīhāya sabbapāpakāni, [521]
 ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke,
 devamanussesu kappiyesu
 kappam n' eti, tam āhu "nhātako" ti.

13. Āgum na karoṭi kiñci loke, [522]
 sabbasamyoge visajja bandhanāni
 sabbattha na sajjati vimutto,
 —"nāgo" tādi pavuccate tathattā ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako—pe—Bhagavantaṃ uttarim pañham
 apucchi:—

14. Kaṃ "khettajinam" vadanti buddhā? (iti Sabhiyo) [523]
 "kusalam" kena? kathaṃ ca "paṇḍito" ti?
 "muni" nāma katham pavuccati?
 —Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi.

15. Khetṭāni viceyya kevalāni (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [524]
 divyaṃ mānusakāṃ ca brahmakhettam
 sabbakhetṭamūlabandhanā pamutto,
 "khettajino" tādi pavuccate tathattā.

16. Kosāni viceyya kevalāni [525]
 dibbam mānusakāṃ ca brahmakosam,
 sabbakosamūlabandhanā pamutto,
 "kusalo" tādi pavuccati tathattā.

17. Dubhayāni viceyya paṇḍarāni [526]
 ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca suddhipañño,
 kaṇhasukkam upātivatto,
 "paṇḍito" tādi pavuccate tathattā.

18. Asataṃ ca sataṃ ca ñatvā dhammaṃ [527]
 ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke,
 devamanussehi pūjiyo so,
 sangam jālam aticca,—so "munīti".

The 'Saint' has washed away
all evil, inly bred
or from without; no more
he'll enter time—like gods
and men, the brood of time.

[521]

He who lives guiltless here,
who, bursting bonds and ties,
hugs naught, but wins Release,
—is therefore 'Paragon'.

[522]

Hereupon, in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya asked his next question:—

Whom do th' enlighten'd term
'field's conqueror'? What makes
a 'skilled' man?—what a 'sage'?
and what proclaims the 'seer'?
Answer me, Lord, I pray.

[523]

The Lord: When thought on fields to grow
bliss—human or divine—
uproots all zest for fields,
a man has 'conquer'd fields'.

When thought on barns to store
bliss—human or divine—
uproots all zest for barns,
a man attains to 'skill'.

[525]

When thought on senses' range
(internal or without)
has left conviction clear
—above all hopes or fears—,
that makes a man a 'sage'.

[526]

A 'seer' is he who knows
all outlooks good or bad,
selfbred or from without;
whom gods and men revere;
who bursts all ties and snares.

[527]

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako—pe—Bhagavantam uttarim pañham apucchi:—

19. Kimpattinaṃ āhu “vedagum”? (iti Sabhiyo) [528]
 “Anuviditam” kena? kathaṃ ca “viriyavā” ti?
 “Ājāniyo” kin ti nāma hoti?
 —Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi.

20. Vedāni viceyya kevalāni (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [529]
 samanānam yāni p’ atthi brāhmaṇānam
 sabbavedanāsu vitarāgo
 sabbam vedam aticca,—“vedagū” so.

21. Anuvicca papañca-nāmarūpaṃ, [530]
 ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca rogamūlaṃ,
 sabbarogamūlabandhanā pamutto,
 “anuvidito” tādi pavuccate tathattā.

22. Virato idha sabbapāpakehi,
 nirayadukkhā aticca, viriyavāso,
 so “viriyavā” padhānavā
 dhīro tādi pavuccate tathattā.

23. Yass’ assu lūtāni bandhanāni [532]
 ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sangamūlaṃ,
 sabbasangamūlabandhanā pamutto,
 “ājāniyo” tādi pavuccate tathattā ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako—pe—Bhagavantam uttarim pañham apucchi:—

24. Kimpattinaṃ āhu “sottiyam” (iti Sabhiyo) [533]
 “ariyam” kena? Kathaṃ ca “caraṇavā” ti?
 “Paribbājako” kin ti nāma hoti?
 Puṭṭho me, Bhagavā, vyākaroḥi.

25. Sutvā sabbadhammam abhiññāya loka (Sabhiyāti Bhagavā) [534]
 sāvajjānavajjam yad atthi kiñci
 abhibbhum, akathamkathim, vimuttam,
 anigham, sabbadhi-m-āhu “sottiyam” ti.

Hereon, in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya asked his next question:—

What stamps 'th' adept in lore'? [528]
 What makes him 'come to know'?
 How gets he 'zeal'? And what
 is termed a 'scion', Lord?
 Answer me, Lord, I pray.

The Lord: He who surveying lore [529]
 (brahmins' and anchorites'),
 and, losing zest for things
 of sense, outgrows all lore,
 —'tis he is 'lore's adept'.

He who detects the curse [530]
 of 'personality'
 (disease's root!), and plucks
 out all that bound him fast,
 —'tis he has 'come to know'.

He who, eschewing wrong, [531]
 prevails o'er pains of hell,
 shews 'zeal' by battling on
 in staunch persistency.

He who snaps bonds within [532]
 and stubs all roots without,
 till he is free from roots
 and bonds,—a 'scion' is.

Hereon in gladness and joy at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya put his next question:—

What stamps man 'Erudite'? [533]
 What makes him 'Noble'?—What
 'Upright'?—What 'Anchorite'?
 Answer me, Lord, I pray.

The Lord: He who has learned and plumbed [534]
 all outlooks, till—beyond
 all praise and blame—doubts pass,
 and with Release comes calm,
 —he's wholly 'Erudite'.

26. Chetvā āsavāni, ālayāni [535]
vidvā, so na upeti gabbhaseyyam;
saññam tividham panujja pankam
kappan n' eti, tam āhu "ariyo" ti.
27. Yo idha caraṇesu pattipatto [536]
kusalo sabbadā ajāni Dhammam,
sabbattha na sajjati, vimutto,
paṭighā yassa na santi, "caraṇavā" so.
28. Dukkhavepakkaṃ yad atthi kammaṃ [537]
uddham adho ca tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe
paribbājayitvā pariññacārī
māyaṃ mānam atho pi lobhakodham
pariyantam akāsi nāmarūpaṃ,
tam "paribbājakam" āhu pattipattan ti.'

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavato bhāsitaṃ abhinanditvā anu-
moditvā attamano pamodito udaggo pītisomanassajāto utthāyāsanaṃ ekaṃsaṃ
uttarāsangaṃ karitvā yena Bhagavā ten' añjalim paṇāmetvā Bhagavantaṃ
sammukhā sārūppāhi gāthāhi abhiththavi:—

29. Yāni ca tīṇi yāni ca saṭṭhi [538]
samaṇappavādasitāni, bhūripaṇña,
saññakkhara-saññanissitāni
osaraṇāni vineyya oghatam' agā.
30. Antagū si pārāgū si dukkhassa! [539]
Arahā si! Khīṇāsavaṃ taṃ maññe!
Jutimā mutimā pahūtapañño,
dukkhass' antakara, atāresi maṃ!
31. Yaṃ me kankhitam aññāsi, [540]
vicikiccham maṃ atāresi, namo te!
Muni monapathesu pattipatta,
akhila Ādiccabandhu, sorato si!
32. Yā me kaṃkhā pure āsi, taṃ me vyākāsi, cakkhumā. [541]
Addhā Muni si Sambuddho; na 'tthi nīvaraṇā tava.
33. Upāyāsā ca te sabbe viddhastā vinaḷikātā; [542]
sītibhūto damappatto dhitimā saccanikkamo.
34. Tassa te Nāganāgassa, Mahāvīrassa, bhāsato [543]
sabbe devā anumodanti ubho Nārada-Pabbatā.

He who tracks Cankers down [535]
 and hacks them out, to know
 rebirth no more but sweep
 aside, as filth, all things
 of sense and banish Time,
 —'tis he is 'Noble' styled.

He who on earth walks sure, [536]
 with skill to grasp the Truth,
 —ensnared, repelled, by nought,
 but free,—'Upright' is he.

The pilgrim who discerns [537]
 what acts have Ills for fruit,
 and, comprehending, sloughs
 guile, pride of life, wants, wrath,
 and personality,
 —is perfect 'Anchorite'.

Hereon, in gladness at the Lord's words, the elated and jubilant Sabhiya rose up from his seat and, with his right shoulder bared, stretched forth his folded palms towards the Lord, as he addressed him to his face in stanzas fit:—

Great sage, who didst reject [538]
 the sense-based sophistries
 of three and sixty sects,
 thou soarest o'er life's gloom!

Ending, transcending, Ills, [539]
 Cankerless Arahāt,
 thy insight, light, and lore
 have brought me safe 'Across'!

For marking my distress, [540]
 for freeing me from doubt,
 I laud thee, sage benign,
 consummate master-mind,
 great Kinsman of the Sun!

The doubts I had are solved by thee, O Seer, [541]
 O All-Enlighten'd sage immaculate!

With ev'ry perturbation rooted up, [542]
 unfever'd, tranquil, strong in Truth art thou!

Great Victor! Paragon! Thy words rejoice [543]
 all gods, all Nārādās, all Pābbatās.

35. Namo te, purisājañña! Namo te, purisuttama! [544]
Sadevakasmim lokasmim na 'tthi te paṭipuggalo.
36. Tvaṃ Buddhō; tvaṃ Satthā; tvaṃ Mārābhibhū Muni; [545]
tvaṃ anusāye chetvā tiṇṇo tāres' imaṃ pajāṃ.
37. Upadhī te samatikkantā; āsavā te padālītā; [546]
siho 'si anupādāno pahinabbhayabheravo.
38. Puṇḍarīkaṃ yathā vaggu toye na upalippati, [547]
evaṃ puñña ca pāpe ca ubhaye tvaṃ na lippasi!
—Pāde, vīra, pasārehi. Sabhiyo vandati Satthuno ti.

Atha kho Sabhiyo paribbājako Bhagavato pādesu sirasā nipatitvā, Bhagavantaṃ etad avoca:—Abhikkantaṃ, bhante,—pe—dhammañ ca bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca. Labheyyāhaṃ, bhante, Bhagavato santike pabbajjaṃ, labheyyaṃ upasampadaṃ ti.

Yo kho, Sabhiya, aññatitthiyapubbo imasmim Dhammavinaye ākaṃkhati pabbajjaṃ ākaṃkhati upasampadaṃ, so cattaro māse parivasati, catunnaṃ māsānaṃ accayena āraddhacittā bhikkhū pabbājenti upasampādentī bhikkhubhāvāya. Api ca m' ettha puggalavarnattatā vidadā ti.

Sace, bhante, aññatitthiyapubbā imasmim Dhammavinaye ākaṃkhaṇṭā pabbajjaṃ ākaṃkhaṇṭā upasampadaṃ cattaro māse parivasanti, catunnaṃ māsānaṃ accayena āraddhacittā bhikkhū pabbājenti upasampādentī bhikkhubhāvāya,—ahaṃ cattāri vassāni parivasissāmi; catunnaṃ vassānaṃ accayena āraddhacittā bhikkhū pabbājentu upasampādentu bhikkhubhāvāya ti.

Alattha kho Sabhiyo Bhagavato santike pabbajjaṃ, alattha upasampadaṃ—pe—aññatāro kho pan' āyasmā Sabhiyo arahataṃ ahoṣi.

7. SELASUTTA

Evam me sutaṃ. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Ang-uttarāpesu cārikaṃ caramāno mahatā bhikkhusaṃghena saddhim aḍḍhatelasehi bhikkhusatehi yena Āpaṇaṃ nāma Anguttarāpānaṃ nigamo tad avasari. Assosi kho Keniyo jaṭilo:—Samaṇo khalu, bho, Gotamo Sakyaputto Sakyakulā pabbajito Anguttarāpesu cārikaṃ caramāno mahatā bhikkhusaṃghena saddhim aḍḍhatelasehi bhikkhusatehi Āpaṇaṃ anuppatto; taṃ kho pana bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ evaṃ kalyāṇo kittisaddo abbhuggato 'Iti pi so Bhagavā arahamā Sammāsambuddho vijjācaraṇasampanno sugato lokavidū anuttaro purisadammaśārathi satthā devamanussānaṃ Buddho Bhagavā; so imaṃ lokaṃ sadevakaṃ samārakaṃ

F. 544]	<i>Book 3, Sutta 6. Sabhiya's Questions</i>	133
	I hail thee noblest, foremost of mankind; nor earth nor heaven holds thy counterpart!	[544]
	Enlighten'd Master! Over Māra's hosts triumphant! Sage, who, wrong propensities uprooting, for thyself salvation found and taught mankind to find salvation too!	[545]
	Thou hast surmounted all that breeds rebirth and extirpated Canker-growths within! With naught to bind thee thrall to life, thou 'rt free as forest lion from all fears and dread.	[546]
	E'en as a lotus fair to water gives no lodgment, thou by good and bad alike art unaffected. Stretch thou forth thy feet, O Victor. I salute my Master's feet!	[547]

Hereon, Sabhiya the Wanderer, bowing his head in homage at the Lord's feet, said:—It is wonderful, sir (Śc., as at p. 25) confirmation as an Almsman with the Lord!

'Sabhiya, a former sectary of another school who seeks admission and confirmation in this Doctrine and Rule, first resides for four months, at the close of which period proved Almsmen admit and confirm him as an Almsman. I recognize a distinction between persons in this case.'

'If, sir, former sectaries of other schools have first to undergo a four months' probation before enrolment here, then I will reside for four years, at the close of which period let proved Almsmen admit and confirm me as an Almsman.'

So Sabhiya the Wanderer received admission and confirmation as an Almsman at the hands of the Lord. Nor was it long thereafter before the reverend Sabhiya, dwelling alone and aloof (Śc., as at p. 25) was numbered among the Arahats.

Sutta 7. The Superman

Thus have I heard. Once when the Lord was on an alms-pilgrimage in the Anga country north of the Ganges, with a great train of Almsmen, numbering twelve hundred and fifty, he sojourned in the Anga township of Āpaṇa across the river.

It came to the ears of Keniya of the matted-hair that the anchorite Gotama, a Sakyan who had gone forth from home to homelessness as a Pilgrim, was reported to have arrived at Āpaṇa with this great train in the course of an alms-pilgrimage. Such, according to report, was the high repute noised

sabrahmakarāṃ sassamaṇabrāhmaṇiṃ pajamā sadevamanussarāṃ sayamā abhiññā sacchikatvā pavedeti; so Dhammarāṃ deseti ādikalyāṇarāṃ majjhe kalyāṇarāṃ pariyoṣānakalyāṇarāṃ sāttham savyañjanarāṃ; kevalaparipuṇṇarāṃ parisuddharāṃ brahmacariyarāṃ pakāseti; sādhu kho pana tathārūpānarāṃ arahatarāṃ dassanarāṃ hotīti’.

Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo yena Bhagavā ten’ upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodi, sammodaniyam katharā sārāṇiyarāṃ vītisaṅgā ekamantarāṃ nisīdi. Ekamantarāṃ nisinnarāṃ kho Keniyarāṃ jaṭilarāṃ Bhagavā dhammiyā kathāya sandassesī samādapesi samuttejesī sampahaṃsesī. Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavatā dhammiyā kathāya sandassito samādapito samuttejito sampahaṃsito Bhagavantarāṃ etad avoca:—Adhivāsetu me bhavarāṃ Gotamo svātānāya bhattarāṃ saddhiṃ bhikkhusaṃghenāti. Evaṃ vutte, Bhagavā Keniyarāṃ jaṭilarāṃ etad avoca: Mahā kho, Keniya, bhikkhusaṃgho, aḍḍhatelaṣāṇi bhikkhusatāni; tvaṃ ca kho brāhmaṇesu abhippasanno ti. Dutiyam pi kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavantarāṃ etad avoca: Kiñcāpi, bho Gotama, mahā bhikkhusaṃgho aḍḍhatelaṣāṇi bhikkhusatāni ahaṃ ca brāhmaṇesu abhippasanno, adhivāsetu me bhavarāṃ Gotamo . . . bhikkhusaṃghenāti. Dutiyam pi kho Bhagavā Keniyarāṃ jaṭilarāṃ etad avoca: Mahā kho . . . abhippasanno ti. Tatiyam pi kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavantarāṃ etad avoca: Kiñcāpi, bho Gotama, . . . adhivāsetv-eva me bhavarāṃ Gotamo . . . bhikkhusaṃghenāti.

Adhivāsesī Bhagavā tuṇhībhaveṇa.

Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo, Bhagavato adhivāsanaṃ viditvā, utthāyāsanaṃ yena sako assamo ten’ upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā mittāmacce ñātisālohite āmantesi:—Suṇantu me bhonto mittāmaccā ñātisālohitā. Samaṇo me Gotamo nimantito svātānāya bhattarāṃ saddhiṃ bhikkhusaṃghena. Yena me kāya-veyyāvāṭikarāṃ kareyyāthāti.

Evaṃ bho ti kho Keniyassa jaṭilassa mittāmaccā ñātisālohitā Keniyassa jaṭilassa paṭissutvā app-ekacce uddhanāni khaṇanti, app-ekacce kaṭṭhāni phālenti, app-ekacce bhājanāni dhovanti, app-ekacce udakamaṇikarāṃ patiṭṭhāpentī, app-ekacce āsanāni paññāpentī; Keniyo pana jaṭilo sāmarā yeva maṇḍalamālārāṃ paṭiyādeti.

Tena kho pana samayena Selo brāhmaṇo Āpaṇe paṭivasati, tiṇṇam vedānarāṃ pārāgū, sanighaṇḍukeṭubhānarāṃ sākkharappabhedānarāṃ; itihāsapāṇicamānarāṃ padako veyyākaraṇo; lokāyatamahāpurisalakkaṇesu anavayo; tiṇi māṇavakasatāni mante vāceti. Tena kho pana samayena Keniyo jaṭilo Sele brāhmaṇe abhippasanno hoti.

Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo tihi māṇavakasatehi parivuto janghāvihārāṃ anucankamamāno anuvicaramāno yena Keniyassa jaṭilassa assamo ten’ upasaṃkami. Addasā kho Selo brāhmaṇo Keniyassamiye jaṭile app-ekacce uddhanāni khaṇante—pe—app-ekacce āsanāni paññāpente, Keniyarāṃ pana jaṭilarāṃ sāmarā yeva maṇḍalamālārāṃ paṭiyādentarāṃ; disvāna Keniyarāṃ jaṭilarāṃ etad avoca: Kin nu kho bhoto Keniyassa āvāho vā bhavissati, vivāho vā bhavissati,

abroad concerning this Gotama that he was said to be:—‘The Lord, Arahāt All-Enlightened, walking by knowledge, blessed, understanding all worlds, the matchless tamer of the human heart, teacher of gods and men, the Lord Buddha; this universe—with its gods, its Māras, its Brahmās, its anchorites and brahmins, embracing all deities and mankind—all this he has discerned and realized for himself and makes known to others; he preaches a Doctrine which is so fair in its outset, its middle, and its close, with both text and import; he propounds a higher life that is wholly complete and pure;—it is good to go and visit men of worth like him.’

So Keniya came to the Lord and, seating himself after greetings, was by the Lord instructed, roused, fired, and cheered onwards with a doctrinal discourse, at the close of which Keniya invited the Lord, with his Community, to take to-morrow’s meal with him. Said the Lord:—There are no less than twelve hundred and fifty Almsmen with me;—and you are an adherent of the brahmins, Keniya!

A second time did Keniya tender his invitation, saying this made no difference; and a second time did he receive the same answer. But when the invitation was repeated for the third time, with the words: ‘You have only to assent’, the Lord, by his silence, accepted it. Then Keniya got up and went off to his own hermitage, where he told his friends and kinsfolk who was coming, and asked them to help. Readily enough, they set to work, some digging earth-ovens, some splitting firewood, some scouring pans, and others setting out water-jars, and placing seats ready,—while Keniya with his own hands prepared a round pavilion.

Now at that time there was living at Āpaṇa the brahmin Sela, who was versed in all three Vedas, was accomplished in ritual with the glosses thereon, in phonetics, and in etymology, as also in legends, which he could recite and explain; and he was not unversed in the world’s duration and in the signs that mark a Superman; he had three hundred young brahmins to whom he taught the runes. At this time, moreover, Keniya of the matted-hair was an adherent of this brahmin Sela.

Accompanied by his three hundred pupils, the brahmin came in the course of a stroll to Keniya’s hermitage and saw all Keniya’s adherents busy with their several tasks, while Keniya with his own hands was preparing a round pavilion. At the sight, the brahmin said to Keniya:—What is all this? Is it a wedding-feast for a bridegroom or for a bride? Or is there a great oblation afoot? Or have you invited to a repast to-morrow Seniya Bimbisāra, king of Magadha, with all his host?

Said Keniya: It is no wedding-feast, Sela; nor is the king coming with all

mahāyañño vā paccupaṭṭhito, rājā vā Māgadho, Seniyo Bimbisāro, nimantito svātanāya saddhiṃ balakāyenāti?

Na me, Sela, āvāho bhavissati, na pi vivāho bhavissati, na pi rājā Māgadho, Seniyo Bimbisāro, nimantito svātanāya saddhiṃ balakāyena. Api ca kho me mahāyañño paccupaṭṭhito atthi. Samaṇo Gotamo Sakyaputto Sakyakulā pabbajito Anguttarāpesu cārikaṃ caramāno mahatā bhikkhusaṃghena saddhiṃ adḍhatejasehi bhikkhusatehi Āpaṇaṃ anuppatto. Taṃ kho pana bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ—pe—Buddho Bhagavā ti;—so me nimantito svātanāya saddhiṃ bhikkhusaṃghenāti.

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Keniya, vadesi?

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Sela, vadāmi.

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Keniya, vadesi?

‘Buddho’ ti, bho Sela, vadāmi.

Atha kho Selassa brāhmaṇassa etad ahoṣi:—Ghoso pi kho eso dullabho lokasmīṃ yadidaṃ ‘Buddho’ ti. Āgatāni kho pana asmākaṃ mantesu dvattiṃsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni, yehi samannāgatassa Mahāpurisassa dve va gatiyo bhavanti, anañña. Sace agāraṃ ajjhāvasati, rājā hoti cakkavattī dhammiko dhammarājā cāturato vijitāvī janapadatthāvariyaṇṇo satta-ratanasamannāgato; tass’ imāni satta ratanāni bhavanti, seyyathidaṃ: cakkaratanam, hatthiratanam, assaratanam, maṇiratanam, itthiratanam, gahapati-ratanam, pariṇāyakaratanam eva sattamaṃ; parosahassaṃ kho pan’ assa puttā bhavanti—sūrā virangarūpā parasenappamaddanā. So imaṃ paṭhavirūpā sāgara-pariyantaṃ, adaṇḍena asatthena, dhammena abhivijjiya ajjhāvasati. Sace kho paṇāgarasmā anagāriyaṃ pabbajati, araham hoti Sammāsambuddho loke vivattacchaddo.—Kahaṃ pana, bho Keniya, etarahi so bhavaṃ Gotamo viharati, araham Sammāsambuddho ti?

Evaṃ vutte, Keniyo jaṭilo dakkhiṇaṃ bāhaṃ paggaheṭvā Selaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ etad avoca: Yen’ esā, bho Sela, nilavanarājī ti.

Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo tihi māṇavakasatehi saddhiṃ yena Bhagavā ten’ upasaṃkami. Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo te māṇavake āmantesi:—Appasaddā bhonto āgacchantu pade padaṃ nikkhipantā,—durāsada hi te Bhagavanto, sihā va ekacarā; yadā cāhaṃ, bho, samaṇena Gotamena saddhiṃ manteyyaṃ, mā me bhonto antarantarākathaṃ opāsetha; kathāpariyosānaṃ me bhavanto āgamentūti. Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo yena Bhagavā ten’ upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhiṃ sammodi, sammodanīyaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇīyaṃ vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinnā kho Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato kāye dvattiṃsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni samānesi. Addasā kho Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato kāye dvattiṃsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni yebhuyyena ṭhapetvā dve;—dvīsu Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇesu kaṃkhati vicikicchati nādhimuccati na sampasīdati,—kosohite ca vatthaguyhe pahūtajivhatāya ca.

Atha kho Bhagavato etad ahoṣi: Passati kho me ayaṃ Selo brāhmaṇo dvattiṃsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇāni yebhuyyena ṭhapetvā dve; dvīsu Mahā-

his host; but I have got a great oblation afoot. For the anchorite Gotama, who left his Sakyan home to be a Pilgrim, has arrived at Āpaṇa in the course of an alms-pilgrimage, with twelve hundred and fifty Almsmen in his train. Now, such, according to report, is the high repute noised abroad concerning this Gotama that he is said to be . . . (*Sc.*, as p. 135) . . . the Lord Buddha. He it is who has been invited for to-morrow, he and his Community.

Do you say 'Buddha', Keniya?

Yes, I do, Sela.

Do you really say 'Buddha'?

Yes, I do, Sela.

Thought the brahmin to himself:—Rarely indeed is the title of 'Buddha' heard in the world. In our runes there have been handed down the two and thirty marks of a Superman, for whom, if he bears those marks, there awaits one of two careers and no third. Should he live a home life, he becomes Emperor over the four quarters of the earth, righteous in himself and ruling righteously, victorious abroad, enforcing law and order at home, and possessing the Seven Jewels, to wit,—wheel, elephant, charger, gem, queen-consort, treasurer, and counsellor. More than a thousand sons has he, heroes of might who trample down the enemy's host before them. Over all this earth to the shores of ocean he extends his sway by sheer righteousness alone and not by cudgel or sword. But, if, instead, he goes forth from home to homelessness as a Pilgrim, he becomes the Arahāt All-Enlightened who lifts the veil from the world.

Said Sela aloud:—Where, Keniya, is Gotama now staying, this Arahāt All-Enlightened?

In answer, Keniya stretched out his right arm and said:—Yonder, Sela, in that stretch of dark trees.

Then the brahmin proceeded to the Lord, attended by his three hundred young brahmins, to whom he gave the following instructions:—Move forward in silence, noiselessly in one another's footsteps; for, these Lords are hard of access, like solitary lions. And, while I am conferring with the anchorite Gotama, keep silent till my talk with him is over, and do not interrupt.

Arrived in the Lord's presence, the brahmin, seating himself after courteous greetings, scanned the Lord's body for the two and thirty marks of a Superman; and in time observed them all save two, namely the privities hidden in a sheath and the big tongue, concerning which two he was in doubt and perplexity, not feeling certain or sure.

Realizing precisely the brahmin's uncertainty of mind, the Lord put forth such a manifestation of psychic power that Sela could see the Lord's privities

purisa-lakkhaṇesu kaṁkhati vicikicchati nādhimuccati na sampasīdati, koso-hite ca vatthaguyhe pahūtajivhatāya cāti. Atha kho Bhagavā tathārūpaṁ iddhābhisamkhāraṁ abhisamkhāsi yathā addasa Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavato kosohitaṁ vatthaguyhaṁ. Atha kho Bhagavā jivhaṁ ninnāmetvā ubho pi kaṇṇasotāni anumasi paṭimasi, ubho pi nāsikasotāni anumasi paṭimasi, kevalam pi nalāṭamaṇḍalaṁ jivhāya chādesi. Atha kho Selassa brāhmaṇassa etad ahoṣi: Samannāgato kho samaṇo Gotamo dvattiṁsa Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇehi paripuṇṇehi, no aparipuṇṇehi. No ca kho naṁ jānāmi ‘Buddho vā no vā’. Sutaṁ kho pana mētaṁ brāhmaṇānaṁ vuddhānaṁ mahallakānaṁ ācariyapācariyānaṁ bhāsamaṇānaṁ: ‘Ye te bhavanti arahanto Sammāsa-buddhā, te sake vaṇṇe bhaññamāne attānaṁ pātūkarontīti; yannūnāhaṁ samaṇaṁ Gotamaṁ sammukhā sārūppāhi gāthāhi abhithhaveyyan ti?’ Atha kho Selo brāhmaṇo Bhagavantaṁ sammukhā sārūppāhi gāthāhi abhithhavi:—

1. Paripuṇṇakāyo suruci sujāto cārudassano [548]
suvaṇṇavaṇṇo ‘si, Bhagavā, susukkadāṭho ‘si, viriyavā.
2. Narassa hi sujātassa ye bhavanti viyañjanā [549]
sabbe te tava kāyasmim Mahāpurisa-lakkhaṇā.
3. Pasannanetto, sumukho, brahā, uju, patāpavā, [550]
majjhe samaṇasaṁghassa, ādicco va, virocasi
4. kalyāṇadassano bhikkhu, kañcanasannibhattaco.
Kin te samaṇabhāvena evaṁ uttamavaṇṇino?
5. Rājā arahasi bhavitum cakkavatti rathesabho,
cāturanto vijitāvī Jambusaṇḍassa issaro.
6. Khattiyā bhojarājāno anuyuttā bhavantu te! [553]
rājābhirājā, manujindo, rajjaṁ karehi, Gotama!
7. Rājāham asmi, Selāti, dhammarājā anuttaro, [554]
dhammena cakkam vattemi, cakkam appativattiyaṁ.
8. Sambuddho paṭijānāsi ‘dhammarājā anuttaro [555]
dhammena cakkam vattemi’ iti bhāsasi, Gotama.
9. Ko nu senāpatī bhoto sāvako Satthu-d-anvayo? [556]
Ko te imaṁ anuvatteti dhammacakkaṁ pavattitaṁ?

within their sheath; and then, putting forth his tongue, he passed it up and down over the orifices of both ears and of both nostrils, and covered with it the whole expanse of his forehead.

Quite sure now about the presence of the two and thirty marks, Sela still did not know whether he possessed Enlightenment or not. But he remembered hearing from old and aged brahmins, teachers of teachers, that those who become Arahats All-Enlightened, reveal themselves when their praises are sung in their presence; and so he made up his mind to extol the Lord to his face in the following stanzas of eulogy:—

Perfect in body, goodly, Lord, art thou,
well-grown, well-liking, golden-hued, with teeth
agleam with lustre; vigour fills thy frame;

thy body's full perfection manifests [549]
each single sign that marks a Superman.

Clear-eyed and handsome, tall, upright, art thou, [550]
effulgent as a sun among thy train,

—so debonair, so golden-hued! Why waste [551]
thy beauty's prime as homeless anchorite?

As world-wide monarch thou should'st ride in state; [552]
and Ind from sea to sea should own thy sway.

Proud princes should thy village-headmen be! [553]
Rule thou mankind as sov'ran king of kings.

The Lord: Know, Sela, know that king indeed am I, [554]
—the peerless king of utter righteousness.
In righteousness my sov'ran Wheel of Truth
I roll, that nevermore shall backwards turn.

Sela: If All-Enlighten'd thou dost claim to be, [555]
the peerless king of utter righteousness,
rolling in righteousness thy sov'ran Wheel,

—who ranks as Captain, next to thee, to keep [556]
thy Wheel still rolling onward in its course?

10. Mayā pavattitaṃ cakkam (Selāti Bhagavā) [557]
 dhammacakkam anuttaram
 Sāriputto anuvatteti anujāto Tathāgataṃ.
11. Abhiññeeyam abhiññātam, bhāvetabbaṃ ca bhāvitam, [558]
 pahātabbam pahīnam me. Tasmā Buddho 'smi, brāhmaṇa.
12. Vinayassu mayi kamkham; adhimuccassu, brāhmaṇa; [559]
 dullabham dassanam hoti Sambuddhānam abhiñhaso.
13. Yesam vo dullabho loke pātubhāvo abhiñhaso, [560]
 so 'ham, brāhmaṇa, Sambuddho, sallakatto anuttaro.
14. Brahmabhūto atitulo Mārasenappamaddāno [561]
 sabbāmitte vasikatvā modāmi akutobhayo.
15. 'Imam, bhonto, nisāmetha, yathā bhāsati cakkhumā, [562]
 sallakatto, mahāvīro,—siho va nadati vane.
16. Brahmabhūtam atitulaṃ Mārasenappamaddanam [563]
 ko disvā na-ppasīdeyya,—api kaṇhābhijātiko?
17. Yo maṃ icchati anvetu; yo vā n' icchati, gacchatu. [564]
 Idhāham pabbajissāmi varapaññassa santike.'
18. 'Etaṃ ce ruccati bhoto Sammāsambuddhasāsanam, [565]
 mayam pi pabbajissāma varapaññassa santike.'
19. 'Brāhmaṇa tisatā ime yācanti pañjalikatā: [566]
 brahmacariyam carissāma, Bhagavā, tava santike.'
20. 'Svākkhātam brahmacariyam (Selāti Bhagavā) [567]
 sandiṭṭhikam akālikam
 yatha amoghā pabbajjā appamattassa sikkhato' ti.

Alattha kho Selo brāhmaṇo sapaṇiso Bhagavato santike pabbajjam, alattha upasampadam.

Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo tassā rattiyā accayena sake assame paṇītaṃ khādaniyam bhojaniyam paṭiyādāpetva Bhagavato kālaṃ ārocāpesi: Kālo, bho Gotama; niṭṭhitaṃ bhattan ti. Atha kho Bhagavā pubbaṇhasamayam nivāsetvā pattacivaram ādāya yena Keniyassa jaṭilassa assamo ten' upasamkamī, upasamkamitvā paññatte āsane nisīdi saddhiṃ bhikkhusamghena. Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo Buddhapamukhaṃ bhikkhusamghaṃ paṇītaṃ khādaniyena

The Lord: 'Tis Sāriputta, whom I bred and reared, [557]
who keeps my Wheel still rolling on its course.

What mind should know, I know; I am what man [558]
should be, and quit of all man should renounce;
—'tis thus that, brahmin, Buddhahood is mine.

All doubts of me dispel; place trust in me. [559]
—To see a Buddha is a boon most rare;

but that rare boon thou may'st behold in me, [560]
who All-Enlighten'd am, of Healers chief,

perfect and peerless, routing Māra's hosts, [561]
all foes subduing;—fear clouds not my bliss.

Sela: Sirs, mark him! Mark how lion-like he speaks, [562]
—this Seer, this Healer, this great Conqueror.

Lives there a man so base as not to trust [563]
at sight fell Māra's matchless conqueror?

Let who will, follow; let the rest depart; [564]
—be mine the Pilgrimage with Wisdom's Lord!

Sela's pupils: If you the All-Enlighten'd take as guide, [565]
ours too be Pilgrimage with Wisdom's Lord.

Sela: Three hundred brahmins, Lord, with outstretched hands [566]
here pray to lead the higher life with thee.

The Lord: That life, so fully preached, is here and now, [567]
yet outside Time. No barren Pilgrimage
is his who lives that life persistently.

So the brahmin Sela and all his following were admitted to the Lord's Community, and confirmed therein.

Now, when night passed away, an excellent meal was prepared in his hermitage by Keniya, who sent to tell the Lord when everything was ready. Then the Lord, early that morning, duly robed and bowl in hand, proceeded to Keniya's hermitage and there sat down on the seat placed for him, accompanied by his train of Almsmen. With his own hands Keniya served the Lord and his Almsmen with that excellent meal without stint till all had

bhojaniyena sahatthā santappesi sampavāresi. Atha kho Keniyo jaṭilo Bhagavantam bhuttāvim onītapattapāṇim upagantvā aññataram nīcam āsanam gahetvā ekamantam nisidi. Ekamantam nisinnam kho Keniyam jaṭilam Bhagavā imāhi gāthāhi anumodi:—

21. Aggihuttamukhā yaññā; Sāvittī chandaso mukham; [568]
rājā mukham manussānam; nadīnam sāgaro mukham;

22. nakkhattānam mukham cando; ādicco tapatam mukham; [569]
—puññam ākammamānānam saṃgho ve yajatam mukham ti.

Atha kho Bhagavā Keniyam jaṭilam imāhi gāthāhi anumoditvā, uṭṭhāyāsanaṃ pakkāmi.

Atha kho āyasmā Selo sapaṇiso, eko vūpakatṭho appamatto ātāpī pahitatto viharanto, nacirass'eva . . . [Cf. as page 24] . . . abbhāññāsi. Aññataro ca kho paṇ' āyasmā Selo sapaṇiso arahatam ahoṣi.

Atha kho āyasmā Selo sapaṇiso yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā ekaṃsam cīvaram katvā yena Bhagavā ten' añjalim paṇāmetvā Bhagavantam gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:

23. Yaṃ taṃ saraṇam āgamha ito aṭṭhami, cakkhumā, [570]
sattarattena Bhagavā dant' amha tava Sāsane.

24. Tvaṃ Buddho; tvaṃ Satthā; tvaṃ Mārābhibhū Muni; [571]
tvaṃ anusaye chetvā tiṇṇo tāres' imam pajam.

25. Upadhī te samatikkantā; āsavā te padālītā; [572]
siho 'si anupādāno pahīnabhayabheravo.

26. Bhikkhavo tisatā ime tiṭṭhanti pañjalikatā: [573]
—Pāde, vīra, pasārehi, Nāgā vandantu Satthuno ti.

had their fill. When the Lord had eaten and had removed his hands from his alms-bowl, Keniya went to him and, taking a low seat, sat down to one side, and, so seated, was thanked by the Lord in these stanzas :—

In largesse, fire-oblations take first rank; [568]
 of Vedic metres Sāvitrī is first;
 the king ranks first 'mong men, the sea 'mong streams;
 the moon ranks first among the lamps of night; [569]
 and first of luminaries ranks the sun.
 —For those who merit seek by charities,
 gifts to the Order profit most of all.

Having thanked Keniya of the matted-hair in these stanzas, the Lord arose and departed.

Dwelling alone and aloof, strenuous, ardent, and purged of Self, the reverend Sela, with his following, was not long before he won the prize in quest of which young men go forth from home to homelessness as Pilgrims, that prize of prizes which crowns the higher life;—even this did he think out for himself, realize, and attain, and in this did he dwell here and now, convinced that for him rebirth was no more, that he had lived the highest life, that his task was done, and that now there was nothing left of what he once had been. And the reverend Sela, with his following, was numbered among the Arahats.

Then he came with his following to the Lord, and, with his right shoulder respectfully bared and with his folded palms outstretched, addressed the Lord in these stanzas :—

We who a week ago sought refuge, seer, [570]
 with thee, re-moulded by thy Doctrine come.
 Enlighten'd Master, Sage, o'er Māra's hosts [571]
 triumphant! Thou who, wrong propensities
 uprooting, for thyself salvation found
 and taught mankind to find salvation too!
 Thou hast surmounted all that breeds rebirth, [572]
 and extirpated Canker-growths within.
 With naught to bind thee thrall to life, thou'rt free
 as forest lion from all fears or dread.
 Three hundred Almsmen, Lord, with outstretched hands [573]
 pray thee, great Victor, forth to stretch thy feet
 that these, thy saints, may bow before them here!

(*Note.*—This Sutta recurs verbatim as Sutta No. 92 of the Majjhima Nikāya. Cf. also Vin. i. 245.)

8. SALLASUTTA

1. Animittam anaññātaṃ maccānaṃ idha jīvitāṃ [574]
kasiraṇi ca parittaṇi ca, taṇi ca dukkhena saṃyutaṇi.
2. Na hi so upakkamo hoti yena jātā na miyyare; [575]
jaram pi patvā maraṇaṃ; evaṃdhammā hi pāṇino.
3. Phalānaṃ iva pakkānaṃ pāto papatato bhayaṃ, [576]
evaṃ jātānaṃ maccānaṃ niccaṃ maraṇato bhayaṃ.
4. Yathā pi kumbhakārassa katā mattikabhājanā [577]
sabbe bhedanapariyantā, evaṃ maccāna' jīvitāṃ.
5. Daharā ca mahantā ca, ye bālā ye ca paṇḍitā, [578]
sabbe maccuvasaṃ yanti, sabbe maccuparāyana.
6. Tesāṃ maccuparetānaṃ gacchataṃ paralokato [579]
na pitā tāyate puttāṃ, ñāti vā pana ñātake.
7. Pekkhataṃ yeva ñātīnaṃ passa lālapataṃ puthu [580]
ekameko va maccānaṃ, go vajjho viya niyyati.
8. Evam abbhāhato loko maccunā ca jarāya ca; [581]
—tasmā dhīrā na socanti viditvā lokapariyāyaṃ.
9. Yassa maggaṃ na jānāsi, āgatassa gatassa vā, [582]
ubho ante asampassaṃ niratthaṃ paridevasi.
10. Paridevayamāno ce kañcid atthaṃ udabbahe [583]
sammūlho hiraṃsam attānaṃ, kayira c'enaṃ vicakkhaṇo.
11. Na hi ruṇṇena sokena santiṃ pappoti cetaso, [584]
bhiyy' ass' uppajjate dukkhaṃ, sarīraṃ upahaññati,
12. Kiso vivaṇṇo bhavati hiraṃsam attānaṃ attanā; [585]
na tena petā pāleni; niratthā paridevanā.
13. Sokaṃ appajahaṃ jantu bhiyyo dukkhaṃ nigacchati, [586]
anutthunanto kālakataṃ sokassa vasam anvagū.
14. Aññe pi passa gamine yathākammūpage nare [587]
maccuno vasam āgamma, phandante v' idha pāṇine.
15. Yena yena hi maññanti, tato taṃ hoti aññathā; [588]
—etādiso vinābhāvo; passa lokassa pariyāyaṃ.
16. Api ce vassasataṃ jīve, bhiyyo vā pana, māṇavo [589]
ñātisaṃghā vinā hoti; jahāti idha jīvitāṃ.
17. Tasmā arahato sutvā vineyya paridevitaṃ, [590]
petāṃ kālakataṃ disvā: 'na so labbhā mayā' iti.

Sutta 8. The Pangs of Grief

- Men cannot calculate, men cannot gauge, [574]
 this life's brief troublous span, by woes beset.
- By no device can what is born not die, [575]
 or length of days annul life's primal law.
- Like ripen'd fruits which threaten soon to drop, [576]
 the constant threat of death dogs man from birth.
- As ev'ry earthen jar the potter shapes [577]
 will broken be, so shows the life of man.
- Grown men and younglings, wise and simple,—all [578]
 are thralls of death, all death's predestin'd prey.
- When they in death depart, no sire can save [579]
 his son, nor kith save kin, from passing hence.
- Mark how—while kin stand round with loud laments— [580]
 like kine to slaughter, men are hauled away.
- Since death and sure decay assail the world, [581]
 the wise, who know its laws, forbear to grieve.
- Ye vainly weep, ye vainly wail, your dead, [582]
 whose 'Whence' and 'Whither' both elude your ken.
- If wailing eased the mourner's self-made pangs, [583]
 then, and then only, let the wise wail too.
- No; peace of mind comes not by grief and tears, [584]
 —which do but add to pain and bring men low.
- Though self-sought pangs leave mourners pale and wan, [585]
 they succour not the dead;—laments are vain.
- By hugging sorrow man to greater pain [586]
 proceeds; his mourning leaves him sorrow's slave.
- Mark, too, how others, when their hour has come [587]
 to dree their mortal weird, in death's grip writhe.
- Whate'er men plan, things turn out otherwise; [588]
 and so with human loss;—'tis nature's way.
- What though life last a hundred years,—or more! [589]
 —Bereft of kin, man yields his life at last.
- Therefore, give ear to saints;—weep not; reflect, [590]
 at sight of death, thou can'st not 'bring him back'.

18. Yathā saraṇaṃ ādittaṃ vārinā parinibbaye, [591]
 evaṃ pi dhīro sappañño paṇḍito kusalo naro
 khippam uppatitaṃ sokaṃ, vāto tūlaṃ va, dhammasaye
19. paridevaṃ pajappaṇ ca domanassaṇ ca attano. [592]
 Attano sukham esāno abbahe sallam attano.
20. Abbūlhasallo asito santim pappuyya cetaso [593]
 sabbasokaṃ atikkanto asoko hoti nibbuto.

9. VĀSEṬṬHASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Icchānaṃkale viharati Icchānaṃkalavanasaṇḍe. Tena kho pana samayena sambahulā abhiññātā abhiññātā brāhmaṇamahāsālā Icchānaṃkale paṭivasanti, seyyathīdam: Caṃkī brāhmaṇo, Tārukkho brāhmaṇo, Pokkharasāti brāhmaṇo, Jāṇussoṇi brāhmaṇo, Todeyya-brāhmaṇo, aññe ca abhiññātā abhiññātā brāhmaṇamahāsālā.

Atha kho Vāseṭṭha-Bhāradvājānaṃ māṇavaṇāṃ jaṅghāvihāraṃ anucaṃkamamānānaṃ anuvicaramānānaṃ ayaṃ antarākathā udapādi:—Kathaṃ, bho, brāhmaṇo hotīti? Bhāradvājo māṇavo evaṃ āha:—Yato kho, bho ubhato sujāto hoti mātito ca pitito ca saṃsuddhagahaṇiko yāva sattamā pitāmahayugā, akkhitto anupakkuṭṭho jātivādena, ettāvatā kho, bho, brāhmaṇo hotīti. Vāseṭṭho māṇavo evaṃ āha:—Yato kho, bho, silavā ca hoti vatasampanno ca, ettāvatā kho, bho, brāhmaṇo hotīti. N' eva kho asakkhi Bhāradvājo māṇavo Vāseṭṭhaṃ māṇavaṃ saññāpetum, na pana asakkhi Vāseṭṭho māṇavo Bhāradvājaṃ māṇavaṃ saññāpetum. Atha kho Vāseṭṭho māṇavo Bhāradvājaṃ māṇavaṃ āmantesi: Ayaṃ kho, Bhāradvāja, samaṇo Gotamo Sakyaputto Sakyakulā pabbajito Icchānaṃkale viharati Icchānaṃkalavanasaṇḍe. Taṃ kho pana bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ evaṃ-kalyāṇo kittisaddo abbhuggato—pe—Buddho Bhagavā ti. Āyāma, bho Bhāradvāja, yena samaṇo Gotamo ten' upasaṃkamissāma, upasaṃkamitvā samaṇaṃ Gotamaṃ etam atthaṃ pucchissāma; yathā no samaṇo Gotamo vyākarissati, tathā naṃ dhāressāmāti. Evaṃ bho ti kho Bhāradvājo māṇavo Vāseṭṭhassa māṇavassa paccassosi.

Atha kho Vāseṭṭha-Bhāradvājā māṇavā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkamimsu, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavatā saddhim sammodimsu, sammodaniyaṃ kathaṃ sārāṇiyaṃ vītisāretvā ekamantaṃ nisīdimsu. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Vāseṭṭho māṇavo Bhagavantaṃ gāthāhi ajjhabhāsi:—

1. Anuññāta-patiññātā tevijjā mayam asm' ubho, [594]
 —ahaṃ Pokkharasātissa, Tārukkhassāyaṃ māṇavo.
2. Tevijjānaṃ yad akkhātāṃ, tatra kevalino 'smase, [595]
 padak' asma veyyākaraṇā jappe ācariyasādisā.

As with their house on fire, men quench the flames [591]
 with water, let the stedfast sage be quick
 (as wind wafts cotton-down) to banish grief,

wails, cravings, pangs. For his own weal, let him [592]
 pluck out the shafts he plants in his own breast.

Those shafts pluck'd out, at ease, with heart at rest, [593]
 he grieves not, but, o'ercoming grief, finds Peace.

Sutta 9. What is a Brahmin?

Thus have I heard. Once when the Lord was staying at Icchānankala, in the forests there, a large number of very well-known and wealthy brahmins were also at Icchānankala,—such as Cankī, Tārukkha, Pokkharasāti, Jāpussoni, and Todeyya, with other very well-known and wealthy brahmins.

Now, as the young brahmins Vāseṭṭha and Bhāradvāja were walking and strolling up and down, they fell to discussing what makes a brahmin.

Bhāradvāja maintained that what made a brahmin was pure descent on both sides right back for seven successive generations of forbears, with no break or blemish in his lineage; whereas Vāseṭṭha contended that it was virtue and moral conduct which made a brahmin.

As neither could convince the other, Vāseṭṭha proposed, and Bhāradvāja agreed, to refer the matter to 'the anchorite Gotama', who was now staying in the forests of Icchānankala, and of whom the high repute noised abroad was that he was said to be:—'The Lord, Arahat All-Enlightened . . . (S̥c., as at p. 135) . . . the Lord Buddha.' Let us go to the anchorite Gotama, my good Bhāradvāja, said Vāseṭṭha; and, when we have found him, let us lay the matter before him and accept whatever he shall decide.

So be it, replied Bhāradvāja.

So together the two young brahmins went to the Lord, and, when they were seated after courteous greetings, Vāseṭṭha addressed the Lord in the following stanzas:—

Pokkhārasāti's pupil I; my friend [594]
 had Tārukkhā for master; both of us
 in Threefold Lore have passed and so profess;

in all the Threefold Lore adepts are we, [595]
 in text and import, each his master's peer.

3. Tesan no jātivādasmiṃ vivādo atthi, Gotama;
'Jātiyā brāhmaṇo hoti' Bhāradvājo iti bhāsati,
ahañ ca 'kammanā' brūmi:—Evaṃ jānāhi, cakkhuma. [596]
4. Te na sakkoma saṃyattum aññamaññaṃ mayam ubho;
bhavantam puṭṭhum āgamhā, 'Sambuddham' iti vissutam. [597]
5. Candam yathā khayātitaṃ pecca pañjalikā janā
vandamanā namassanti, evam lokasmiṃ Gotamam. [598]
6. Cakkhum loke samuppannam mayam pucchāma Gotamam:
—Jātiyā brāhmaṇo hoti? udāhu bhavati kammanā?
Ajānataṃ no pabrūhi yathā jānemu 'brāhmaṇam'. [599]
7. Tesam vo 'ham vyakkhissam anupubbam yathātatham
(*Vāseṭṭhāti Bhagavā*) [600]
jātivibhangam pāṇanam; aññamaññaṃ hi jātiyo.
8. Tiṇarukkhe pi jānātha, na cāpi paṭijānare,
lingam jātimayam tesam; aññamaññaṃ hi jātiyo. [601]
9. Tato kiṇe patange ca yāva kunthakipillike;
lingam jātimayam tesam; aññamaññaṃ hi jātiyo. [602]
10. Catuppade pi jānātha khuddake ca mahallake
lingam—pe— [603]
11. Pādūdare pi jānātha urage dīghapiṭṭhike;
lingam—pe— [604]
12. Tato macche pi jānātha oḍake vārigocare;
lingam—pe— [605]
13. Tato pakkhi pi jānātha pattayāne vihangame;
lingam—pe— [606]
14. Yathā etāsu jātisu lingam jātimayam puthu,
evam na 'tthi manussesu lingam jātimayam puthu. [607]
15. Na kesehi, na sīsena, na kaṇṇehi, nākkhihi,
na mukhena, na nāsāya na oṭṭhehi bhamūhi vā, [608]
16. na gīvāya, na aṃsehi, n' udarena, na piṭṭhiyā,
na soṇiyā, na urasā, na sambādhe, na methune, [609]
17. na hatthehi, na pādehi, n' angulihī nakhehi vā,
na janghāhi, na ūrūhi, na vaṇṇena sarena vā,
—lingam jātimayam n' eva yathā aññāsu jātisu. [610]

F. 596]	<i>Book 3, Sutta 9. What is a Brahmin?</i>	149
	On birth we differ. Bhāradvāja says	[596]
	'tis 'birth' that makes a brahmin; I say 'life'.	
	'Tis thus we stand, O thou who seest all.	
	Agree we cannot, so an answer crave	[597]
	from thee, for high Enlightenment renown'd.	
	For, as with hands in adoration raised	[598]
	men hail the crescent moon, the world hails thee!	
	Of Gotama, who brought the seeing Eye,	[599]
	we ask if <i>birth</i> or <i>life</i> the 'Brahmin' makes.	
	Tell us; we know not, but would fain feel sure.	
<i>The Lord:</i>	Types manifold of divers living things	[600]
	in order'd sequence I must first unfold,	
	to show how nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	Regard the grass and trees, which ne'er proclaim,	[601]
	but prove, how nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	Pass next to insects, pass from moths to ants;	[602]
	and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	regard four-footed creatures, great and small;	[603]
	and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	regard the snakes whose length on belly goes;	[604]
	and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	pass now to fish that dwell in water's depths;	[605]
	and see how nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	then pass to birds that wing their airy way;	[606]
	—all show how nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	While these thus widely differ, men alone	[607]
	show not that nature stamps them diverse breeds.	
	They differ not in hair, head, ears, or eyes,	[608]
	in mouth or nostrils, not in eyebrows, lips,	
	throat, shoulders, belly, buttocks, back, or chest,	[609]
	nor in the parts of shame, female or male,	
	nor yet in hands or feet, in fingers, nails,	[610]
	in calves or thighs; in hue, or sound of voice;	
	—naught shows men stamped by nature diverse breeds;	

18. Paccattaṃ sasarīresu manussesu etaṃ na vijjati;
vokāraṃ ca manussesu samaññāya pavuccati. [611]
19. Yo hi koci manussesu gorakkhaṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Kassako' so, na brāhmaṇo. [612]
20. Yo hi koci manussesu puthusippena jīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Sippiko' so, na brāhmaṇo. [613]
21. Yo hi koci manussesu vohāraṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Vāṇijo' so, na brāhmaṇo. [614]
22. Yo hi koci manussesu parapessena jīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Pessiko' so, na brāhmaṇo. [615]
23. Yo hi koci manussesu adinnaṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Coro' eso, na brāhmaṇo. [616]
24. Yo hi koci manussesu issatthaṃ upajīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Yodhājīvo', na brāhmaṇo. [617]
25. Yo hi koci manussesu porohiccena jīvati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Yājako' so, na brāhmaṇo. [618]
26. Yo hi koci manussesu gāmaṃ raṭṭhaṃ ca bhuñjati,
evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi: 'Rājā' eso, na brāhmaṇo. [619]
27. Na cāhaṃ 'Brāhmaṇaṃ' brūmi yonijaṃ mattisambhavaṃ;
'Bhovādi' nāma so hoti, sa ve hoti sakiñcano;
—akiñcanaṃ, anādānaṃ, tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'. [620]
28. Sabbasaṃyojanaṃ chetvā yo ve na paritassati,
sangātigaṃ, visaṃyuttaṃ,—tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'. [621]
29. Chetvā nandhiṃ varattaṃ ca sandānaṃ sahanukkamaṃ
ukkhittapalighaṃ buddhaṃ,—tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'. [622]
30. Akkosāṃ vadhabandhaṃ ca aduṭṭho yo titikkhati,
khaṇṭibalaṃ balānikaṃ,—tam [623]
31. Akkodhanaṃ vatavantaṃ sīlavantaṃ anussadaṃ
dantaṃ antimasārīraṃ,—tam [624]
32. Vāri pokkharapatte va, āragge-r-iva sāsapo,
yo na lippati kāmesu, tam [625]
33. Yo dukkhassa pajānāti idh' eva khayam attano,
pannabhāraṃ visaṃyuttaṃ,—tam [626]

- nature's diversities leave man untouched;
—except in names, no difference exists. [611]
- The man that lives by keeping herds of cows,
—know him as farmer, not as brahmin true. [612]
- The man that lives by divers handicrafts,
—know him as tradesman, not as brahmin true. [613]
- The man that lives by selling merchandise,
—know him as merchant, not as brahmin true. [614]
- The man that lives by service done for hire,
—know him as hireling, not as brahmin true. [615]
- The man that lives by taking things not his,
—know him as robber, not as brahmin true. [616]
- The man that lives by warlike sword and bow,
—know him as soldier, not as brahmin true.
- The man that lives by sacrificial rites,
—know him as chaplain, not as brahmin true. [618]
- The man whom realms and broad domains support,
—know him as monarch, not as brahmin true. [619]
- Not birth, not parentage, a 'Brahmin' makes;
—birth fosters hauteur, fosters worldliness.
Th' unworldly, trammel-free, is 'Brahmin' true. [620]
- True 'Brahmin' call I him who, shackle-free,
by bonds and ties untroubled, lives his life; [621]
- whom yoke and harness, straps and pin, no more
can hamper, since Enlightenment is his; [622]
- who, guiltless, bears abuse and stripes and chains,
with patient meekness armed, in meekness strong; [623]
- who, wrathless, meekly dutiful, and good,
in stainless self-control wears his last clay; [624]
- in whom low pleasure finds no resting-place,
—as off the lotus-leaf the raindrop rolls,
nor rests the mustard-seed on needle's point; [625]
- who knows that, here and now, all Ill is o'er;
whose pack is off his shoulders; who is freed; [626]

34. Gambhīrapaññaṃ medhāviṃ maggāmaggassa kovidam [627]
uttamatthaṃ anuppattaṃ,—tam . . .
35. Asaṃsaṭṭhaṃ gahaṭṭhehi anāgārehi cūbhayaṃ [628]
anokasāriṃ appicchaṃ,—tam . . .
36. Nidhāya daṇḍaṃ bhūtesu, tasesu thāvaresu ca, [629]
yo na hanti, na ghāteti,—tam . . .
37. Aviruddhaṃ viruddhesu, attadaṇḍesu nibbutaṃ, [630]
sādānesu anādānaṃ,—tam . . .
38. Yassa rāgo ca doso ca, māno makkho ca, pātito [631]
sāsaṃ iva āraggā,—tam . . .
39. Akakkasaṃ viññapaniṃ giraṃ saccaṃ udiraye [632]
yāya nābhisaje kañci,—tam . . .
40. Yo ca dīghaṃ va rassaṃ vā apumthūlaṃ subhāsubhaṃ [633]
loke adinnaṃ nādiyati,—tam . . .
41. Āsā yassa na vijjanti, asmiṃ loke paramhi ca, [634]
nirāsayaṃ, visarṇyuttaṃ,—tam . . .
42. Yassālayā na vijjanti—aññāya akathaṃkathī— [635]
amatogadhaṃ anuppattaṃ,—tam . . .
43. Yo 'dha puññaṃ ca pāpaṃ ca ubho sangam upaccagā, [636]
asokaṃ virajaṃ suddhaṃ,—tam . . .
44. Candam va vimalaṃ suddhaṃ vippasannaṃ anāvilaṃ [637]
nandibhavaparikkhīṇaṃ,—tam . . .
45. Yo imaṃ palipathaṃ duggaṃ saṃsāraṃ moham accagā [638]
tiṇṇo pāragato jhāyī, anejo akathaṃkathī,
anupādāya nibbutaṃ,—tam . . .
46. Yo 'dha kāme pahatvāna anāgāro paribbaje, [639]
kāmaḥbhavaparikkhīṇaṃ,—tam . . .
47. Yo 'dha taṇhaṃ pahatvāna anāgāro paribbaje, [640]
taṇhābhavaparikkhīṇaṃ,—tam . . .
48. Hitvā mānusaṃ yogaṃ, dibbaṃ yogaṃ upaccagā, [641]
sabbayogavisaṃyuttaṃ,—tam . . .
49. Hitvā ratiṃ ca aratiṃ ca, sītibhūtaṃ nirūpadhiṃ, [642]
sabbalokābhibhuṃ viraṃ,—tam . . .

- whose Lore is deep, whose wit is quick, who knows [627]
right paths from wrong, whose feet have reached the goal;
- who mixes not with lay, or homeless, folk; [628]
who has no habitation, scanty wants;
- who shows no violence to weak or strong, [629]
nor kills nor orders death of aught that lives;
- who, raging not when others rage, and calm [630]
'midst turbulence, discards what others clutch;
- from whom lusts, hate, and pride, and spite are fled [631]
—as from the needle's tip the mustard-seed;
- whose gentle, helpful, utterances preach [632]
the Truth, but never wound the list'ner's ear;
- who takes—ungiven—nothing great or small, [633]
or fine or coarse, or fair or foul to view;
- who yearns for nothing here or after death; [634]
without a longing and without a tie;
- who, craving naught, and purged by vision clear [635]
from haunting doubts, has plunged in Deathlessness;
- who, having passed beyond 'works'—good and bad— [636]
is freed from sorrow, inly cleansed, and pure;
- who, calm and pure as is the spotless moon, [637]
has now no longings left to live again;
- who, safe across th' engulfing bogs and sloughs [638]
of rebirth's round and error's trackless maze,
doubt-free on th' Other Shore, in Reverie,
has 'passed away', because life's stuff is spent;
- who, quitting pleasures for the Pilgrim's way, [639]
deems it no pleasure now to live anew;
- who, quitting cravings for the Pilgrim's way, [640]
has now no craving left to live anew;
- who, casting off his human yoke, transcends [641]
all yokes divine,—from ev'ry yoke unyoked;
- who, casting off dislikes and likes, abides [642]
calm and unfever'd, quit of what feeds life,
—hero triumphant o'er the universe;

50. Cutim̐ yo vedi sattānaṃ upapattiṃ ca sabbaso
asattaṃ sugataṃ buddhaṃ,—tam [643]
51. Yassa gatiṃ na jānanti devā gandhabbamānusa,
khīṇāsavaṃ arahantaṃ,—tam [644]
52. Yassa pure ca pacchā ca majjhe ca na 'tthi kiñcanaṃ,
akiñcanaṃ anādānaṃ,—tam [645]
53. Usabhaṃ pavaraṃ vīraṃ mahesiṃ vijitāvinaṃ
anejaṃ nahātakaṃ buddhaṃ,—tam [646]
54. Pubbenivāsaṃ yo vedi, saggāpāyaṃ ca passati,
atho jātikkhayaṃ patto,—tam ahaṃ brūmi 'Brāhmaṇaṃ'. [647]
55. Samaññā h' esā lokasmiṃ nāmagottaṃ pakappitaṃ,
sammuccā samudāgataṃ tattha tattha pakappitaṃ, [648]
56. dīgharattam anusayitaṃ diṭṭhigataṃ ajānataṃ;
ajānantaṃ no pabrūvanti:—'Jātiyā hoti brāhmaṇo'. [649]
57. Na jaccā 'Brāhmaṇo' hoti, na jaccā hoti abrahmaṇo;
—kammanā 'Brāhmaṇo' hoti; kammanā hoti abrahmaṇo. [650]
58. Kassako kammanā hoti; sippiko hoti kammanā;
vāṇijo kammanā hoti; pessiko hoti kammanā; [651]
59. coro pi kammanā hoti; yodhājīvo pi kammanā;
yājako kammanā hoti; rājā pi hoti kammanā. [652]
60. Evam etaṃ yathābhūtaṃ kammaṃ passanti paṇḍitā,
paṭiccasamuppādadasaṃ, kammavipākakovidā:— [653]
61. Kammanā vattatī loko, kammanā vattatī pajā;
kammanibandhanā sattā, rathassa' āṇīva yāyato. [654]
62. Tapena, brahmacariyena, saṃnyamena, damena ca,
—etena 'Brāhmaṇo' hoti; etaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ uttamaṃ. [655]
63. Tīhi vijjāhi sampanno, santo, khīṇapunabbhavo
(evaṃ, Vāseṭṭha, jānāhi), Brahmā, Sakko, vijānataṃ. [656]

Evam̐ vutte, Vāseṭṭha-Bhāradvājā māṇavaṃ Bhagavantaṃ etad avocuṃ:—
Abhikkantaṃ, bho Gotama,—pe—ete mayaṃ bhavantaṃ Gotamaṃ saraṇaṃ
gacchāma, dhammaṃ ca, bhikkhusaṃghaṃ ca; upāsake no bhavaṃ Gotamo
dhāretu ajjatagge pānupete saraṇāgate ti.

- who knows whence creatures come and whither pass, [643]
 —from all attachments freed, Enlighten'd, blest;
 —whose bourn no gods, no men, no quire on high, [644]
 can tell,—the Arahat from Cankers purged;
 —whose present, future, past, are swept and clean; [645]
 who harbours naught, and hankers after naught;
 —who's first in prowess, hero, victor, sage, [646]
 th' unruffled Lord of All-Enlightenment;
 —within whose ken are lives he lived long since; [647]
 whose vision takes in paradise and hell;
 for whom rebirth is dead. *He's 'Brahmin true'.*
 By general consent men's names and clans [648]
 as useful designations current passed;
 'twas long ere time evolved the novel view, [649]
 till then unknown, that birth a 'Brahmin' makes.
 —Birth neither Brahmin, nor non-Brahmin, makes; [650]
 'tis life and conduct moulds the Brahmin true.
 Their lives mould farmers, tradesmen, merchants, serfs; [651]
 their lives mould robbers, soldiers, chaplains, kings. [652]
 'Tis thus the wise life's causal outcome see, [653]
 discern what went before, what follows thence.
 Their past decides how men shall fare,—like carts
 that needs must travel in the linchpin's wake.
 'Tis self-denial, holy life, control, [655]
 which make my Brahmin's perfect Brahminhood.
 He who has won the Threefold Lore, the Saint [656]
 who ne'er shall see rebirth,—*He Bráhmā* is
 (to them that know) and Sakka manifest.

Hereupon, the young brahmins Vāseṭṭha and Bhāradvāja said to the Lord:—
 Wonderful, Gotama; quite wonderful! . . . (*&c., as at p. 25*) . . . accept us
 as disciples who have found an abiding refuge, from this day forth whilst
 life shall last.

(*Note.*—This Sutta recurs verbatim as Sutta No. 98 of the Majjhima
 Nikāya.)

10. KOKĀLIYASUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Jetavane Anāthapiṇḍikassa ārāme. Atha kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ nisīdi. Ekamantaṃ nisinno kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Pāpicchā, bhante, Sāriputta-Moggallānā, pāpikānaṃ icchānaṃ vasaṃgatā ti.

Evaṃ vutte Bhagavā Kokāliyaṃ bhikkhum etad avoca:—Mā h' evaṃ, Kokāliya; mā h' evaṃ, Kokāliya; pasādehi, Kokāliya, Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṃ; pesalā Sāriputta-Moggallānā ti.

Dutiyaṃ pi kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu Bhagavantam etad avoca: Kiñcāpi me, bhante, Bhagavā saddhāyiko paccayiko, atha kho pāpicchā va Sāriputta-Moggallānā, pāpikānaṃ icchānaṃ vasaṃgatā ti.

Dutiyaṃ pi kho Bhagavā Kokāliyaṃ bhikkhum etad avoca: Mā h' evaṃ ... pesalā Sāriputta-Moggallānā ti.

Tatiyaṃ pi kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu Bhagavantam etad avoca: Kiñcāpi me, bhante, Bhagavā ... vasaṃgatā ti.

Tatiyaṃ pi kho Bhagavā Kokāliyaṃ bhikkhum etad avoca: Mā h' evaṃ ... pesalā Sāriputta-Moggallānā ti.

Atha kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu utthāyāsanā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā pada-kkhiṇaṃ katvā pakkāmi. Acirapakkantassa ca Kokāliyassa bhikkhuno sāsa-pamattihi pilakāhi sabbo kāyo phuṭṭo ahosi, sāsapamattiyo hutvā mugga-mattiyo ahesuṃ, muggamattiyo hutvā kaḷāyamattiyo ahesuṃ, kaḷāyamattiyo hutvā kolaṭṭhimattiyo ahesuṃ, kolaṭṭhimattiyo hutvā kolamattiyo ahesuṃ, kolamattiyo hutvā āmalakamattiyo ahesuṃ, āmalakamattiyo hutvā beḷuvasalāṭṭukamattiyo ahesuṃ, beḷuvasalāṭṭukamattiyo hutvā billimattiyo ahesuṃ, billimattiyo hutvā pabhijjimsu, pubbaṇ ca lohitaṇ ca paggharimsu. Atha kho Kokāliyo bhikkhu ten' eva ābādhena kalam akāsi; kālakato ca Kokāliyo bhikkhu Padumanirayaṃ upapajji Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṃ āghātetvā.

Atha kho Brahmā Sahampati abhikkantāya rattiyaṃ abhikkantavaṇṇo kevalakappaṃ Jetavanam obhāsetvā yena Bhagavā ten' upasaṃkami, upasaṃkamitvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā ekamantaṃ aṭṭhāsi. Ekamantaṃ ṭhito kho Brahmā Sahampati Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Kokāliyo, bhante, bhikkhu kālakato; kālakato ca, bhante, Kokāliyo bhikkhu Padumanirayaṃ upapanno Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṃ āghātetvā ti. Idam avoca Brahmā Sahampati, idam vatvā Bhagavantam abhivādetvā padakkhiṇaṃ katvā tath' ev' antaradhāyi.

Atha kho Bhagavā tassā rattiyaṃ accayena bhikkhū āmantesi:—Imaṃ, bhikkhave, rattiṃ Brahmā Sahampati abhikkantāya rattiyaṃ—pe—idam avoca Brahmā Sahampati, idam vatvā maṃ abhivādetvā padakkhiṇaṃ katvā tath' ev' antaradhāyīti.

Sutta 10. Slander's doom

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in Jeta's grove in Anāthapiṇḍika's pleasaunce, the Almsman Kokāliya came to the Lord and after salutations took his seat to one side, saying to the Lord:—Sāriputta and Moggallāna, sir, harbour evil desires and are fallen a prey to evil desires.

To this the Lord made answer:—Nay, Kokāliya; do not entertain this feeling against Sāriputta and Moggallāna,—who are good men.

The second time, Kokāliya said:—Although the Lord personally inspires me with trust and confidence, yet Sāriputta and Moggallāna do harbour evil desires and are fallen a prey to evil desires.

A second time the Lord repeated his answer.

A third time Kokāliya made his charge and received the same answer.

Then the Almsman Kokāliya rose up and departed, after saluting the Lord with deep reverence. He had not been gone long before pustules the size of a mustard-seed broke out all over his body, pustules which grew and grew to the size first of a lentil, then of a chick-pea, then of a jujube's kernel, then of a jujube, then of a myrobalan, then of a vilva fruit, and then of a quince;—then they broke, exuding pus and blood. That disease killed the Almsman Kokāliya, who passed hence to the Paduma Purgatory, all because he hardened his heart against Sāriputta and Moggallāna.

As night was waning, Brahmā Sahampati—in surpassing splendour, which flooded the whole of Jeta's grove with radiance—drew nigh to the Lord, saluted him and stood to one side, saying:—'Sir, the Almsman Kokāliya is dead and has passed to the Paduma Purgatory, all because he hardened his heart against Sāriputta and Moggallāna.' So saying, Brahmā Sahampati saluted the Lord with deep reverence and vanished.

When the night had gone, the Lord, addressing the Almsmen, told them of Brahmā Sahampati's visit and of his report of Kokāliya's death and rebirth in the Paduma Purgatory, all because of his animosity against Sāriputta and

Evam vutte aññataro bhikkhu Bhagavantam etad avoca:—Kīvadigham nu kho, bhante, Padume niraye āyuppmāṇam ti?

Dīgham kho, bhikkhu, Padume niraye āyuppmāṇam; tam na sukaṛam saṁkhātum 'ettakāni vassāni' iti vā, 'ettakāni vassasatāni' iti vā, 'ettakāni vassasahassāni' iti vā, 'ettakāni vassasatasahassāni' iti vā ti.

Sakkā pana, bhante, upamā kātun ti?

Sakkā bhikkhūti, Bhagavā avoca:—Seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsatikhāriko Kosalako tilavāho, tato puriso vassasatassa vassasatassa accayena ekam ekaṁ tilarū uddhareyya;—khippataram kho so, bhikkhu, vīsatikhāriko Kosalako tilavāho iminā upakkamena parikkhayaṁ pariyādānaṁ gaccheyya, na tveva eko Abbudo nirayo. Seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Abbudā nirayā, evam eko Nirabbudo nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Nirabbudā nirayā, evam eko Ababo nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Ababā nirayā, evam eko Ahaho nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Ahahā nirayā, evam eko Aṭaṭo nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Aṭaṭā nirayā, evam eko Kumudo nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Kumudā nirayā, evam eko Sogandhiko nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Sogandhikā nirayā, evam eko Uppalako nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Uppalakā nirayā, evam eko Puṇḍariko nirayo; seyyathāpi, bhikkhu, vīsati Puṇḍarīkā nirayā, evam eko Padumo nirayo. Padumaṁ kho pana, bhikkhu, nirayaṁ Kokāliyo bhikkhu upapanno Sāriputta-Moggallānesu cittaṁ āghāteva ti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā; idam vatvā Sugato athāparam etad avoca Satthā:—

1. Purisassa hi jātassa kuṭṭhārī jāyate mukhe [657]
yāya chindati attānaṁ bālo dubbhāsitaṁ bhaṇaṁ.
2. Yo nindiyāṁ pasaṁsati, tam vā nindati yo pasaṁsiyo, [658]
vicināti mukhena so kaṁim, kalinā tena sukaṁ na vīndati.

Appamatto ayaṁ kali, [659]
yo akkhesu dhanaparājayo
sabbassāpi sahāpi attanā;
ayaṁ eva mahattaro kali
yo sugatesu manāṁ padosaye.

Sataṁ sahassānaṁ Nirabbudānaṁ, [660]
chattimsa ca pañca ca Abbudāni
yaṁ ariyagarahī nirayaṁ upeti
vācaṁ manaṁ ca paṇidhāya pāpakāṁ.

Abhūtavādī nirayaṁ upeti,
yo vā pi katvā 'Na karomī' cc āha;
ubho pi te pecca samā bhavanti
nīhinakammā manujā parattha.

Moggallāna. Thereupon, a certain Almsman asked the Lord how long a term of durance had to be spent in the Paduma Purgatory.

A term so long, answered the Lord, that it is not easy to express it in years, or in hundreds, or thousands, or even hundreds of thousands of years.

Could you give some idea of its duration, sir?

Yes, Almsman, answered the Lord. Imagine a Kosalan cartload of twenty measures of sesamum seed, and suppose that at the close of every century one single seed at a time were removed. Well, by this method, the cartload would be exhausted sooner than the term in a One-æon Purgatory,—a score of which last one Nirabbuda Purgatory, and a score of these one Ababa Purgatory, and a score of these one Ahaha Purgatory, and a score of these one Aṭaṭa Purgatory, and a score of these one Kumuda Purgatory, a score of these one Sogandhika Purgatory, a score of these one Uppalaka Purgatory, a score of these one Puṇḍarīka Purgatory,—a score of which last one Paduma Purgatory. Now it was to Paduma that the Almsman Kokāliya passed hence, all because he hardened his heart against Sāriputta and Moggallāna.

Thus spake the Lord; and when the Blessed One had thus spoken, he went on, as Teacher, to say:—

In each man's mouth at birth there grows an axe, [657]
wherewith fools gash themselves by speaking ill.

The tongue which lauds blameworthy folk, or blames [658]
the laudable, ne'er wins felicity.

A trifling doom it is to lose [659]
one's all, and liberty, at dice;
a doom far greater is a heart
at enmity with blessed saints.

An evil tongue, an evil mind, [660]
condemn to hell whoso maligns
the saintly, till full tale is told
of æons spent in Paduma.

False witness leads, like perjury,
to hell; one equal doom awaits
both villainies when this life ends.

6. Yo appaduṭṭhassa narassa dussati
suddhassa posassa anangaṇassa,
tam eva bālaṃ pacceti pāpaṃ,
—sukhumo rajo paṭivātaṃ va khitto. [662]
7. Yo lobhagūṇe anuyutto
so vacasā paribhāsati aññe
assaddho kadariyo avadaññū
macchari pesuṇiyasmiṃ anuyutto. [663]
8. Mukhadugga, vibhūta-m-anariya,
bhūnahu, pāpaka, dukkatakāri,
purisanta, kali, avajāta,
mā bahu bhāṇ' idha; nerayiko 'si. [664]
9. Rajam ākirasi ahitāya,
sante garahasi kibbisakāri;
bahūni ca duccaritāni caritvā
gañchisi kho papataṃ cirarattaṃ. [665]
10. Na hi nassati kassaci kammaṃ.
Eti ha taṃ, labhat' eva suvāmī;
dukkhaṃ mando paraloke
attani passati kibbisakāri. [666]
11. Ayosaṃku-samāhata-tṭhānaṃ
tiṇhadhāraṃ ayasūlam upeti;
atha tatta' ayogūlasannibhaṃ
bhojanaṃ atthi tathā patirūpaṃ. [667]
12. Na hi vaggu vadanti vadantā;
nābhijavanti; na tāṇam upenti,
angāre santhate senti,
aggini-samaṃ jalitaṃ pavisanti. [668]
13. Jālena ca onahiyānā
tattha hananti ayomayakūṭehi.
Andhaṃ va timisaṃ āyanti,
taṃ vitataṃ hi yathā mahikāyo. [669]
14. Atha lohamayaṃ pana kumbhiṃ
aggini-samaṃ jalitaṃ pavisanti;
paccanti hi tāsu cirarattaṃ,
aggini-samāsu samuppilavāso. [670]

If wrong be done to meek and pure
and good, the wickedness and guilt
recoils—like dust that's flung up-wind—
upon the fool who did that wrong.

[662]

Reviling goes with covetise,
—with unbelief and stinginess,
with churlishness and avarice,
and acrimonious calumny.

[663]

O foul-mouthed, false, ignoble wretch!
Black-hearted, blighting villain, vile,
degraded, infamous! Forbear
to vent words here, thou spawn of hell!

[664]

Thou flingest mud malignantly,
decrying virtue, child of sin!
But, after thy career of guilt,
limbo shall be thine age-long doom!

[665]

For, no man's deeds are blotted out;
each deed comes home; the doer finds
it waiting him; in worlds to come
the purblind dree their weird of woe.

[666]

They pass to where with pegs of steel
they're trussed; to ease their hunger's pangs,
they're fed (meet nutriment for such!)
with red-hot balls of flaming steel.

[667]

No words of cheer reach these; no zest
impels them forward; shelter's none;
their bed is embers, their abode
one sheer expanse of blazing fire.

[668]

Hell's warders fling a net o'er them,
and with steel hammers pound them sore.
To blinding, murky realms they go,
realms vast as earth's wide-flung expanse.

[669]

The Brazen Cauldron's molten fires,
receive them next, in torrid foam
to seethe, as up and down they bob.

[670]

15. Atha pubbalohitamisse
tatha kiṃ paccati kibbisakārī.
Yaṃ yaṃ disataṃ adhiseti,
tatha kilissati samphusamāno. [671]
16. Puḷavâvasatthe salilasmim
tatha kiṃ paccati kibbisakārī.
Gantuṃ na hi tīraṃ ap' atthi;
sabbasamā hi samantakapallā. [672]
17. Asipattavanam̐ pana tiṇham̐
taṃ pavisanti samacchidagattā;
jivham̐ baḷisena gahetvā
ārajayārajayā vihananti. [673]
18. Atha Vetaraṇim̐ pana duggam̐
tiṇhadhāraṃ khuradhāraṃ upenti;
tatha mandā papatanti
pāpakarā pāpāni karitvā. [674]
19. Khādanti hi tattha rudante
sāmā sabalā kākoḷagaṇā ca
soṇā sigālā paṭigijjhā,
kulalā vāyasā ca vitudanti. [675]
20. Kicchā vatāyaṃ idha vutti
yaṃ jano passati kibbisakārī.
Tasmā idha jīvitasese
kiccakaro siyā naro, na pamajje. [676]
21. Te gaṇitā vidūhi tilavāhā
ye Padume niraye upanītā;
nahutāni hi koṭiyo pañca bhavanti,
dvādasa koṭisatāni pun' aññā. [677]
22. Yāva-dukkhā nirayā idha vuttā,
tatha pi tāva-ciraṃ vasitabbarṃ.
Tasmā sucipesalasādhugūṇesu
vācaṃ manam̐ satataṃ parirakkhe. [678]

Then in a brew of blood and pus
the malefactor's put to stew;
turn where he may, on ev'ry side
he wallows still in filth and slime.

In water next which teems with worms
the malefactor stews afresh.
He cannot land; he's vaulted in
beneath that limbo's domed expanse.

[672]

They enter next the Sword-leaf Wood,
wherein their limbs are lopped away.
The wardens hook them by the tongue
and slash them sore with whirling strokes.

[673]

The Caustic Stream, Vetāranī,—
whose waters rive and rip,—comes next;
and purblind evil-doers plunge
therein, because of evil done.

[674]

They howl as they a banquet make
for hungry ravens, jackals, dogs,
and vultures dusky-hued or pied,
while stabbed by beaks of kites and crows.

[675]

This woeful doom awaits in hell
the malefactor! So while yet
men live on earth, let them fulfil
their duties here unflinchingly.

[676]

The experts calculate
the term in Paduma
which represents the loads
of seeds of sesamum
to be five myriads
twelve hundred crores of years.

[677]

Such are the griding pains
and such the term in hell!
—Wherefore in purity
and love and virtue keep
both mind and tongue alway.

[678]

11. NĀLAKASUTTA

1. Ānandajāte tidasagaṇe patīte [679]
Sakkañ ca Indarāṃ sucivasane ca deve
dussarāṃ gahetvā atiriva thomayante
Asito isi addasa divāvihāre.
2. Disvāna deve muditamane udagge [680]
cittirāṃ karitvā idam avocāsi taththa:
'Kiṃ devasaṃgho atiriva kallarūpo?
Dussarāṃ gahetvā bhamayatha kiṃ paṭicca?
3. Yadā pi āsi asurehi sangamo, [681]
jāyo surānaṃ, asurā parājitā,
tadā pi n' etādiso lomahaṃsano.
Kim abbhutaṃ daṭṭhu marū pamoditā?
4. Seḷanti gāyanti ca vādayanti ca [682]
bhujāni poṭhenti ca naccayanti ca.
Pucchāmi vo 'haṃ, Merumuddhavāsine;
dhunātha me saṃsayaṃ khippa, mārisā.'
5. 'So Bodhisatto ratanavaro atulyo [683]
manussaloke hitasukhatāya jāto
Sakyāna' gāme janapade Lumbhineyye!
—Ten' amha tuṭṭhā atiriva kallarūpā.
6. So sabbasattuttamo aggapuggalo [684]
narāsaḃho sabbapajānam uttamo
vattessati cakkarāṃ Isivhaye vane,
nadaṃ va sīho balavā migādhibhū.'
7. Taṃ saddaṃ sutvā turitam avamaṃsari so,
Suddhodanassa tada bhavanaṃ upāgami.
Nisajja tattha idam avocāsi Sakyē:
Kuhirā kumāro? aham api daṭṭhukāmo.
8. Tato kumāraṃ, jalitam iva suvaṇṇaṃ [686]
ukkāmukhe va sukusalasampahaṭṭhaṃ
daddallamānaṃ siriyā anomavaṇṇaṃ
dassesu' puttaṃ Asitavhayassa Sakyā.
9. Disvā kumāraṃ, sikhim iva pajjalantaṃ, [687]
tārāsaḃhaṃ va nabhasigamaṃ visuddhaṃ,
suriyaṃ tapantaṃ saradar iv' abbhāmattaṃ,
ānandajāto vipulam alattaṃ pītiṃ.

Sutta 11. Asita's Nunc Dimittis

At noontide Asita the Sage [679]
 beheld the joyous Thrice-ten gods
 and Sakka-Indra at their head,
 waving their spotless robes in glee.

Asita: At sight of their triumphant joy, [680]
 he reverently spoke these words:—
 What gladdens thus th' assembled gods?
 Say why ye wave your garments so.

Not even when the war with fiends [681]
 crushed fiends and gave gods victory,
 was such excitement shown as now.
 What marvel cheers the gods to-day?

They shout and sing to music's strains; [682]
 they toss their arms and dance around.
 Ye denizens of Meru's peaks,
 quick! tell me why; dispel my doubts.

Deities: 'The future Buddha, pearl of pearls, [683]
 for peace and weal is born as man,
 a Sákýán in Lumbinī.
 —And thence our jubilation springs.

This matchless being, chief of men, [684]
 hero, supreme o'er beings all,
 as with a kingly lion's roar
 in Sages' Wood shall start Truth's Wheel.'

When Asita heard this, straight down he went [685]
 till he drew nigh Suddhódana's abode,
 and, seated there, addressed the Sákýáns:—
 Where is the prince? I too would gaze on him.

Thereon, to Asita, that swarthy sage, [686]
 the Sákýáns shewed the newborn babe, who shone
 with golden sheen, like gold by craftsmen wrought,
 fresh from the furnace, and exceeding fair.

In joy and zest abounding, Asita [687]
 beheld th' effulgent babe,—bright as a flame,
 pure as the riding moon, and radiant
 as shines the sun in cloudless autumn skies.

10. Anekasākhañ ca saḥassamaṇḍalaṃ
chattarṃ marū dhārayuṃ antalikkhe,
suvaṇṇadaṇḍā vītipatanti cāmarā;
na dissare cāmarachattagāhakā. [688]
11. Disvā jaṭī Kaṇhasirivhayaṃ isi,
suvaṇṇanekkhaṃ viya paṇḍukambale,
setaṃ ca chattarṃ dhariyanta' muddhani,
udaggacitto sumano paṭiggāhe. [689]
12. Paṭiggahetvā pana Sakyapungavaṃ
jigimsako lakkhaṇamantapāragū
pasannacitto giraṃ abbhudīrayi:—
'Anuttarāyaṃ, dipadānam uttamo'. [690]
13. Ath' attano gamaṇaṃ anussaranto
akalyarūpo gaḷayati assukāni.
Disvāna Sakyā isiṃ avocuṃ rudantaṃ:—
'No ce kumāre bhavissati antarāyo?' [691]
14. Disvāna Sakeṃ isi-m-avoca akāye:—
'Nāhaṃ kumāre ahitaṃ anussarāmi,
na cāpi-m-assa bhavissati antarāyo,
na orakāyaṃ. Adhimanasā bhavātha. [692]
15. Sambodhiyaggaṃ phusissatāyaṃ kumāro;
so dhammacakkaṃ paramavisuddhadassī
vattessatāyaṃ bahujanahitānukampī;
vitthārik' assa bhavissati brahmacariyaṃ. [693]
16. Mamañ ca āyu na ciraṃ idhāvaseso,
ath' antarā me bhavissati kālakiriyaṃ.
So 'haṃ na sussaṃ asamadhurassa Dhammaṃ;
ten' amhi aṭṭo vyaśanagato aghāvi.' [694]
17. So Sākiyānaṃ vipula' janetvā pītiṃ
antepuramhā niragama brahmacārī.
—So bhāgineyyaṃ sayāṃ anukampamāno
samādapesi asamadhurassa Dhamme:—
18. " 'Buddho' ti ghosaṃ yada parato suṇāsi
'sambodhipatto vicarati Dhammamaggaṃ',
gantvāna tattha samayaṃ paripucchiyaṃ
carassu tasmim Bhagavati brahmacariyaṃ." [696]

A canopy aloft the gods
upheld, with ribs of gold to spread
the thousand widths of its expanse,
while fans were waved on wands of gold;
—yet none could see who held, or waved.

[688]

Beneath that canopy so white
there lay—like gold on samite laid—
the babe, whom that swart anchorite,
with matted locks, took up with joy.

[689]

He took him up; and when his gaze
found marks and signs his lore knew well,
he lifted up his voice and cried:—
'He has no peer! He's mankind's best!'

[690]

Here, rising thoughts of his approaching end
reduced the sage to tears, whereat alarmed
the Sâkyans asked the weeping sage to say
if danger would beset the new-born child.

[691]

Seeing the Sâkyans so disquieted,
the sage made answer thus:—No harm to him
can I foresee; no danger threatens him;
no common clay is he;—give heed to me.

[692]

To All-Enlightenment this child shall grow;
in Utter Holiness, by pity moved,
Truth's Wheel a-rolling he shall set, and spread
his Saving Rule abroad both far and wide.

[693]

But few are my remaining days of life,
and meantime death will end my dwindling span,
nor shall I hear his weighty Doctrine preached.
'Tis only this that saddens me the while.

[694]

Cheering the Sâkyans with his heart'ning words
the sage from out the precincts passed, to lead
the Higher Life. By pity moved, he bade
his sister's son embrace the matchless Truth:—

[695]

"Nephew (said he), when, later, thou shalt hear
that: 'Th' All-Enlighten'd Buddha treads the Path
his Doctrine shows',—go, seek him out, explore
his gospel, lead the higher life with Him."

[696]

19. Tenānusiṭṭho hitamanasena tādinā [697]
 anāgate paramavisuddhadassinā
 so Nālako upacitapuññasāñcayo
 'Jinam' patikkham parivasi rakkhitindriyo.

20. Sutvāna ghosaṃ 'Jinavaracakkavattane' [698]
 gantvāna disvā isinisabham pasanno
 moneyyasetṭham munipavaraṃ apucchi,
 samāgate Asitavhayassa sāsane.

(*Vatthugāthā niṭṭhitā.*)

21. "Aññātam etaṃ vacanaṃ Asitassa yathātathaṃ, [699]
 taṃ taṃ, Gotama, pucchāma sabbadhammāna' pārāgum:—

22. Anagāriy' upetassa bhikkhācariyaṃ jigimsato, [700]
 Muni, pabrūhi me puṭṭho moneyyaṃ uttamaṃ padaṃ."

23. Moneyyan te upaṇiṣsaṃ (ti Bhagavā) [701]
 dukkaraṃ durabhisambhavaṃ.
 Handa te naṃ pavakkhāmi:—
 'Santhambhassu, dāḥo bhava'.

24. Samānabhāgaṃ kubbetha gāme akkuṭṭhavanditaṃ; [702]
 manopadosaṃ rakkheyya; santo anuṇṇato care.

25. Uccāvacā niccharanti dāye aggisikhūpamā; [703]
 nariyo munim palobhenti;—tā su taṃ mā palobhayum.

26. Virato methunā dhammā, hitvā kāme parovare, [704]
 aviruddho asāratto pañesu tasathāvare,

27. 'yathā ahaṃ tathā ete, yathā ete tathā ahaṃ' [705]
 attānaṃ upamaṃ katvā na haneyya na ghātaye.

28. Hitvā icchaṃ ca lobhaṃ ca, yattha satto puthujjano, [706]
 cakkhumā paṭipajjeyya; tareyya narakam imaṃ.

29. Ūnūdaro mitāhāro appicch' assa alolupo; [707]
 sa ve icchāya nicchāto, aniccho hoti nibbuto.

Thus counsell'd by that kindly, helpful saint
 (the destined heir of utter holiness)
 this Nālaka lived on, in affluence
 of garner'd merit, keeping watch o'er Sense,
 till He, the future 'Conqueror', should come.

[697]

But when news came 'a Conqueror has set
 his Wheel of Truth a-rolling', straight he sought,
 and found Him,—found Him and, believing, asked
 that prince of seers (since now the time once set
 by Asita had come):—"What makes "a Sage"?"

[698]

(*End of the Introductory verses.*)

Nālaka: What Asita foretold (said Nālaka)
 has turned out true! So tell me, Gotama,
 (whose mind has fathom'd ev'ry mental state)—
 when home is left to lead the Almsman's life,
 expound, o Sage, a sage's perfect way.

[699]

[700]

The Lord: Learn then that perfect way (the Lord replied),
 'Tis hard to compass, hard to tread; but still
 its secret I'll impart:—"Stand firm; stand fast!"

[701]

Come praise, come blame,—still take it all as one.
 Let neither mar thine equanimity;
 let blame perturb thee not, nor praise inflate.

[702]

Though lone the wood, sense-objects great and small
 spring up, e'en there, like sudden tongues of fire;
 yea, women tempt the solitary sage;
 see thou to it that women tempt not thee!

[703]

Rejecting carnal joys, to pleasure dead,
 with naught that lives to crib or cabin thee

[704]

take pattern from thyself; Forbear to slay
 —with thine or other's hand—the strong or weak;
 but say: These are as I am, I as they!

[705]

By shedding all desires and covetise,
 pick thine appointed way where fools stick fast.
 Let insight guide thee through this hell on earth.

[706]

With empty belly, diet spare, few wants,
 live temperate. When once desires are quelled,
 their passing ushers in the calm of Peace.

[707]

30. Sa piṇḍacāraṃ caritvā vanantam abhihāraye [708]
upaṭṭhito rukkhamaḷasmiṃ āsanūpagato muni.
31. Sa jhānapasuto dhīro vanante ramito siyā, [709]
jhāyetha rukkhamaḷasmiṃ attānaṃ abhitoṣayaṃ.
32. Tato ratyā vivasane gāmantarā abhihāraye; [710]
avhānaṃ nābhinaṇḍeṇya abhihāraṇaṃ ca gāmato.
33. Na muni gāmaṃ āgamaṃ kulesu sahasā care, [711]
ghāṣesaṇaṃ chinnakatho na vācam payutaṃ bhāpe.
34. 'Alatthaṃ yad, idaṃ sādhu; nālatthaṃ, kusalāṃ iti'; [712]
ubhayen' eva so tādi rukkhaṃ va upanivattati.
35. Sa pattapāṇī vicaranto, amūgo mūgasammato, [713]
appaṃ dānaṃ na hīḷeṇya, dātāraṃ nāvajāniya.
36. Uccāvacaṃ hi paṭipadā Samaṇena pakāsitaṃ, [714]
na pāraṃ diguṇaṃ yanti, na idaṃ ekaguṇaṃ mutarā.
37. Yassa ca visatā na 'tthi chinnaṣotassa bhikkhuno, [715]
kiccākkiccapahīnassa pariḷāho na vijjati.
38. Moneyyan te upaṇṇissaṃ:— (ti Bhagavā) [716]
Khuradhārūpamo bhava,
jivhāya tāluṃ āhacca
udare saṃyato siyā,
39. alīnacitto ca siyā, [717]
na cāpi bahu cintaye,
nirāmagandho asito
brahmacariyaparāyano.
40. Ekāsanassa sikkhetha, [718]
Samaṇūpāsanassa ca.
Ekattaṃ monaṃ akkhātāṃ.
Eko ce abhiramissasi,
41. atha bhāsihi dasa disā. [719]
Sutvā dhīraṇaṃ nigghosaṃ jhāyīnaṃ kāmacāgināṃ
tato hiriṇ ca saddhaṇ ca bhiyyo kubbetha māmaṃko.
42. Tan nadihi vijānātha sobbhesu padaresu ca: [720]
—saṇantā yanti kussubbhā, tuṇhī yāti mahōdadhi.

F. 708]	<i>Book 3, Sutta 11. Asita's Nunc Dimittis</i>	171
	Thine alms-round o'er, within thy wood repair and take thy seat beneath a spreading tree.	[708]
	There, in those dear recesses, find thy bliss beneath thy tree in lonely Reverie.	[709]
	At morn thy village seek, but take no joy in invitations or in lavish gifts;	[710]
	race not from door to door; in quest of alms seal thou thy lips and proffer no request.	[711]
	' <i>They gave</i> ;—'twas well! <i>Refused was I</i> ;—'tis well! —thus minded seek, in either case, thy tree.	[712]
	As—seeming dumb, but nowise dumb at all— thou goest bowl in hand, disdain no gift however humble, nor the giver scorn.	[713]
	My Rule embraces all things great and small; its single path alone conducts to Peace; but never once can senses Peace discern.	[714]
	But when an Almsman, from this welter freed, has shed his cravings, old anxieties about behaviour cease; distress departs.	[715]
	Learn then this perfect way (the Lord went on); —be like the razor safe within its sheath; clap tongue to palate, master appetite;	[716]
	alert of mind, keep random thoughts at bay; be redolent of virtue, quit of ties, absorbed in nothing save the Higher Life;	[717]
	live like true anchorite alone, aloof; remember: 'Wisdom in Detachment lies'. And, if in solitude thou takest joy, north, south, and east, and west thy fame shall spread.	[718] [719]
	And when thou hearest eulogies of those who steadfast prove, woo Reverie, and shun pleasures of sense, let this but stimulate thy faith and meekness, follower of mine.	
	From rivers, cataracts, and deeps learn this: 'Loud roar the cataracts; the deeps are dumb'.	[720]

43. Yad ūnakaṃ, taṃ saṇati; yaṃ pūraṃ, santam eva taṃ; [721]
 aḍḍhakumbhūpamo bālo; rahado pūro va paṇḍito.
44. Yaṃ Samaṇo bahu bhāsati upetaṃ atthasaṃhitaṃ, [722]
 jānaṃ so Dhammaṃ deseti, jānaṃ so bahu bhāsati.
45. Yo ca jānaṃ saṃyatatto, jānaṃ na bahu bhāsati, [723]
 sa muni monam arahati, sa muni monam ajjhagā ti.

12. DVAYATĀNUPASSANĀSUTTA

Evam me sutam. Ekaṃ samayaṃ Bhagavā Sāvatthiyaṃ viharati Pubbārame Migāramātu pāsāde. Tena kho pana samayena Bhagavā tadahuposathe, pannarase puṇṇāya puṇṇamāya rattiya bhikkhusaṃghaparivuto abbhokāse nisīno hoti. Atha kho Bhagavā tuṇhībhūtaṃ tuṇhībhūtaṃ bhikkhusaṃghaṃ anuviloketvā bhikkhū āmantesi:—Ye te, bhikkhave, kusalā dhammā ariyā niyyānikā sambodhagāmino, tesam vo, bhikkhave, kusalānaṃ dhammānaṃ ariyānaṃ niyyānikānaṃ sambodhagāminānaṃ kā upanissā savanāyāti?—iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, te evam assu vacanīyā: Yāvad eva dvayatānaṃ dhammānaṃ yathābhūtaṃ ñāpāyāti. Kiṃ ca dvayatānaṃ vadetha?—“Idaṃ dukkhaṃ, ayaṃ dukkhasamudayo” ti—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; “Ayaṃ dukkhanirodho, ayaṃ dukkhanirodhagāminī paṭipadā ti”—ayaṃ dutiyanupassanā. Evaṃ sammādvayatānupassino kho, bhikkhave, bhikkhuno appamattassa ātāpino pahitattassa viharato dvinnānaṃ phalānaṃ aññatarānaṃ phalaṃ pāṭikamkhaṃ,—diṭṭhe va dhamme aññā; sati vā upādisese anāgāmitā ti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā, idaṃ vatvā Sugato, athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

1. Ye dukkhaṃ na-ppajānanti atho dukkhassa sambhavaṃ, [724]
 yattha ca sabbaso dukkhaṃ asesam uparujjhati,
 taṃ ca Maggaṃ na jānanti dukkhūpasamagāminānaṃ,
2. cetovimuttihiṇā te atho paññāvimuttiyā; [725]
 abhabbā te antakiriya; te ve jātijarūpagā.
3. Ye ca dukkhaṃ pajānanti atho dukkhassa sambhavaṃ, [726]
 yattha ca sabbaso dukkhaṃ asesam uparujjhati,
 taṃ ca Maggaṃ pajānanti dukkhūpasamagāminānaṃ,
4. cetovimuttisampannā atho paññāvimuttiyā; [727]
 bhabbā te antakiriya; na te jātijarūpagā.

Yes; emptiness is loud, but fullness, calm; [721]
the fool's a half-filled crock; the sage, a lake.

Whene'er the Anchorite holds forth, his words [722]
are apposite and fraught with deep import;
with knowledge he expounds the Doctrine's gist,
and from the amplitude of knowledge speaks.

But he whose knowledge goes with self-control, [723]
the sage who, though he knows, eschews much speech,
'tis he has wisdom won,—and wisdom found.

Sutta 12. Pairs to grasp

Thus have I heard. Once while the Lord was staying at Sāvattthī in the Old Pleasaunce in the palace of Migāra's Mother, he was sitting out, on the mid-month sabbath evening, among the Almsmen. Observing the Community of Almsmen around him to be wholly silent, the Lord addressed them, saying:—If you are asked, Almsmen, wherefore you listen to righteous, noble, saving, and all-enlightening homilies, your answer should be that you do so in order to comprehend to the full just a single pair of ideas. When asked to what pair you allude, you will reply that the first conception is Ill and its origin, and that the second is Ill's cessation and the path leading to that Cessation. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas, and if his life is earnest, ardent, and purged of Self, then you may anticipate for him one or other of two results,—either Illumination here and now, or else, if his stuff of existence be not wholly spent, no subsequent return to earth.

Thus spoke the Lord; and when he, the Blessed One, had thus spoken, he went on, as Master, to say:—

For, those who know not Ill and how Ill grows, [724]
who neither know how Ill is stilled and quenched
nor know the Way to lay all Ill to rest,

—those miss Release, alike of heart and mind; [725]
they cannot end it all and reach the goal;
they tramp the round of birth, decay, and death.

But they who know both Ill and how Ill grows, [726]
and also know how Ill is stilled and quenched
and know the Way that lays all Ill to rest;

—these win Release of heart, Release of mind; [727]
these surely end it all and reach the goal;
these nevermore shall know decay and birth.

Siyā aññena pi pariyāyena sammādvayatānupassanā ti?—iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, ‘siyā’ ti ‘ssu vacanīyā. Kathaṇ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ upadhipaccayā’ ti—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Upadhīnan tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

5. Upadhīnidānā pabhavanti dukkhā [728]
 ye keci lokasmiṃ anekarūpā.
 Yo ve avidvā upadhiṃ karoti,
 punappunāṃ dukkhaṃ upeti mando.
 Tasmā pajānaṃ upadhiṃ na kayirā
 dukkhassa jātippabhavānupassī ti.

Siyā aññena pi pariyāyena sammādvayatānupassanā ti?—iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, ‘siyā’ ti ‘ssu vacanīyā. Kathaṇ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ avijjāpaccayā’ ti—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Avijjāya tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

6. Jātimaraṇasaṃsāraṃ ye vajanti punappunāṃ [729]
 itthabhāv-aññathābhāvaṃ avijjāy’ eva sā gati.
 7. Avijjā h’ ayaṃ mahāmoho, yen’ idaṃ saṃsitaṃ ciraṃ; [730]
 vijjāgatā ca ye sattā, nāgacchanti punabbhavan ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṇ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ saṃkhārapaccayā’ ti—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Saṃkhārānaṃ tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

8. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ saṃkhārapaccayā; [731]
 saṃkhārānaṃ nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.
 9. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: ‘Dukkhaṃ saṃkhārapaccayā’, [732]
 sabbasaṃkhārasamathā, saññānaṃ uparodhanā,
 —evaṃ dukkhakkhoyo hoti;—etaṃ ñatvā yathātathaṃ

10. sammaddasā, vedaguno, samma-d-aññāya, paṇḍitā, [733]
 abhibhuyya Mārasamyogaṃ, nāgacchanti punabbhavan ti.

If you are asked whether there be yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that the first conception is, that all Ill which comes about is consequent on the Stuff of Existence, whilst the second is that, by the utter and passionless destruction of this underlying stuff, Ill cannot come about. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (*Śc.*, as above) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Life's Stuff breeds ev'ry Ill, [728]
—breeds all the Ills there are.
The dolt who witlessly
creates this stuff, piles Ill
on Ill. Create it not,
since thence all Ills are born.

If you are asked whether there be yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that the first conception is, that all Ill which comes about is consequent on Ignorance, whilst the second is that, by the utter and passionless destruction of Ignorance, Ill cannot come about. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (*Śc.*, as above) . . . , went on, as Master, to say:—

'Tis Ignorance entails the dreary round [729]
—now here, now there—of countless births and deaths.

'Tis Ignorance tricks purblind dolts to trudge [730]
th' inexorable round from life to life;
—but no hereafter waits for him who *knows*.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Plastic Forces . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Plastic Forces spring;
if Plastic Forces cease, no Ill can grow.

Aware that Plastic Forces breed all Ill, [732]
and clear that Ill's destruction comes about
by stilling each and ev'ry Plastic Force
and breaking down perceptions utterly,

the wise—clear-eyed, equipped with Lore, who *know*— [733]
o'ercoming Māra's yoke, face birth no more.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ viññāṇapaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Viññāṇassa tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

11. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ viññāṇapaccayā; [734]
viññāṇassa nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.
12. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: ‘Dukkhaṃ viññāṇapaccayā’, [735]
viññāṇūpasamā bhikkhu nicchāto parinibbuto ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ phassapaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Phassassa tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

13. Tesam phassaparetānaṃ bhavasotānusārīnaṃ [736]
kummaggapaṭipannānaṃ ārā saṃhojanakkhayo.
14. Ye ca phassaṃ parīññāya, aññāya upasame ratā, [737]
te ve phassābhisamayā nicchātā parinibbutā ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ vedanāpaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Vedanānaṃ tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

15. Sukhaṃ vā yadi vā dukkhaṃ adukkhamasukhaṃ saha, [738]
ajjhatañ ca bahiddhā ca yaṃ kiñci atthi veditaṃ,
16. —etaṃ ‘dukkhaṃ’ ti ñatvāna mosadhammaṃ palokīnaṃ [739]
phussa phussa vayaṃ passaṃ, evaṃ tattha vijānāti
vedanānaṃ khayā bhikkhu nicchāto parinibbuto.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ taṇhāpaccayā’ ti,—ayaṃ ekānupassanā; ‘Taṇhāya tveva asesavirāganirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

17. Taṇhādutiyo puriso, dīgham addhāna’ saṃsāraṃ, [740]
ittabbhāv-aññāthabbhāvaṃ saṃsāraṃ nātivattati.
18. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: Taṇhā dukkhassa sambhavaṃ, [741]
vitataṇho anādāno sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Consciousness . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Consciousness arise; [734]
no Ills can grow, if Consciousness be stilled.

Aware that Consciousness begets all Ills, [735]
and clear that Ill's destruction comes about
by stilling Consciousness, the Almsman, quit
of Consciousness, finds everlasting Peace.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Contact (between a sense and its object in perception) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Far, far, from bursting bonds are Contact's thralls,
who drift along life's swirling stream, astray.
But they who Contact comprehend and know, [737]
who fathom all that Contact means,—these, quit
of Contact, find the everlasting Peace.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Feelings . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All Feelings, inly bred or from without, [738]
—with pain or pleasure, or with neither, fraught—
the Almsman knows as Ills,—vain fleeting things [739]
that come and go. From Feelings cleansed, he finds,
when feelings die, the everlasting Peace.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Cravings . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Wedded to Cravings, man perforce must pass [740]
from life to life, must trudge now here, now there,
yet never ends rebirth's exacting round.

Aware that Ills are Cravings' progeny, [741]
quell Cravings; clutch at nothing; watchful be,
O Almsman, as you go your homeless way.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ upādānapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Upādānānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayam dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

19. Upādānapaccayā bhavo; bhūto dukkhaṃ nigacchati; [742]
jātassa maraṇaṃ hoti; eso dukkhassa sambhavo.

20. Tasmā upādānakkhayā samma-d-aññāya paṇḍitā [743]
jātikkhayaṃ abhiññāya nāgacchanti punabbhavaṃ ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ ārambhapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Ārambhānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

21. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ ārambhapaccayā; [744]
ārambhānaṃ nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.

22. Etam ādīnaṃ nātvā: ‘Dukkhaṃ ārambhapaccayā’, [745]
sabbārambhaṃ paṇissajja anārambhe vimuttino

23. ucchinnabhavatanhassa santacittassa bhikkhuno [746]
vitiṇṇo jātisaṃsāro; na ’tthi tassa punabbhavo ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ āhārapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Āhārānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

24. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ āhārapaccayā; [747]
āhārānaṃ nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.

25. Etam ādīnaṃ nātvā: ‘Dukkhaṃ āhārapaccayā’, [748]
sabbāhāraṃ pariññāya sabbāhāraṃ anissito,

26. ārogyaṃ samma-d-aññāya āsavānaṃ parikkhayā [749]
saṃkhāya sevī dhammaṭṭho saṃkhaṃ na upeti vedagū ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathañ ca siyā?—‘Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ inñitapaccayā’ ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; ‘Inñitānaṃ tveva asesavirāgaṇirodhā na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo’ ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athāparaṃ etad avoca Satthā:—

27. Yaṃ kiñci dukkhaṃ sambhoti, sabbaṃ inñitapaccayā; [750]
inñitānaṃ nirodhena na ’tthi dukkhassa sambhavo.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Life's Fuel . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

Life's Fuel feeds existence; what exists [742]
meets Ills; what's born must die; and so springs Ill.

The wise, who see that Fuel's stoppage stops [743]
rebirth, are saved by insight from rebirth.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) toiling and moiling (at good works for 'merit's sake') . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from quest of 'merit' spring; [744]
if 'merit's' quest be stopped, no Ill can grow.

Marking how 'merit's' baleful quest breeds Ills, [745]
the Almsman who discards it all and wins

Release, who craves no more for life renewed [746]
but garners peace of heart, has passed beyond
rebirth and ne'er again shall be reborn.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Sustenance . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Sustenance proceed; [747]
if Sustenance be stopped, no Ills can grow.

Marking how baleful Sustenance breeds Ill, [748]
—plumb, comprehend, forswear all Sustenance!

Know inward Health by casting Cankers out; [749]
walk circumspectly; keep the faith; for, so,
by Lore the sage transcends the scheme of things.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Waverings . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

All growths of Ill from Waverings proceed; [750]
if Waverings be stilled, no Ills can grow.

28. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: 'Dukkhaṃ iñjitapaccayā', [751]
tasmā ejaṃ ossajja, saṃkhāre uparundhiya,
anejo anupādāno sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṃ ca siyā?—'Nissitassa calitaṃ hotīti',—ayam ekānupassanā; 'Anissito na calatīti',—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athâparam etad avoca Satthā:—

29. Anissito na calati; nissito ca upādiyaṃ [752]
ittabbhāvaññathābhāvaṃ saṃsāraṃ nātivattati.
30. Etam ādinavaṃ ñatvā: 'Nissayesu mahabbhayaṃ', [753]
anissito anupādāno sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṃ ca siyā?—'Rūpehi, bhikkhave, āruppā santatarā' ti,—ayam ekānupassanā; 'Āruppehi nirodho santataro' ti,—ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athâparam etad avoca Satthā:—

31. Ye ca rūpūpagā sattā ye ca āruppavāsino, [754]
nirodhaṃ appajānantā āgantāro punabbhavaṃ.
32. Ye ca rūpe pariññāya arūpesu susaṇṭhitā, [755]
nirodhe ye vimuccanti, te janā maccuhāyino ti.

Siyā aññena pi . . . Kathaṃ ca siyā?—Yaṃ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa lokassa samāraḥkassa sabrahmakassa sassamaṇabrāhminīyā pajāya sadevamanussāya: 'Idaṃ saccaṃ' ti upanijjhāyitaṃ, tadam ariyānaṃ: 'Etaṃ musā' ti yathābhūtaṃ sammappaññāya suddiṭṭhaṃ,—ayam ekānupassanā; 'Yaṃ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa—pe—sadevamanussāya: "Idaṃ musā" ti upanijjhāyitaṃ, tadam ariyānaṃ: "Etaṃ saccaṃ" ti yathābhūtaṃ sammappaññāya suddiṭṭhaṃ', ayaṃ dutiyānupassanā. Evaṃ sammā—pe—athâparam etad avoca Satthā:—

33. Anattani attamānaṃ passa lokaṃ sadevakaṃ [756]
niviṭṭhaṃ nāmarūpasmiṃ 'Idaṃ saccaṃ' ti maññati.
34. Yena yena hi maññanti, tato taṃ hoti aññathā; [757]
taṃ hi tassa musā hoti, mosadhammaṃ hi ittaraṃ.
35. Amosadhammaṃ nibbānaṃ;—tad ariyā saccato vidū, [758]
te ve saccābhisamayā nicchātā parinibbutā ti.

Marking how baleful Waverings breed Ills, [751]
 banish distraction; quench each plastic force.
 Still unperturbed, still passionless, alert,
 and watchful, Almsman, go your homeless way.

If you are asked . . . (*similar paragraph about*) Quaking . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

No Quakings trouble independent minds; [752]
 but thralls must tramp life's rounds, now here now there.

Marking how baleful thralldom fosters Ills, [753]
 in independence, Almsman, unattached,
 alert, and watchful, go your homeless way.

If you are asked whether there is yet another way of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that the first conception is that the Formless is calmer than what has Form, whilst the second is that Cessation is calmer than the Formless. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (&c., *as above*) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

The denizens of Form and Formless worlds [754]
 blind to Cessation, face rebirth anew.

But they who, versed in Form and Formlessness, [755]
 have in Cessation found Deliverance,
 in triumph leave behind them Death's domain.

If you are asked whether there is yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that, first, what the world at large deems Truth has been rightly viewed as falsehood by the Noble through their consummate comprehension, whilst, secondly, the Noble hail as Truth what the world accounts falsehood. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas . . . (&c., *as above*) . . . went on, as Master, to say:—

How pride of Self (where Self is none) inflates [756]
 the world of gods and men! How sure they feel
 of personality's undoubted truth!

Picture it as they will, it's all a lie! [757]
 —A lie because all fleeting things are false.

No lie's Nirvana! This the Noble know, [758]
 —they whom from hankerings the Noble Truths
 have freed, and crowned with everlasting Peace.

Siyā aññena pi pariyāyena sammādvayatānupassanā ti?—Iti ce, bhikkhave, pucchitāro assu, ‘siyā’ ti ‘ssu vacanīyā. Kathaṇi ca siyā?—Yaṁ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa—pe—sadevamanussāya ‘Idaṁ sukhā’ ti upanijjhāyitaṁ, tadam ariyānaṁ ‘Etaṁ dukkhaṁ’ ti yathābhūtaṁ sammappaññāya suddiṭṭhaṁ;—ayaṁ ekānupassanā; Yaṁ, bhikkhave, sadevakassa—pe—sadevamanussāya ‘Idaṁ dukkhaṁ’ ti upanijjhāyitaṁ, tadam ariyānaṁ ‘Etaṁ sukhā’ ti yathāpaññāya suddiṭṭhaṁ;—ayaṁ dutiyanupassanā. Evaṁ sammādvayatānupassino kho, bhikkhave, bhikkhuṇo appamattassa ātāpino pahitattassa viharato dvinnāṁ phalānaṁ aññataraṁ phalaṁ pāṭikamkhaṁ,—diṭṭhe va dhamme aññā; sati vā upādisese anāgāmitā ti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā, idaṁ vatvā Sugato athāparaṁ etad avoca Satthā:—

36. Rūpā saddā rasā gandhā phassā dhammā ca kevalā [759]
iṭṭhā kantā manāpā ca, yāvat’ ‘atthīti’ vuccati.
37. Sadevakassa lokassa ete vo sukhasammatā; [760]
yattha c’ ete nirujjhanti, taṁ nesaṁ dukkhasammatāṁ.
38. ‘Sukhaṁ’ ti diṭṭhaṁ ariyehi sakkāyass’ uparodhanaṁ; [761]
paccanīkam idaṁ hoti sabbalokena passataṁ.
39. Yaṁ pare ‘sukhato’ āhu, tad ariyā āhu ‘dukkhato’; [762]
yaṁ pare ‘dukkhato’ āhu, tad ariyā ‘sukhato’ vidū.
—Passa dhammaṁ durājanāṁ; sampamūl’h’ ettha aviddasū.
40. Nivutānaṁ tamo hoti, andhakāro apassataṁ; [763]
sataṇi ca vivaṭaṁ hoti, āloko passatāṁ iva;
santike na vijānanti magā Dhammass’ akovidā.
41. Bhavarāgaparetehi bhavasotānusārihi [764]
Māradheyānupannehi nāyaṁ Dhammo susambudho.
42. Ko nu, aññatra-m-ariyehi, padaṁ sambuddhūṁ arahati, [765]
yaṁ padaṁ samma-d-aññāya parinibbanti anāsava ti?

Idam avoca Bhagavā. Attamanā te bhikkhū Bhagavato bhāsitaṁ abhinandunṁ. Imasmiṁ kho pana veyyākaraṇasmiṁ bhaññamāne saṭṭhimattānaṁ bhikkhūnaṁ anupādāya āsavehi cittāni vimuccisṁsu.

If you are asked whether there is yet another mode of grasping the two ideas, and in what way, you will reply that, first, what the world at large deems Weal has been rightly viewed as Ill by the Noble through their consummate comprehension, whilst, secondly, the Noble hail as Weal what the world accounts Ill. For, if an Almsman fully grasps these two ideas, and if his life is earnest, ardent, and purged of Self, then you may anticipate for him one or other of two results,—either Illumination here and now, or else—if his stuff of existence be not wholly spent—no subsequent return to earth.

Thus spake the Lord; and when he, the Blessed One, had thus spoken, he went on, as Master, to say:—

Forms, sounds, tastes, smell, touch, thoughts—please, charm, and [759]
cheer,

whilst deemed t' exist and have reality.

The world accounts them boons, them hails as Weal. [760]
But when they pass away, they 're ranked as Ills!

The Noble rank as Weal the utter rout [761]
of personality;—on this the Seer
joins issue with the purblind world at large.

The Noble count as 'Ill' the worldling's 'Weal'; [762]
the worldling's 'Ill' the Noble hail as 'Weal'.
—This puzzling thought perplexes empty pates.

Behind the veil is gloom; th' unseeing dwell [763]
in utter darkness. All is clear as day
to virtue's eye, but hid—though nigh at hand—
from brutish strangers to the Doctrine's truth.

This Truth eludes the ken of those who pine [764]
for life's continuance, who drift along
life's swirling stream in Māra's deadly grip.

Who, save the Noble, has a right to know [765]
how, Cankerless, men pass away—to Peace?

Thus spoke the Lord. Glad at heart, those Almsmen rejoiced in what the Lord had said. During this exposition, the hearts of some three score Almsmen were delivered from Cankers once for all.

IV. AṬṬHAKAVAGGA

1. KĀMASUTTA

1. Kāmaṃ kāmayaṃānassa tassa ce taṃ samijjhati, [766]
addhā pītimano hoti laddhā macco yad icchati.
2. Tassa ce kāmayaṃānassa chandajātassa jantuno [767]
te kāmā parihāyanti, sallaviddho va ruppati.
3. Yo kāme parivajjeti—sappassēva padā siro—, [768]
so imaṃ visattikaṃ loke sato samativattati.
4. Khettaṃ vatthuraṃ hiraṇṇaṃ vā gavāssaṃ dāsaporisaṃ [769]
thiyo bandhū puthū kāme yo naro anugijjhati,
5. abalā va naṃ baliyanti, maddante naṃ parissayā; [770]
tato naṃ dukkhaṃ anveti, nāvaṃ bhinnam ivōdakaṃ.
6. Tasmā jantu sadā sato kāmāni parivajjaye; [771]
te pahāya tare oghaṃ, nāvaṃ sitvā va, pārāgū ti.

2. GUHAṬṬHAKASUTTA

1. Satto guhāyaṃ bahunābhichanno
tiṭṭhaṃ naro mohanasmim pagāḷho
dūre vivekā hi tathāvidho so;
kāmā hi loke na hi suppahāyā.
2. Icchānidānā bhavasātabaddhā [773]
te duppamuñcā, na hi aññaṃokkhā,
pacchā pure vā pi apekkhamānā
ime va kāme purime va jappaṃ.

Kāmesu giddhā pasutā pamūḷhā [774]
avadāniyā te visame niviṭṭhā
dukkhūpanitā paridevayanti :—
Kiṃ su bhavissāma ito cutāse?

IV. THE BOOK OF OCTADS

Sutta 1. Desires

The man whose heart's desires are gratified [766]
is glad indeed to see success secured.

But, if his heart's desires and aims be foiled, [767]
he smarts as if a dart had wounded him.

Yet, should he shun desires as he would shun [768]
a snake's head underfoot, by vigilance
he overcomes the world's seductive lures.

Whoso with boundless appetite desires [769]
fields, lands, or gold, herds, horses, women, serfs,
and kinsfolk,—him tumultuous desires

(weak though they seem) o'ercome at last; they crush [770]
their victim. Hereon Ills come surging in,
like waves that flood some wrecked ship's crazy hold.

Therefore by watchfulness discard desires; [771]
expel them; bale your ship; and cross the Flood
to safety's haven on the Further Shore.

Sutta 2. The Octad of the Den

Cooped in a den of clay [772]
o'ergrown with growths and bogged
in crassness dense, a man
is far from inward peace.

For, hard indeed it is
to give up pleasures here.

The creatures of desire, [773]
mere slaves of mundane joys,
shall scarce be saved,—since none
by others can be saved,
who ask to live To-day
or Yesterday afresh.

Through pleasure's hot pursuit, [774]
its frenzied votaries
close-fisted grow and base,
till, plunged in Ills, they cry:—
'What shall we be, when dead?'

4. Tasmā hi sikkhetha idh' eva jantu :
 yaṃ kiñci jaññā 'visamaṃ' ti loke
 na tassa hetu visamaṃ careyya;
 —appaṃ h' idaṃ jīvitam āhu dhīrā. [775]
5. Passāmi loke pariphandamānaṃ
 paṇaṃ imaṃ taṇhagataṃ bhavesu;
 hīnā narā maccumukhe lapanti
 avītatāṇhāse bhavābhavesu. [776]
6. Mamāyite passatha phandamāne,
 macche va appodake khīṇasote;
 etaṃ pi disvā amamo careyya
 bhavesu āsattim akubbamāno. [777]
- Ubhosu antesu vineyya chandaṃ,
 phassaṃ pariññāya anānugiddho,
 yad attagarahī tad akubbamāno
 na lippatī diṭṭhasutesu dhīro. [778]
8. Saññaṃ pariññā vitareyya oghaṃ
 pariggahesu muni nōpalitto
 abbūḥhasallo caraṃ appamatto
 nāsimsatī lokam imaṃ paraṃ ca. [779]

3. DUṬṬHAṬṬHAKASUTTA

1. Vadanti ve duṭṭhamanā pi eke,
 aññe pi ve saccamanā vadanti;
 vādaṃ ca jātaṃ muni no upeti,
 tasmā munī na 'tthi khilo kuhiñci. [780]
2. Sakaṃ hi diṭṭhiṃ katham accayeyya
 chandānunīto ruciya niviṭṭho
 sayam samattāni pakubbamāno?
 —Yathā hi jāneyya, tathā vadeyya. [781]

So learn betimes, learn here
and now. Let nothing base
tempt thee to baseness here.
—This life is brief, say seers.

[775]

I see distracted folk
agog for lives to come,
—abjects who howl in face
of death, through lust to live.

[776]

Parting from cherished things
others distracts,—like fish
stranded when streams give out.
Mark this and self-less walk,
nor pine for lives to come.

[777]

When feelings tempt no more
—at start or close—because
all taste for them is dead,
—then, doing nothing which
his heart condemns, the sage
is proof 'gainst things of sense.

[778]

Aware of senses' scope,
and safe across the Flood,
unstained by hankerings,
the sage—his barb plucked out—
strides bravely on, nor craves
life here, or anywhere.

[779]

Sutta 3. The Octad of Malice

From spite, or honestly,
are charges spread abroad;
but, as all fail to hit
the sage, his heart is light.

[780]

When inclination prompts
and self-will reigns, shall men
desert their cherished views?
—Their outlook shapes their speech.

[781]

3. Yo attano silavatāni jantu
anānupuṭṭho ca paresa' pāvā,
'anariyadhammaṃ' kusalā tam āhu
yo ātumānaṃ sayam eva pāvā. [782]
4. Santo ca bhikkhu abhinibbutatto,
'iti 'han' ti silesu akatthamāno,
tam 'ariyadhammaṃ' kusalā vadanti,
yass' ussādā na 'tthi kuhiñci loke. [783]
5. Pakappitā saṃkhatā yassa dhammā
purakkhatā santi avivadātā;
yad attani passati ānisaṃsaṃ,
tan nissito kuppa-paṭicca-santiṃ. [784]
6. Diṭṭhinivesā na hi svātivattā,
dhammesu niccheyya samuggahītaṃ.
Tasmā naro tesu nivesanesu
nirassati ādiyati-cca dhammaṃ.
7. Dhonassa hi na 'tthi kuhiñci loke
pakappitā diṭṭhi bhavābhavesu;
māyaṇ ca mānaṇ ca pahāya dhono
sa kena gaccheyya?—Anūpayo so. [786]
8. Upayo hi dhammesu upeti vādaṃ;
anūpayam kena kathaṃ vadeyya?
Attam nirattaṃ na hi tassa atthi;
—adhosi so diṭṭhim idh' eva sabbam. [787]

4. SUDDHAṬṬHAKASUTTA

- 'Passāmi suddham paramaṃ arogaṃ;
diṭṭhena saṃsuddhi narassa hoti'
—evābhijānaṃ 'paramaṃ' ti ñatvā,
suddhānupassīti pacceti ñāṇaṃ. [788]

The man who sings, unasked,
his virtue's praise, is styled
'ignoble' by adepts
for talking of himself.

[782]

The Almsman true, at peace,
not vaunting virtues rare,
adepts as 'noble' hail,
because he's not puffed up.

[783]

When wrong conceptions fill
the mind with prejudice,
the man who looks to find
a blessing there, builds hopes
of Peace on shifting sands.

[784]

As rooted prejudice
is hard to quell, a man
should test ideas he holds,
discarding freely, till
he holds the Doctrine's truth.

The inly-washen saint,
now freed from fancies fond
of life hereafter, stripped
of pride and error,—how
place him? He stands apart!

[786]

Their mental states define
men with propensities.
But how define the man
with none?—who nought asserts
and naught denies, but waves
all theories aside?

[787]

Sutta 4. The Octad of Purity

'Lo! man pure, perfect, hale,
made pure by views he holds!'
—Convinced 'perfection's found'
through such imaginings,
'experts in purity'
expect to come to

[788]

2. Diṭṭhena ce suddhi narassa hoti, [789]
 ñāṇena vā so pajahāti dukkhaṃ,
 aññaṇa so sujjhati sôpadhiko;
 —diṭṭhi hi naṃ pāva tathā vadānaṃ.
- Na Brāhmaṇo aññaṇato suddhim āha, [790]
 —diṭṭhe sute silavate mute vā;
 puñña ca pāpe ca anūpalitto
 attañjaho na-y-idha pakubbamāno.
- Purimaṃ pahāya aparaṃ sitāse [791]
 ejaṇugā te na taranti sanghaṃ;
 te uggahāyanti nirassajanti
 kapīva sākhaṃ pamukhaṃ gahāya.
5. Sayam samādāya vatāni jantu [792]
 uccāvacaraṃ gacchati saññaṣatto;
 vidvā ca vedehi samecca Dhammaṃ
 na uccāvacaraṃ gacchati bhūripaṇṇo.
6. Sa sabbadhammesu visenibhūto, [793]
 yaṃ kiñci diṭṭhaṃ va sutam mutaṃ vā,
 tam eva' dassim vivaṭaṃ carantaṃ,—
 kenidha lokasmiṃ vikappayeyya?
7. Na kappayanti, na purekkharonti, [794]
 'accantasuddhīti' na te vadanti;
 ādānaganthaṃ gathitaṃ visajja
 āsaṃ na kubbanti kuhiñci loke.
8. Sīmātigo Brāhmaṇo; tassa na 'tthi [795]
 ñatvā ca disvā ca samuggahitaṃ;
 na rāgarāgī, na virāgaratto;
 tassidaṃ na 'tthi param uggahitaṃ.

If dogma makes men pure,
or if such lore ends Ill,
then something not the Path
makes pure an earthy man
whose views give him the lie.

[789]

‘The Path—not things of sense—
alone brings purity,’
our self-less ‘Brahmin’ says,
by ‘merit’s’ quest unsmirched,
aloof from mundane ends.

[790]

Chopping and changing fails
to calm distracted folk,
—who now hold fast to this,
and now to that, like apes
that skip from bough to bough.

[791]

Self-prompted, slaves of Sense
pursue austerities.
Not so the wise, who *know*,
who grasp the Doctrine’s truth.

[792]

When once man’s thought transcends
what sense-impressions bring,
when, thus inspired, he goes
his clear-eyed way,—what lure
can now unsettle him?

[793]

No idols these set up,
no ‘final purity’
do they affirm, who burst
the chains of hankering
and yearn for nothing more.

[794]

Sinless, the Brahmin true,
through ken and vision, grasps
at nothing; passion-free,
he does not plume himself
on being passionless.
No more has he to learn.

[795]

5. PARAMATTHAKASUTTA

1. 'Paraman' ti diṭṭhīsu paribbasāno [796]
yad uttarimkurute jantu loke,
'hīnā' ti aññe tato sabba-m-āha.
Tasmā vivādāni avitivatto.
2. Yad attanī passati ānisaṃsaṃ [797]
diṭṭhe sute sīlavate mute vā,
tad eva so tattha samuggahāya
nihīnato passati sabbam aññāṃ.
3. Taṃ vāpi 'ganthaṃ' kusalā vadanti [798]
yaṃ nissito passati: Hīnam aññāṃ.
Tasmā hi diṭṭhaṃ va sutāṃ mutāṃ vā
sīlabbataṃ bhikkhu na nissayeyya.
4. Diṭṭhim pi lokasmim na kappayeyya [799]
ñāṇena vā sīlavatena vā pi;
'samo' ti attānaṃ anūpaneyya,
'hīno' na maññetha 'viseṣi' vā pi.
5. Attāṃ pahāya anupādiyāno [800]
ñāṇe pi so nissayaṃ no karoti;
sa ve viyattesu na vaggasārī,
diṭṭhim pi so na pacceti kiñci.
6. Yassūbhayante paṇidhīdha na 'tthi [801]
bhavābhavāya idha vā huraṃ vā,
nivesanā tassa na santi keci,
dhammesu niccheyya samuggahitaṃ;
7. tassīdha diṭṭhe va sute mute vā [802]
pakappitā na 'tthi aṇṇu pi saññā;
—taṃ Brāhmaṇaṃ diṭṭhim anādiyānaṃ
kenīdha lokasmim vikappayeyya?
8. Na kappayanti na purekkharonti; [803]
dhammā pi tesāṃ na paṭicchitāse;
na Brāhmaṇo sīlavatena neyyo;
pāraṃgato na pacceti tādi.

6. JARĀSUTTA

1. Appaṃ vata jīvitaṃ idaṃ; [804]
oraṃ vassasatā pi miyyati;
yo ce pi aticca jīvati,
atha kho so jarasā pi miyyati.

Sutta 5. The Octad of Perfection

The partisan who hugs [796]

the creed he fancies most,
brands rival creeds as 'stuff'.

And so strife dogs his days.

Whatever good he finds [797]

in works or things of sense,
on that he fastens, set
on scouting all things else.

Adepts dismiss as 'clogs' [798]

his claims and arrogance.

So, Almsman, do not build
on works and things of sense;

nor rear on lore or works [799]

a speculative view;

nor claim to be 'as good'

or 'worse' or 'better far'.

Unprejudiced and free, [800]

not based on learning's stores,

owning no sect or school,

holding no theories;

when pray'rs for future life [801]

—on earth, or elsewhere—cease,

when scrutiny of 'creeds'

no dogmas leaves behind;

when things of sense all fail [802]

to wake a conscious thought,

—how place this Brahmin true,

who holds no theories?

Such frame, approve, adopt [803]

no theories at all.

Works prove no 'Brahmin true',

who—saved—returns no more.

Sutta 6. Vita Brevis

Man's years are few, [804]

less than a hundred;

should he drag on,

th' end still is certain.

2. Socanti janā mamāyite; [805]
na hi santi niccā pariggahā;
vinābhāvasantam ev' idam;
iti disvā nāgāram āvase.
3. Maraṇena pi taṃ pahīyati [806]
yaṃ puriso: Mama-y-idan ti maññati.
Evam pi viditvā paṇḍito
na mamattāya nametha māmako.
4. Supinena yathā pi sangataṃ [807]
paṭibuddho puriso na passati,
evam pi piyāyitaṃ janāṃ
petāṃ kālakataṃ na passati.
5. Diṭṭhā pi sutā pi te janā [808]
yesaṃ nāmam idaṃ pavuccati;
nāmam evāvasissati
akkheyyaṃ petassa jantuno.
6. Sokaparidevamaccharaṃ
na jahanti giddhā mamāyite;
tasmā munayo, pariggahaṃ
hitvā, acarimsu khemadassino.
7. Patilīnacarassa bhikkhuno [810]
bhajamānassa vivittam āsanaṃ
sāmaggiyam āhu tassa taṃ,
yo attānaṃ bhavane na dassaye.
8. Sabbattha muni anissito [811]
na piyaṃ kubbatī, no pi appiyaṃ;
tasmīṃ paridevamaccharaṃ,
paṇṇe vāri yathā, na lippati.
9. Udabindu yathā pi pokkhare [812]
padume vāri yathā na lippati,
evaṃ muni nōpalippati
yadidaṃ diṭṭhasutaṃmutesu vā.
10. Dhono na hi tena maññati [813]
yadidaṃ diṭṭhasutaṃmutesu vā,
nāññena visuddhim icchati;
na hi so rajjati no virajjati.

Owning is grief;
belongings last not
but pass away.
Quit house and home then! [805]

Death takes what men
deem their possessions. [806]
Disciple mine,
lay claim to nothing.

As, when we wake, [807]
dream faces vanish,
so pass from view
ghosts of man's dear ones.

We see and hear [808]
friends, by their names known;
but, when they pass,
only their names stay.

Grief, grudging, wails [809]
dog th' itch for owning,
sages find Peace
by owning nothing.

To live aloof [810]
in contemplation,
befits the leal
whose journeys are done.

Detached, the sage [811]
keeps down affections;
—grief, grudging, wails,
like raindrops, are shed.

Just as no splash [812]
sullies the lotus,
so senses leave
sages unsullied;

Cleans'd, they build hopes [813]
neither on senses
nor aught besides;
they're past all passion.

7. TISSAMETTEYYASUTTA

1. Methunam anuyuttassa vighātaṃ brūhi, mārisa; [814]
(*icc-āyasmā Tisso Metteyyo*)
sutvāna tava sāsanaṃ viveke sikkhisāmase.
2. Methunam anuyuttassa mussat' evāpi sāsanaṃ, [815]
(*Metteyyāti Bhagavā*)
micchā ca paṭipajjati;—etaṃ tasmaṃ anāriyaṃ.
3. Eko pubbe caritvāna methunaṃ yo nisevati, [816]
yānaṃ bhantaṃ va, taṃ loke 'hīnaṃ' āhu 'puthujjanaṃ'.
4. Yaso kitti ca yā pubbe hāyat' evāpi tassa sā; [817]
etaṃ pi disvā sikkhetha methunaṃ vipphāṭave.
5. Saṃkappehi pareto so kapaṇo viya jhāyati; [818]
sutvā paresaṃ nigghosaṃ manku hoti tathāvidho.
6. Atha satthāni kurute paravādehi codito; [819]
esa khvassa mahāgedho, mosavajjaṃ pagāhati.
7. Paṇḍito ti samaññāto ekacariyaṃ adhiṭṭhito, [820]
athāpi methune yutto mando va parikissati.
8. Etaṃ ādīnavaṃ ñatvā muni pubbāpare idha [821]
ekacariyaṃ daḥhaṃ kayirā, na nisevetha methunaṃ.
9. Vivekaṃ yeva sikkhetha; etad ariyānaṃ uttamaṃ; [822]
tena seṭṭho na maññetha; sa ve nibbānasantike.
10. Rittassa munino carato kāmesu anapekhino [823]
oghatiṇṇassa pihayanti kāmesu gadhitā pajā ti.

8. PASŪRASUTTA

1. 'Idh' eva suddhim' iti vādiyanti, [824]
nāññesu dhammesu visuddhim āhu;
yaṃ nissitā, tattha subhā vadānā
paccekasaccesu puthū nivīṭṭhā.

Sutta 7. Lechery

Tissa Metteyya: Tell us what harm befalls a lecher, sir,
that we, thus schooled by thee, in privacy
may put in practice what thou shalt enjoin.

The Lord: In wickedness, outside my Doctrine's pale,
the lecher lives a base, ignoble life.

'Low, headlong renegade!' is what they call
an anchorite who stoops to lechery.

His old repute is gone; his fame departs.
Be warned; with all your might shun lechery!

Lewd thoughts engross his abject 'reveries', [818]
—whom others' censure leaves morose and glum,

until, to arm his wrath when thus reproached, [819]
(his itch is such!) to lying he resorts.

Reputed wise—whilst upright anchorite— [820]
he's scouted as a dolt for lechery.

These perils known, a sage should straitly walk [821]
alone, aloof, eschewing lechery.

Live then aloof (no nobler life exists!) [822]
yet not puffed up.—Nirvāna's well-nigh won!

Emancipate, from passion freed, the sage
in safety stands upon the Further Shore,
—envied by all whom passion's bonds enslave.

Sutta 8. Warring Sects

Each claims that Purity [824]
abides with him alone,
—but not in rival creeds;
and, though no two agree,
each vaunts his nostrum sound.

2. Te vādakāmā parisam vigayha
bālaṃ dahanti mithu aññamaññaṃ;
vadanti te aññasitā kathojjaṃ
pasaṃsakāmā kusalā vadānā. [825]
3. Yutto kathāyaṃ parisāya majjhe
pasaṃsam icchaṃ vinighāti hoti;
apāhatasmim̐ pana manku hoti,
nindāya so kuppati randhamesī. [826]
4. Yam assa vādaṃ 'parihīnam' āhu
apāhataṃ pañhavimariṃsakāse,
paridevati socati hīnavādo;
'upaccagā man' ti anutthunāti.
5. Ete vivādā 'samaṇesu' jātā;
etesu ugghātinighāti hoti;
etaṃ pi disvā virame kathojjaṃ;
na h' aññadatth' atthi pasaṃsalābhā. [828]
6. Pasaṃsito vā pana tattha hoti
akkhāya vādaṃ parisāya majjhe,
so hassati uṇṇamati-cca tena
pappuyya taṃ atthaṃ yathā mano ahu. [829]
7. Yā uṇṇati sā 'ssa vighātabhūmi,
mānātimānaṃ vadate paṇ' eso;
etaṃ pi disvā na vivādayetha,
na hi tena suddhiṃ kusalā vadanti. [830]
8. Sūro yathā rājakhadāya puṭṭho
abhiḡajjam eti paṭisūram icchaṃ,
yeṇ' eva so, tena palehi, sūra;
pubb' eva na 'tthi yadidaṃ yudhāya. [831]
9. Ye diṭṭhim uggayha vivādiyanti,
idaṃ eva saccaṃ ti ca vādiyanti,
te tvam vadassu: Na hi te 'dha atthi
vādamhi jāte paṭisenikattā.
10. Visenikatvā pana ye caranti
diṭṭhīhi diṭṭhiṃ avirujjhamānā,
tesu tvaṃ kiṃ labhetho, Pasūra,
yesīdha na 'tthi param uggahītaṃ? [833]

Hot for debate, they meet;
[825] each dubs the other 'fool';
with party arguments
these 'experts' wrangle on,
posing for public praise.

Eager to win the day,
[826] debaters dread defeat,
sit glum when posers come,
and writhe in shame when floored.

And if the judges find
[827] against him and he fails,
in anguish and with tears
he sobs: 'He's beaten me!'

Let outside anchorites
[828] wage suchlike wordy wars,
to win or lose the day!
—Shun strife; scorn empty praise.

But should he win the day,
[829] and praise be his, loud rings
his laugh; he swells with pride
to gain the prize he sought.

His triumph lays him low;
[830] since pride now fills his talk.
—Learn then to shun debate;
not thence comes Purity.

As with defiant shout
[831] the king's trained champion
goes forth to find his match,
so seek thy foe,—though thou
hast nothing left to quell!

But as for partisans
[832] who deem truth theirs alone,
tell them, if wrangling starts,
you enter not their lists.

To Pasūra, With saints whose fight is won,
[833] *a Wanderer:* who pit no theory
against your theories,
—how can you cope with minds
withdrawn from earthly things?

11. Atha tvaṃ pavitakkam āgamā [834]
 manasā diṭṭhigatāni cintayanto,
 dhonena yugaṃ samāgamā,
 na hi tvaṃ sakkhasi sampayātave.

9. MĀGANDIYASUTTA

Disvāna Taṇhaṃ Aratīṃ ca Rāgaṃ [835]
 nāhosi chando api methunasmiṃ.
 Kim ev' idaṃ muttakarīsapuṇṇaṃ?
 Pādā pi naṃ samphusituṃ na icche.

2. Etādisaṃ ce ratanaṃ na icchasi [836]
 —nāriṃ narindehi bahūhi patthitaṃ—,
 diṭṭhigataṃ sīlavatānujivitaṃ
 bhavūpapattiṃ ca vadesi kīdisaṃ?

3. Idaṃ vadāmīti na tassa hoti (Māgandiyāti Bhagavā) [837]
 dhammesu niccheyya samuggahitaṃ,
 passaṃ ca diṭṭhisu anuggahāya
 ajjhattasantiṃ pacinaṃ adassaṃ.

4. Vinicchayā yāni pakappitāni (iti Māgandiyō) [838]
 te ve, muni, brūsi anuggahāya,
 'ajjhattasantīti' yam etaṃ atthaṃ
 kathaṃ nu dhīrehi paveditaṃ taṃ?

5. Na diṭṭhiyā na sutiyaṃ na nāṇena (Māgandiyāti Bhagavā) [839]
 sīlabbatenāpi na suddhim āha,
 adiṭṭhiyā assutiyaṃ aññāṇā
 asīlatā abbatā no pi tena;
 ete ca nissajja anuggahāya
 santo anissāya bhavaṃ na jappe.

6. No ce kira diṭṭhiyā na sutiyaṃ na nāṇena (iti Māgandiyō) [840]
 sīlabbatenāpi visuddhim āha,
 adiṭṭhiyā assutiyaṃ aññāṇā
 asīlatā abbatā no pi tena;
 —maññāmaṃ' ahaṃ momuham eva dhammaṃ.
 Diṭṭhiyā eke paccenti suddhim.

Inspired by theories,
 you came to controvert;
 you sought to match the Cleansed,
 but cannot compass it!

Sutta 9. Beauty Scorned

The Lord: If Māra's daughters three [835]
 could wake no carnal thought,
 —what bag of excrements
 is this?—I would not touch
 her even with my foot!

Māgandiya: If you refuse this pearl [836]
 (a maid whom princes court),
 declare your creed and rule,
 your practices and life;
 declare what stage you 've reached.

The Lord: I preach no dogmas drawn [837]
 from all the divers 'views'.
 Study rejected these,
 and Thought found Inward Peace.

Māgandiya: Scouting concocted views, [838]
 you speak of Inward Peace.
 How would that form of Weal
 by experts be described?

The Lord: Not 'views' or hearsay, lore [839]
 or works, give Purity;
 —nor does the lack of them.
 Discard all this; win calm;
 be free; crave no rebirth.

Māgandiya: If you say Purity [840]
 proceeds from none of these,
 nor from the lack of them,
 'tis nonsense what you say.
 —From 'views' some men get Light.

7. Diṭṭhīsu nissāya anupucchamāno, (*Māgandīyāti Bhagavā*) [841]
 samuggahītesu pamoham āgā;
 ito ca nādakkhī aṇum pi saññaṃ;
 tasmā tuvaṃ momuhato dahāsi.
8. 'Samo vīsēi uda vā nihīno' [842]
 yo maññaṭi, so vivadetha tena;
 tīsu vīdhāsu avikampamāno—
 'samo, vīsēti' na tassa hoti.
9. 'Saccaṇ' ti so Brāhmaṇo kiṃ vadeyya? [843]
 'Musā ti' vā so vivadetha kena?
 Yasmiṃ samaṃ visamaṃ cāpi na 'tthi,
 sa kena vādaṃ paṭisaṃyujeyya?
10. Okam pahāya aniketasārī, [844]
 gāme akubbaṃ muni santhavāni,
 kāmehi ritto, apurakkharāno,
 kathaṃ na viggayha janena kayirā.
11. Yehi vivitto vicareyya loke, [845]
 na tāni ugghayha vadeyya Nāgo.
 Elambujāṃ kaṇṭakavārijaṃ yathā
 jalena pankena c' anūpalittaṃ,
 evaṃ muni santivado agiddho
 kāme ca loke ca anūpalitto.
12. Na vedagū diṭṭhiyā na mutiyā [846]
 sa mānam eti, na hi tammayo so;
 na kammunā no pi sutena neyyo;
 anūpanīto so nivesanesu.
13. Saññāvirattassa na santi ganthā;
 paññāvimuttassa na santi mohā;
 saññaṇ ca diṭṭhiṇ ca ye aggahesum
 te ghaṭṭayantā vicaranti loke.

10. PURĀBHEDASUTTA

1. Kathaṃdassī kathaṃsilo 'upasanto' ti vuccati? [848]
 Tam me, Gotama, pabrūhi pucchito uttamaṃ naraṃ.

Lord: Pet views your questions prompt.

[841]

By prejudice misled,
you so mistake my point
that nonsense it appears.

‘He’s my inferior’,

[842]

‘my better’ or ‘as good’,

—such thoughts breed strife. No strife
is his who knows no grades.

When this is meaningless,

[843]

how can a Brahmin true
dub this thing ‘true’, that ‘false’?
or start a wordy war?

The homeless wanderer,
who makes no intimates
and scorns delights and grades,
steers clear of bickerings.

[844]

Nor will the sage profess
that which his life disowns.

[845]

As mud and water leave
unsoiled their denizen,
the lotus,—so the world
and pleasures cannot soil
the want-less sage’s Peace.

No ‘views’, no things of sense,
inflate a sage with pride;
—’tis not his nature. Works
and lore are not his guides;
no errors cabin him.

[846]

When sense-impressions cease,
chains snap. Illusions pass
when comprehension brings
Release. But those who cling
to ‘views’ and things of sense,
spread discord all around.

[847]

Sutta 10. Ere Dissolution Comes

An Enquirer: What insight and what conduct make ‘a saint’?
Pray, Gotama, portray the perfect man.

[848]

2. Vītataṇho purā bhedā, pubbam antam anissito [849]
 (ti Bhagavā)
 vemajjhe n' upasamkheyyo, tassa na 'tthi purakkhataṃ;
3. akkodhano asantāsi avikatthī akukkuko [850]
 mantābhāṇī anuddhato,—sa ve vācāyato munī;
4. nirāsattī anāgate atītaṃ nānusocati, [851]
 vivekadassī phassesu diṭṭhīsu ca na niyyati,
5. patilīno akuhako apihālu amaccharī [852]
 appagabbho ajeguccho pesuṇeyye ca no yuto,
6. sātiyesu anassāvi atimāne ca no yuto [853]
 saṇho ca paṭibhāṇavā na saddho, na virajjati,
7. lābhakamyā na sikkhati, alābhe ca na kuppati, [854]
 aviruddho ca taṇhāya rase ca nānugijjhati;
8. upekkhako sadā sato na loke maññati samam, [855]
 na visesī na nīceyyo,—tassa no santi ussādā;
9. yassa nissayatā na 'tthi, ñatvā Dhammaṃ anissito, [856]
 bhavāya vibhavāya ca taṇhā yassa na vijjati,
10. —taṃ brūmi 'upasanto' ti kāmesu anapekkhinaṃ; [857]
 ganthā tassa na vijjanti; atāri so visattikaṃ.
11. Na tassa puttā pasavo khettaṃ vatthuṃ ca vijjati [858]
 attāṃ vā pi nirattaṃ vā na tasmim upalabbhati.
12. Yena vajjuṃ puthujjanā atho samaṇabrāhmaṇā, [859]
 taṃ tassa apurakkhataṃ, tasmā vādesu n' ejati.
13. Vītagedho amaccharī na ussesu vadate muni [860]
 na samesu na omesu, kappam n' eti akappiyo.
14. Yassa loke sakaṃ na 'tthi, asatā ca na socati, [861]
 dhammesu ca na gacchati, sa ve 'santo' ti vuccati.

II. KALAHAVIVĀDASUTTA

Kuto pahūtā kalahā vivādā [862]
 paridevasokā sahamaccharā ca
 mānātimānā sahapesuṇā ca?
 Kuto pahūtā te? Tad ingha brūhi.

- The Lord:* Ere dissolution comes, all cravings cease; [849]
 he recks not how of old the world began;
 he finds no present place in time to-day;
 he has no preference for which he sighs;
 devoid of wrath and dread, remorse and vaunts,
 a preacher sane, a 'saint' controls his words;
 no future hopes has he, no past regrets; [851]
 no sense-impressions mar his inward life;
 aloof and guileless, freed from hankerings [852]
 and envy, meek, he scorns and slanders none;
 no joys allure him; pride is far away; [853]
 courtly, he shines; detached, not credulous;
 at gifts he aims not,—nor resents their lack; [854]
 he nothing craves; no dainty fare allures;
 poised, vigilant, he never ranks himself [855]
 as 'high', or 'low', or 'equal to the best';
 since self-assertion finds no place in 'saints';
 an independent man, whom grasp of Truth [856]
 makes independent, who gives harbourage
 to no desire to be or not to be;
 —him do I style the 'Saint at peace'; no chains [857]
 are his; he's safe beyond entanglements.
 No sons has he, no herds or fields or lands; [858]
 no 'yes' or 'no' has he for views on 'Self'.
 Ignoring what the world (nay, holy men!) [859]
 impute to them, 'saints' reckon not what folk say.
 Grasping not, grudging not, the saint, unmoved, [860]
 to 'high', or 'low', or 'equal' lays no claim;
 timeless, he whirls down grooves of time no more.
 Whoso owns nothing in the world, nor grieves [861]
 o'er what is transient, nor wanders off
 to sense-impressions,—*he* is hailed as 'saint'.

Sutta 11. Contentions

- An Enquirer:* Whence springs the seething mass [862]
 of bickerings and strife,
 tears, grief, and selfishness,
 conceit, pride, calumny?
 Explain whence these proceed.

2. Piṇḍapahūtā kalahā vivādā [863]
 paridevasokā sahamaccharā ca
 mānātimānā sahapesuṇā ca ;
 maccherayuttā kalahā vivādā,
 vivādajātesu ca pesuṇāni.
3. Piṇḍa su lokasmiṃ kutonidānā, [864]
 ye vā pi lobhā vicaranti loke ?
 Āsā ca niṭṭhā ca kutonidānā
 ye samparāyāya narassa honti?
4. Chandānidānāni piṇḍāni loke [865]
 ye vā pi lobhā vicaranti loke ;
 āsā ca niṭṭhā ca itonidānā
 ye samparāyāya narassa honti.
5. Chando nu lokasmiṃ kutonidāno? [866]
 Vinicchayā vā pi kuto pahūtā,
 kodho mosavajjaṇi ca kathamkathā ca
 ye vā pi dhammā Samaṇena vuttā?
6. Sātaṃ, asātaṃ ti yam āhu loke, [867]
 tam upanissāya pahoti chando ;
 rūpesu disvā vibhavaṃ bhavaṃ ca
 vinicchayaṃ kūrute jantu loke.
7. Kodho mosavajjaṇi ca kathamkathā ca [868]
 ete pi dhammā dvaya-m-eva sante ;
 kathamkathā nānapathāya sikkhe,
 ñatvā pavuttā Samaṇena dhammā.
8. Sātaṃ asātaṃ ca kutonidānā? [869]
 Kismim asante na bhavanti h' ete ?
 Vibhavaṃ bhavaṃ cāpi, yam etam atthaṃ,
 etam me pabrūhi yattonidānaṃ.
9. Phassanidānaṃ sātaṃ asātaṃ ; [870]
 phasse asante na bhavanti h' ete,
 vibhavaṃ bhavaṃ cāpi, yam etam atthaṃ,
 etaṃ te pabrūmi itonidānaṃ.

The Lord: Affections breed the mass
 of bickerings and strife,
 tears, grief, and selfishness,
 conceit, pride, calumny.
 With selfishness there come
 all bickerings and strife,
 —which lead to calumny. [863]

The Enquirer: Say whence affections spring? [864]
 What makes ambitions grow?
 What fosters hopes and fears
 in man for future life?

The Lord: Affections spring from wants, [865]
 which make ambitions grow
 and foster hopes and fears
 in men for future life.

The Enquirer: Whence spring man's wants? Whence come [866]
 all hard and fast beliefs?
 Whence wrath, lies, doubts, and all
 things else th' Recluse denounced?

The Lord: Things viewed as 'good' or 'bad' [867]
 originate man's wants.
 Seeing things wax and wane
 brought hard and fast beliefs.

Wrath, doubts, and lies arose [868]
 when things seemed 'good' or 'bad'.
 Let doubters plant their feet
 where knowledge guides;—th' Recluse
 denounced defects he knew.

The Enquirer: Whence spring things 'good' or 'bad'? [869]
 What, being absent, checks
 their rise? And tell me too
 why things must wax and wane?

The Lord: Things 'good' or 'bad' are bred [870]
 of Contact. Contact must
 be there, or they're not bred,
 nor would things wax and wane.

10. Phasso nu lokasmiṃ kutonidāno? [871]
 Pariggahā vā pi kuto pahūtā?
 Kismiṃ asante na mamattam atthi?
 Kismiṃ vibhūte na phusanti phassā?
11. Nāmañ ca rūpañ ca paṭicca phasso; [872]
 icchānidānāni pariggahāni;
 icchāy' asantya na mamattam atthi;
 rūpe vibhūte na phusanti phassā.
12. Kathaṃsametassa vibhoti rūpaṃ? [873]
 Sukhaṃ dukkhaṃ vā pi kathaṃ vibhoti?
 Etam me pabrūhi yathā vibhoti;
 taṃ jāniyāma, iti me mano ahu.
13. Na saññasaññī, na visaññasaññī, [874]
 no pi asaññī, na vibhūtasaññī,
 —evaṃsametassa vibhoti rūpaṃ;
 saññānidānā hi papañcasamkhā.
14. Yan tam apucchimha akittayī no; [875]
 —aññaṃ taṃ pucchāma; tad ingha brūhi:
 Ettāvat' aggaṃ nu vadanti h' eke
 yakkhassa suddhiṃ idha paṇḍitāse?
 Udāhu aññaṃ pi vadanti etto?
15. Ettāvat' aggaṃ pi vadanti h' eke [876]
 yakkhassa suddhiṃ idha paṇḍitāse;
 tesaṃ pun' eke samayaṃ vadanti
 anupādisese kusalā vadānā.
16. Ete ca ñatvā 'upanissitā' ti,
 ñatvā munī nissaye so vimaṃsī,
 ñatvā vimutto na vivādam eti,
 bhavābhavāya na sameti dhīro.

The Enquirer: From what does Contact spring?
 Whence comes the itch to own?
 What, being absent, checks
 the craze to deem things 'mine'?
 And what must disappear
 if Contacts are to end?

The Lord: Matter and Mind result [872]
 in Contact. Yearnings breed
 the itch to have and hold;
 without them is no 'mine'.—
 End 'matter',— Contacts end.

The Enquirer: What stage is his for whom [873]
 'matter' has disappeared?
 Fain would I hear how pain
 and pleasure disappear.

The Lord: Matter will disappear [874]
 when consciousness (from which
 obsessions all arise)
 is neither usual,
 nor crazed, nor numbed, nor lost.

The Enquirer: Though thou hast answer'd all [875]
 we asked, one question more
 we raise for thy reply:—
 Do thinkers hold this life
 perfects man's Purity?
 Or is there more to come?

The Lord: Some thinkers hold this life [876]
 perfects man's Purity;
 but other 'experts' hold
 the view that death ends all.

The sage knows such as 'thralls'; [877]
 he knows their thralldom. Freed
 by knowledge, he avoids
 debate and wisely holds
 no truck with theories
 about an 'after-life'.

12. CŪLAVIYŪHASUTTA

1. Sakam sakam diṭṭhiparibbasānā [878]
viggayha nānā kusalā vadanti:—
Yo evam jānāti, sa vedi dhammaṃ;
idaṃ paṭikkosaṃ akevali so.
2. Evam pi viggayha vivādiyanti, [879]
'bālo paro akusalo' ti cāhu.
Sacco nu vādo katamo imesaṃ?
Sabb' eva hīme kusalā vadānā.
3. Parassa ce dhammaṃ anānujānaṃ [880]
bālōmako hoti nihīnapaññaṃ,
sabb' eva bālā sunihīnapaññaṃ,
sabb' ev' ime diṭṭhiparibbasānā.
4. Sandiṭṭhiyā ce pana vīvadātā [881]
saṃsuddhapañña kusalā mutimā,
na tesam koci parihīnapañña;
—diṭṭhi hi tesam pi tathā samattā.
5. Na vāham etaṃ 'tathivan' ti brūmi [882]
yam āhu bālā mithu aññamaññaṃ;
sakam sakam diṭṭhiṃ akaṃsu saccaṃ;
—tasmā hi 'bālo' ti paraṃ dahanti.
6. Yam āhu 'saccaṃ tathivan' ti eke, [883]
tam āhu aññe pi 'tuccham musā' ti;
—evam pi viggayha vivādiyanti.
Kasmā na ekaṃ samaṇā vadanti?
7. Ekaṃ hi saccaṃ na dutiyam atthi [884]
yasmim pajā no vivade pajānaṃ;
nānā te saccāni sayam thunanti;
tasmā na ekaṃ samaṇā vadanti.
8. Kasmā nu saccāni vadanti nānā [885]
pavādiyāse kusalā vadānā?
Saccāni suddhāni bahūni nānā?
Udāhu te takkam anussaranti?

Sutta 12. Rejoinders

The Enquirer: Fixed in their pet beliefs,
these divers wranglers bawl— [878]
‘Hold this, and truth is yours;’
‘Reject it, and you ’re lost’.

Thus they contend, and dub [879]
opponents ‘dolts’ and ‘fools’.
Which of the lot is right,
when all as experts pose?

The Lord: Well, if dissent denotes [880]
a ‘fool’ and stupid ‘dolt’,
then all are fools and dolts,
—since each has his own view.

Or, if each rival creed [881]
proves lore and brains and wit,
no ‘dolts’ exist,—since all
alike are on a par.

I count not that as true [882]
which those affirm, who call
each other ‘fools’.—They call
each other so, because
each deems his own view ‘Truth’.

The Enquirer: What some style ‘truth’, the rest [883]
call empty lies;—strife reigns.
Pray, why do anchorites
not speak in unison?

The Lord: There’s one sole ‘Truth’ (not two), [884]
to know which bars men’s strife.
But such a motley crowd
of ‘truths’ have they evolved,
that anchorites, perforce,
speak not in full accord.

The Enquirer: What makes these ‘experts’ preach [885]
‘truths’ so diverse? Is each
inherited? or just
a view they’ve framed themselves?

9. Na h' eva saccāni bahūni nānā
aññatra saññāya niccāni loke,
takkañ ca diṭṭhisu pakappayitvā
saccaṃ musā ti dvayadhammam āhu. [886]
10. Diṭṭhe sute sīlavate mute vā
ete ca nissāya vimānadassī
vinicchaye tathā pahassamāno
'bālo paro, akusalo' ti c' āha. [887]
11. Yen' eva 'bālo' ti paraṃ dahāti,
ten' ātumānaṃ 'kusalo' ti c' āha;
sayam attanā so kusalo vadāno
aññaṃ vimāneti, tath' eva pāvā.
12. Atisaraṃdiṭṭhiyā so samatto
mānena matto paripuṇṇamānī,
sayam eva sāmāṃ manasābhisitto,
diṭṭhī hi sā tassa tathā samattā. [889]
13. Parassa ce hi vacasā nihīno,
tumo sahā hoti nihīnapañño;
athavā sayam vedagū hoti dhīro,
na koci bālo samaṇesu attthī. [890]
14. Aññaṃ ito yābhivadanti dhammaṃ,
aparaddhā suddhim akevalī te;
evam pi titthyā puthuso vadanti,
sandiṭṭhirāgena hi tyābhirattā. [891]
15. 'Idh' eva suddhim' iti vādiyanti,
nāññesu dhammesu visuddhim āhu,
evam pi titthyā puthuso niviṭṭhā
sakāyane tattha daḥhaṃ vadānā. [892]
16. Sakāyane cāpi daḥhaṃ vadāno
kam ettha 'bālo' ti paraṃ daheyya?
Sayam eva so medhagaṃ āvaheyya
paraṃ vadaṃ 'bālam asuddhidhammaṃ'. [893]

The Lord: Apart from consciousness,
no diverse Truths exist.
—Mere sophistry declares
this 'true', and that view 'false'.

[886]

The senses' evidence,
and works, inspire such scorn
for others, and such smug
conviction *he* is right,
that all his rivals rank
as 'sorry, brainless fools'.

[887]

When he admits himself
to 'expert's' rank and style;
—this fires his scorn anew
and off he starts again.

Chock-full of error, drunk
with pride and arrogance,
he inly consecrates
himself a 'sage',—so grand
is his perfected 'view'.

[889]

When scorned opponents dub
him 'low' in turn, he too
joins the 'low intellects'.
If each can make himself
a 'sage', then anchorites
include no 'fools' at all.

[890]

Delight in their dear views
makes sectaries assert
that all who disagree
'miss Purity and err'.

[891]

These divers sectaries
—these sturdy advocates
of private paths to bliss—
claim Purity as theirs
alone, not found elsewhere.

[892]

Whom should the sturdiest
venture to call a 'fool',
when this invites the like
retort upon himself?

[893]

17. Vinicchaye t̥hatvā sayam pamāya [894]
 uddham so lokasmiṃ vivādam eti.
 Hitvāna sabbāni vinicchayāni
 na medhagam̐ kurute jaṇtu loke.

13. MAHĀVIYŪHASUTTA

1. Ye kec' ime diṭṭhiparibbasānā [895]
 'idam eva saccaṃ' ti pavādiyanti,
 sabb' eva te nindam anvānayaṇti?
 Atho pasamsam pi labhanti tattha?

2. Appam̐ hi etaṃ, na alaṃ samāya; [896]
 duve vivādassa phalāni brūmi;
 evam pi disvā na vivādiyetha
 khemābhupassam̐ avivādabhummaṃ.

Yā kāc' imā sammutiyo puthujjā, [897]
 sabbā va etā na upeti vidvā.
 Anūpayo so upayam̐ kim eyya
 diṭṭhe sute khantim akubbamāno?

4. Siluttamā samyamena' āhu suddhim [898]
 vataṃ samādāya upaṭṭhitāse,
 —idh' eva sikkhema, ath' assa suddhim,
 bhavūpanitā kusalā vadānā.

5. Sace cuto silavatāto hoti, [899]
 sa vedhati kamma' virādhayitvā,
 sa jappati patthayati ca suddhim,
 —sattā va hīno, pavasaṃ gharamhā.

6. Silabbataṃ vāpi pahāya sabbaṃ [900]
 kammaṃ ca sāvajjanavajjam̐ etaṃ
 suddhim̐ asuddhim̐ ti apatthayāno
 virato care 'santim' anuggahāya.

Stubborn in theories
 which they themselves devised,
 these wrangle on through life.
 —Leave then dogmatic views
 and their attendant strife!

Sutta 13. More Rejoinders

The Enquirer: Take those who dogmatize [895]
 and lay sole claim to Truth;
 —is blame their constant fate?
 Are they not praised as well?

The Lord: Yes;—though a trifling thing [896]
 is all of this (I speak
 of both results of strife)
 and does not lead to Peace.
 Wherefore shun strife and aim
 at Peace,—which knows no strife.

No vulgar theories [897]
 engage the wise. Why should
 the free seek bondage, when
 phenomena of sense
 appeal to them no more?

They that place practice first, [898]
 deeming that regimen
 wins Purity, take vows
 to practise only what
 their 'master taught as pure',
 —experts self-styled, who cling
 to mere phenomena!

Should one depart from 'Rule', [899]
 he quakes, and frets, and pines,
 like travellers astray
 who lose their caravan.

Scout then all formal codes [900]
 of things 'unmeet' and 'meet';
 heed not their 'purity',
 —nor their impurity;
 but walk aloof; ensue
 no 'peace' they advocate.

Tamūpanissāya jigucchitaṃ vā,
athavā pi diṭṭhaṃ va sutaṃ mutaṃ vā,
uddhaṃsarā suddhim anutthunanti
avītataṇhāse bhavābhavesu.

8. Patthayamānassa hi jappitāni [902]
saṃvedhitaṃ vāpi pakappitesu.
Cutūpapāto idha yassa na 'tthi,
sa kena vedheyya? kuhiṃ pajappe?
9. Yam āhu 'dhammaṃ paraman' ti eke,
tam eva 'hīnan' ti pan' āhu aññe.
Sacco nu vādo katamo imesaṃ?
—Sabb' eva hīme kusalā vadānā.
10. Sakaṃ hi dhammaṃ paripuṇṇam āhu; [904]
aññassa dhammaṃ pana hīnam āhu.
Evam pi viggayha vivādiyanti,
sakaṃ sakaṃ sammutim āhu saccaṃ.
11. Parassa ce vambhayitena hīno,
na koci dhammesu visesi assa.
Puthū hi aññassa vadanti dhammaṃ
'nihīnato', samhi dāḥaṃ vadānā.
12. Sadhammapūjā ca panā tath' eva; [906]
yathā paraṃsanti sakāyanāni
sabbe pavādā tathivā bhaveyyurū;
suddhī hi nesaṃ paccattam eva.
13. Na Brāhmaṇassa paraneyyam atthi, [907]
dhammesu niccheyya samuggahitaṃ.
Tasmā vivādāni upātivatto;
na hi seṭṭhato passati dhammam aññaṃ.
14. 'Jānāmi, passāmi, tath' eva etaṃ', [908]
diṭṭhiyā eke paccenti suddhiṃ.
Addakkhi ce, kim hi tumassa tena?
—Atisitvā aññena vadanti suddhiṃ.

Penance, and loathliness,
and things of sense, evoke
shrill shrieks for 'purity'
from men who hanker still
to be reborn—somewhere.

[901]

Desires breed hopes; and fears
spring from imaginings.
—But he who ne'er shall see
rebirth, pray, what shall make
him quake? or yearn—for what?

[902]

The Enquirer: The doctrine some vaunt 'best',
others term 'low'. Which states
the fact?—They're all 'adepts'.

The Lord: Ah! 'tis his own dear creed
which each proclaims as 'rare'!
His rival's creed is 'low'!
And so they squabble on,
each claiming truth as *his*!

[904]

If others' criticisms
could make a doctrine 'low',
then none is excellent;
for all unite to damn
all doctrines—save their own.

[905]

As they extol their 'Way',
so they revere their creeds.
Their tune is still the same:
'Our Purity's its theme.

[906]

The 'Brahmin true' adopts
nothing from others, owes
nothing to others' views;
immune from strife, he deems
no theory 'the Truth'.

[907]

'Tis so; I see and know'
—say some, who seek by views
to garner 'Purity'.
Yet, should they 'see', what good
is that when rivals urge
a view rebutting theirs?

[908]

15. Passaṃ naro dakkhati nāmarūpaṃ, [909]
 disvāna vāññassati tāni-m-eva.
 Kāmaṃ bahuṃ passatu appakaṃ vā;
 na hi tena suddhiṃ kusalā vadanti.
16. Nivissavādī na hi subbināyo [910]
 pakappitaṃ diṭṭhi' purekkharāno;
 yaṃ nissito, tattha subhaṃ vadāno
 suddhiṃvado tattha tath' addasā so.
17. Na Brāhmaṇo kappam upeti sankhaṃ [911]
 na diṭṭhisārī na pi ñāṇabandhu;
 ñatvā ca so sammutiyo puthujjā,
 upekkhatī;—uggahaṇanti-m-aññe.
18. Visajja ganthāni munīdha loka
 vivāda-jātesu na vaggasārī,
 santo asantesu upekkhako so
 anuggaho;—uggahaṇanti-m-aññe.
19. Pubbāsava hitvā, nave akubbaṃ,
 na chandagū, no pi nivissavādī,
 sa vippamutto diṭṭhigatehi dhīro
 na lippati loka anattagarahī.
20. Sa sabbadhammesu visenibhūto,
 yaṃ kiñci diṭṭhaṃ va suttaṃ mutaṃ vā,
 sa pannabhāro muni vippamutto
 na kappiyo, nūparato, na patthiyo ti. (*Bhagavā ti*)

Through 'seeing', men just 'see'
things and their attributes;
or, having 'seen', can 'know'
just that—and nothing more.
But, 'see' they much, or 'see'
they little, wise men say:—
'Not thus comes "Purity".'

[909]

No dogmatist can win,
by self-concocted views,
the way to Purity.
Mere prepossessions point
his road to 'Light'; he 'sees'
his old-time 'Purity'.

No 'Brahmin true' attains
the goal by mere research;
no partisan is he,
nor brother-sectary;
all vulgar theories
—which others toil to learn—
he knows, but heeds them not.

[911]

From earthly trammels freed,
aloof from party broils,
at peace where peace has fled,
th' unheeding sage ignores
what others toil to learn.

[912]

From whilom Cankers purged,
with no fresh growths afoot,
from lusts and dogmas free,
quit too of theories,
he goes his stainless way,
devoid of self-reproach.

By overcoming all
the theories that start
from things of sense, the sage
—Released, his burthen gone—
has done with conduct 'meet',
with abstinence, and pray'rs.

[914]

14. TUVATAKASUTTA

Pucchāmi taṃ Ādiccabandhuṃ [915]
vivekaṃ santipadaṃ ca mahesiṃ :

Kathaṃ disvā nibbāti bhikkhu
anupādiyāno lokasmiṃ kiñci?

2. Mūlaṃ papañcasamkhāyā (ti Bhagavā) [916]
mantā 'asmīti' sabbam uparuddhe;
yā kāci taṇhā ajjhataṃ,
tāsaṃ vinayā sadā sato sikkhe.

Yaṃ kiñci dhammaṃ abhijaññā,
ajjhataṃ atha vā pi bahiddhā,
na tena thāmaṃ kubbetha;
na hi sā nibbuti sataṃ vuttā.

4. Seyyo na tena maññeyya [918]
nīceyyo atha vā pi sarikkho;
phuṭṭho anekarūpehi
nātumānaṃ vikappayaṃ tiṭṭhe.

5. Ajjhattam eva upasame, [919]
nāññato bhikkhu santim eseyya;
ajjhataṃ upasantassa
na 'tthi attam,—kuto nirattaṃ vā?

6. Majjhe yathā samuddassa [920]
ūmi no jāyatī, ṭhito hoti,
evaṃ ṭhito aneja' assa;
ussadaṃ bhikkhu na kareyya kuhiñci.

7. Akittayi vivaṭacakkhu
sakkhidhammaṃ parissayavinayaṃ;
paṭipadaṃ vadehi—bhaddan te—
pātimokkhaṃ atha vā pi samādhim.

8. Cakkhūhi n' eva lol' assa, [922]
gāmakathāya āvaraye sotaṃ,
rase ca nānugijjheyya,
na ca mamāyetha kiñci lokasmiṃ.

Sutta 14. Without Delay

- The Enquirer:* Sun's kinsman! Sage! [915]
 Expound aloofness and
 the way of Peace.
 What outlook leaves man calm,
 with life's stuff spent?
- The Lord:* Let him pluck out [916]
 obsession's root,—the craze:
 'I am'; let him
 in constant watchfulness
 abide, with all
 his inward cravings gone.
 Should he observe
 a mental state arise
 (from in or out),
 let it not puff him up,
 —since none term this
 the calm which good men win.
 Nor let him feel [918]
 'better' or 'worse' for this,
 or build a 'Self'
 on such phenomena.
 For inward Peace [919]
 let Almsmen seek, nor look
 for calm elsewhere.
 With inward Peace, no Self—
 no non-Self—dwells.
 As no waves break [920]
 the calm of ocean's depths,
 unruffled be
 the Almsman's tranquil breast.
- The Enquirer:* Thou hast proclaimed [921]
 thy saving Doctrine, seer.
 Expound thy Rule—
 Confession—Rapt Resolve.
- The Lord:* No prying eye! [922]
 No ear for village talk!
 No taste for cates!
 No itch to get or have!

9. Phassena yadā phuṭṭh' assa, [923]
 paridevaṃ bhikkhu na kareyya kuhiñci,
 bhavañ ca nābhijappeyya,
 bheravesu ca na sampavedheyya.
10. Annānam, atho pānānam, [924]
 khādaniyānam, atho pi vatthānam
 laddhā na sannidhiṃ kayirā,
 na ca parittase tāni alabbhamāno.
11. Jhāyī, na pādalo' assa, [925]
 virame kukkucā, na-ppamajjeyya;
 ath' āsanesu sayanesu
 appasaddesu bhikkhu vihareyya.
12. Niddaṃ na bahulīkareyya; [926]
 jāgariyaṃ bhajeyya ātāpī;
 tandiṃ māyaṃ hasaṃ khiḍḍaṃ
 methunaṃ vippajahe savibhūsaṃ.
13. Āthabbaṇaṃ supinaṃ lakkhaṇaṃ [927]
 no vidahe, atho pi nakkhattaṃ,
 virudañ ca gabbhakaraṇaṃ,
 tikicchaṃ māmako na seveyya.
14. Nindāya na-ppavedheyya, [928]
 na uṇṇameyya paṣaṃsito bhikkhu,
 lobham saha macchariyena
 kodhaṃ pesuṇiyañ ca paṇūdeyya.
15. Kayavikkaye na tiṭṭheyya, [929]
 upavādaṃ bhikkhu na kareyya kuhiñci,
 gāme ca nābhisajjeyya,
 lābhakamyā janāṃ na lāpayeyya.
16. Na ca katthitā siyā bhikkhu, [930]
 na ca vācaṃ payuttaṃ bhāseyya,
 pāgabbhiyaṃ na sikkheyya,
 kathaṃ viggāhikaṃ na kathayeyya.

When illness comes,
let th' Almsman not lament,
or yearn for life,
or quake with abject dread.

[923]

Let him not hoard
the food and drink, the meats,
and clothes he gets;
—nor grieve if he gets none.

[924]

Let Reverie
be his, not gadding round,
not vice or sloth.
Sitting or lying down,
let silence reign.

[925]

Let him not sleep
o'ermuch, but keep awake,
ban indolence,
deceit, mirth, frolics, pride,
and lechery.

Let him abjure
spells, and interpretations
of dreams and signs;
nor let my follower
prognosticate
from stars or wild-things' notes,
cure barrenness,
or ply the trade of leech.

[927]

Let neither blame
depress, nor praise inflate;
let him discard
greed,—with close-fistedness,
slander, and wrath.

[928]

Let him not buy
and sell, or cry folk down;
let him not scold
his villagers, or speak
them fair—for gifts.

Let him not boast
or talk for private ends;
or forward be;
or start a wordy war.

[930]

17. Mosavajje na niyyetha,
sapaṇāno saṭhāni na kayirā,
atha jīvitenā paññāya
sīlabbatena nāññam atimaññe. [931]
18. Sutvā dūsito bahuṃ vācam
samaṇānaṃ vā puthuvacanānam
pharusena ne na pativajjā;
na hi santo paṭisenikaronti. [932]
19. Etañ ca dhammam aññāya
vicinaṃ bhikkhu sadā sato sikkhe,
santīti nibbutiṃ ñatvā
sāsane Gotamassa na-ppamajjeyya. [933]
20. Abhibhū hi so anabhibhūto
sakkhidhammaṃ anātiham adassī;
tasmā hi tassa Bhagavato
sāsane appamatto sadā namassaṃ anusikkhe ti. [934]
(*Bhagavā ti*)

15. ATTADAṆḌASUTTA

1. Attadaṇḍā bhayaṃ jātaṃ; janaṃ passatha medhagaṃ.
Saṃvegaṃ kittayissāmi yathā saṃvijitaṃ mayā:— [935]
2. Phandamānaṃ paṇaṃ disvā—macche appodake yathā—
aññamaññehi byāruddhe disvā, maṃ bhayaṃ āvisi. [936]
3. Samantaṃ asāro loko; disā sabbā sameritā;
icchaṃ bhavanam attano nāddasāsiṃ anositaṃ. [937]
4. Osāne tveva byāruddhe disvā me aratī ahu;
ath' etha sallāṃ addakkhiṃ duddasaṃ hadayanissitaṃ. [938]
5. Yena sallena otiṇṇo disā sabbā vidhāvati,
tam eva sallāṃ abbūyha na dhāvati, na sidati. [939]

Let him not lie,
or wittingly defraud,
or look with scorn
on others from proud heights
of way of life,
or lore, or sanctity.

Let him not vent [932]
his spleen by sharp retort
when anchorites
flow on in vapid talk.
—Saints ne'er rejoin.

Let him learn, test, [933]
and hold the Doctrine fast
with watchful care,
convinced that Peace consists
in passions quenched;
let him make Gotama
his constant guide.

For, vision showed [934]
th' unconquer'd Conqueror
the Truth none saw.
Wherefore, with ceaseless praise
let Almsmen cleave
to what the Lord ordained,
—and never flag.

Sutta 15. The Armed Hand

As broils reveal, the armèd hand breeds fear. [935]
Hear now what agitated me so sore:—

Men floundering like fish when ponds go dry; [936]
man's strife with man;—these sights affrighted me.

The world was void of substance; flux held sway; [937]
nor could I shelter find where Ills were not.

Man's doom appalled me, till—within man's heart— [938]
my gaze discerned a secret, rankling barb.

Transfix'd, the victim runs astray; but when [939]
'tis out, he strays no more nor sinks in sloughs.

(Tattha sikkhānugiyanti)

6. Yāni loke gathitāni, na tesu pasuto siyā; [940]
nibbijja sabbaso kāme sikkhe nibbānam attano.
7. Sacco siyā, appagabbho amāyo rittapesuṇo [941]
akkodhano; lobhapāpakam veviccam vitare muni.
8. Niddam tandim sahe thinam, pamādena na samvase, [942]
atimāne na tiṭṭheyya nibbānamanaso naro.
9. Mosavajje na niyyetha, rūpe sneham na kubbaye, [943]
māna ca pariṇeṇṇa, sāhasā virato care.
10. Purāṇam nābhinandeyya, nave khantiṃ na kubbaye, [944]
hiyamāne na soceyya, ākāsaṃ na sito siyā.
11. Gedham brūmi 'mahogho' ti, ācamam brūmi jappanam, [945]
ārammaṇam pakappanam, kāmapanko duraccayo.
12. Saccā avokkamma muni thale tiṭṭhati Brāhmaṇo; [946]
sabham so paṇissajja sa ve 'santo' ti vuccati.
13. Sa ve vidvā, sa vedagū, ñatvā dhammam anissito, [947]
sammā so loke iriyāno na-ppihetiddha kassaci.
14. Yo ca kāme accatari sangam loke duraccayam, [948]
na so socati nājjheti chinnaṇaso abandhano.
15. Yam pubbe tam visosehi, pacchā te māhu kiñcanam, [949]
majjhe ce no gahessasi, 'upasanto' carissasi.
16. Sabbaso nāmarūpasmim yassa na 'tthi mamāyitam [950]
asatā ca na socati, sa ve loke na jiyati.
17. Yassa na 'tthi 'idam me' ti, paresam vā pi, kiñcanam, [951]
mamattam so asamvindam 'na 'tthi me' ti na socati.
18. Aniṭṭhurī anānugiddho anejo sabbadhī samo [952]
tam ānisaṃsam pabrūmi pucchito avikampinam.

(Here come the Precepts.)

- Steer clear of worldly trammels; stab to death pleasures of sense; Nirvāna be thy goal; [940]
- let truth, humility, an honest heart, [941]
lips slander-free, and tolerance, be thine;
let greed's discomfiture proclaim the sage;
- farewell to slumb'ring on, to torpid sloth; [942]
let indolence be banned, and pride forsworn,
by minds intent upon Nirvāna's bliss;
- shun lying; keep thy heart from things of sense; [943]
see through all pride; from license purge thy life;
- hug not the past or what to-day brings forth; [944]
bewail not loss; nor sigh for bliss 'Above'.
- I call such yearning 'th' all-devouring flood'; [945]
I call it being swallowed up by greed,
—a shifting base, 'the bog of appetites'.
- The sage, the Brahmin true, who never strays [946]
from truth, on solid ground has set his foot;
all things forsaking, he 'to Peace has come';
- wisdom is his and lore; by Doctrine taught, [947]
he goes his independent, perfect way
along life's path, nor envies any man.
- He that has triumphed over appetites [948]
and burst all worldly shackles here on earth,
knows neither grief o'er loss, nor haunting dread.
- Consume to ashes past iniquities; [949]
thereafter let no fresh defilement grow;
if—meantime—thou contract no current guilt,
thy feet shall tread the tranquil path of Peace.
- Whoso prefers no claim to ownership [950]
of 'personality', and so grieves not
o'er what exists not,—never suffers loss.
- Whoso is marred by no such thoughts as —'This [951]
is mine!' or 'That is theirs!' conceives no sense
of ownership, nor grieves to go without.
- Neither to grudge nor covet nor to crave, [952]
but still to keep one equal poise through all,
—these blessings, I aver, await the leal.

19. Anejassa vijānato na 'tthi kāci nisaṃkhiti;
virato so viyārambhā khemaṃ passati sabbadhi. [953]
20. Na samesu na omesu na ussesu vadate muni,
santo so vītamaccharo nādeti na nirassatī. (*ti Bhagavā*) [954]

16. SĀRIPUTTASUṬṬA

1. Na me diṭṭho ito pubbe na suto uda kassaci
(*icc-āyasmā Sāriputto*) [955]
evaṃ vagguvado satthā Tusitā gaṇi-m-āgato
2. sadevakassa lokassa yathā dissati Cakkhumā [956]
sabbarṇ tamarṇ vinodetvā eko ca ratim ajjhagā.
3. Taṃ Buddhaṃ asitaṃ tādiṃ akuhaṃ gaṇim āgataṃ [957]
bahunnam idha baddhānaṃ atthi pañhena āgamaṃ:—
4. Bhikkhuno vijigucchato bhajato rittam āsanaṃ [958]
rukkhamūlaṃ susānaṃ vā pabbatānaṃ guhāsu vā
5. uccāvacesu sayanesu, kīvanto tattha bheravā [959]
yehi bhikkhu na vedheyya nigghose sayanāsane?
6. Katī parissayā loke gacchato agataṃ disaṃ [960]
ye bhikkhu abhisambhaye pantamhi sayanāsane?
7. Kyāssa byappathayo assu? Kyāssa assu idha gocarā? [961]
Kāni silabbatān' assu pahitattassa bhikkhuno?
8. Kaṃ so sikkhaṃ samādāya ekodi nipako sato, [962]
kammāro rajatassēva, niddhame malam attano?
9. Vijigucchamānassa yad idaṃ phāsu [963]
(*Sāriputtāti Bhagavā*)
rittāsanaṃ sayanaṃ sevato ce
sambodhikāmassa yathānudhammaṃ
tan te pavakkhāmi yathā pajānaṃ.

When cravings die, the clear-eyed sage stores up
no merit nor demerit; interest [953]
in suchlike quests is merged in perfect calm.

The sage contrasts himself with none, nor claims [954]
equality or inequality.
At peace within, immune from covetise,
the saint has nought to gain and naught to lose.

Sutta 16. What Sāriputta Asked

Sāriputta : I ne'er have seen nor ever yet heard tell [955]
of such a sweet-tongued Master coming down
from Túsitá on high to teach the world

of gods and men,—as stands reveal'd in Him, [956]
th' all-seeing Lord, who swept all mists away
and compassed bliss, unaided and alone.

To Buddha—so endowed, so free, so sure [957]
a guide, a question lo! I bring, to help
the multitudes condemned to bondage here.

If, now, an Almsman who abhors the world [958]
seeks out a lonely lodging,—under trees,
in charnel grounds, or in a mountain cave,

—there grisly noises haunt his lone abode, [959]
which he must stoutly brave in solitude.

What dangers bar his still untrodden road, [960]
which he must vanquish in his loneliness?

How should he shape his speech?—whither resort? [961]
—what pious works should mark him, resolute?

What vows of conduct help the fixèd mind [962]
(with wisdom stored and high collectedness)
foulness to purge, as silversmiths the dross?

The Lord: Hear then from me—who know— [963]
what boons lone aspirants
enjoy, who loathe the world,
and how their life conforms.

10. Pañcanna' dhiro bhayānaṃ na bhāye
bhikkhu sato sa pariyantacārī,
—dāṃsādhipātānaṃ sirimsapānaṃ
manussaphassānaṃ catuppādānaṃ;

paradhammikānaṃ pi na santaseyya
disvā pi tesāṃ bahubheravāni;
athāparāni abhisambhaveyya
parissayāni kusalānuesī. [964]
12. Ātankaphassena khudāya phuṭṭho
sītaṃ accuṇhaṃ adhivāsayeyya;
sa tehi phuṭṭho bahudhā anoko
viriyaṃ parakkamaṃ daḷhaṃ kareyya. [966]
13. Theyyaṃ na kāre, na musā bhaṇeyya,
mettāya phasse tasathāvarāni,
yad āvilattaṃ manaso vijaññā
'Kaṇhassa pakkho' ti vinodayeyya. [967]
14. Kodhātīmānassa vasaṃ na gacche,
mūlaṃ pi tesāṃ palikhañña tiṭṭhe,
atha-ppiyaṃ vā pana appiyaṃ vā
addhābhavanto abhisambhaveyya. [968]
- Paññaṃ purakkhatvā kalyāṇapīti
vikkhambhaye tāni parissayāni,
aratiṃ sahetha sayanaṃhi pante.
caturo sahetha paridevadhamme:— [969]
16. Kiṃ sū asissāmi? Kuvaṃ vā asissaṃ?
Dukkaṃ vata settha; kuv' ajja sessaṃ?
—ete vitakke paridevaneyye
vinayetha sekho aniketasāri. [970]

Let th' Almsman stoutly brave
with watchful discipline,
the dangers five,—to wit,
mosquitos, gadflies, snakes,
assaults of men, and beasts.

[964]

Let not the aspirant
dread—though he sees them all—
onslaughts from sectaries,
but turn to overcome
perils confronting him.

[965]

Though sick and hungry, still
let him brave cold and heat,
and (though they press him hard)
let th' homeless wanderer
bear up and struggle on.

[966]

Let him not steal or lie;
let him be kind alike
to weak and strong, and, when
disorders plague his mind,
rout them as—'Māra's gang'!

[967]

Resisting ire and pride,
let him extirpate them,
and make an end of likes
and dislikes, once for all.

[968]

With noble zest, by lore
inspired, let him o'ercome
his perils and dispel
dislike of solitude
and all those four complaints:—

[969]

'What fare will come my way?
—and where? Poor lodging this!
—where shall I lodge to-night?'
Let th' homeless aspirant
have done with such complaints.

[970]

17. Annañ ca laddhā vasanañ ca kāle
mattañ so jaññā idha tosanatthañ,
so tesu gutto yatacāri gāme
rusito pi vācañ pharusañ na vajjā.
18. Okkhittacakkhu na ca pādalolo [972]
jhānānuyutto bahujāgar' assa;
upekkham ārabba samāhitatto
takkāsayañ kukkucci' ūpacchinde.
19. Cudito vacībhi satimā 'bhinande, [973]
sabrahmacārīsu khilañ pabhinde,
vācañ pamuñce kusalañ nātivelāñ,
janavādadhammāya na cetayeyya.
20. Athāparañ pañca rajāni loke [974]
yesañ satimā vinayāya sikkhe;
—rūpesu, saddesu, atho rasesu,
gandhesu, phassesu sahetha rāgañ.
21. Etesu dhammesu vineyya chandañ [975]
bhikkhu satimā suvimuttacitto
kālena so sammā dhammañ parivīmaṃsamāno
ekodibhūto vihane tamam so ti. (*Bhagavā ti*)

When in due season food
and clothes are given him,
let him just meet his needs
and, in such temperance,
with guarded mien, about
his village go; nor e'er
be stung to sharp retorts.

[971]

With steps that loiter not
and eyes downcast, let him,
though plunged in reverie,
keep wide awake. Serene
through equal poise of mind,
let him check lurking doubts
and all malpractices.

[972]

In mindfulness let him
welcome reproof, break up
his brethren's fallows, speak
succinctly to the point,
and heed no vulgar creed.

[973]

Then come the world's five stains,
which he must set himself
to shed by discipline,
till he subdues the lusts
of eye, ear, taste, smell, touch.

[974]

Quit of these things of sense,
let th' Almsman—mindfully,
with heart now freed—betimes
the Doctrine search till clouds
have left his fixed mind.

[975]

V. PĀRĀYANAVAGGA

(i) VATTUGĀTHĀ

1. Kosalānaṃ purā rammā agamā Dakkhināpathaṃ
ākiñcaññaṃ patthayaṇo brāhmaṇo mantapārāgū. [976]
2. So Assakassa visaye Muḷakassa samāsane
vasī Godhāvarikūle uñchena ca phalena ca. [977]
3. Tass' eva upanissāya gāmo ca vipulo ahu,
tato jātena āyena mahāyaññaṃ akappayī; [978]
4. mahāyaññaṃ yajitvāna puna pāvisi assamaṇ.
Tasmim patipaviṭṭhamhi añño āgañchi brāhmaṇo [979]
5. ugghaṭṭapādo tasito pankadanto rajassiro;
—so ca naṃ upasaṃkamma satāni pañca yācati. [980]
6. Tam enaṃ Bāvarī disvā āsanena nimantayī,
sukhañ ca kusalaṃ pucchi, idaṃ vacanam abravi:— [981]
7. Yaṃ kho mamaṃ deyyadhammaṃ sabbaṃ vissajjitaṃ mayā;
anujānāhi me, brahme; na 'tthi pañca satāni me. [982]
8. Sace me yācamānassa bhavaṃ nānupadassati,
sattame divase tuyhaṃ muddhā phalatu sattadhā. [983]
9. Abhisamkharitvā kuhako bheravaṃ so akittayī.
Tassa taṃ vacanaṃ sutvā Bāvarī dukkhito ahu, [984]
10. ussussati anāhāro sokasallasamappito,
atho pi evaṃcittassa jhāne na ramatī mano. [985]
11. Utrastaṃ dukkhitaṃ disvā devatā atthakāminī
Bāvariṃ upasaṃkamma idaṃ vacanam abravi: [986]
12. Na so muddhaṃ pajānāti kuhako so dhanatthiko,
muddhani muddhapāte vā nāṇaṃ tassa na vijjati. [987]
13. Bhotī carahi jānāti? Tam me akkhāhi pucchitā
muddhaṃ muddhādhipātāñ ca, taṃ suṇoma vaco tava. [988]
14. Aham p' etaṃ na jānāmi; nāṇaṃ me 'ttha na vijjati;
muddham muddhādhipāto ca Jinānaṃ h' eta' dassanaṃ. [989]
15. Atha ko carahi jānāti asmim puthavimaṇḍale
muddhaṃ muddhādhipātāñ ca? Tam me akkhāhi, devate. [990]

BOOK V. THE WAY ACROSS

Prologue

- Southwards from Sāvattī, fair capital [976]
of Kosala, a learned brahmin came
in aspiration for the Plane of Naught.
- Near Assaka and hard by Muḷaka, [977]
beside Godhāvārī's fork'd stream, he lived
on wilding fruits and sustenance he culled.
- Hard by, he held a thriving village-fief; [978]
its yield he lavish'd on a pious feast;
this done, he sought his hermitage once more. [979]
On his return, another brahmin came
—footsore, athirst, with muddied teeth, dust-stain'd- [980]
who asked him for five hundred pieces down!
- First, begging him be seated, Bāvarī [981]
asked how he inly fared, and then replied:—
‘Nothing is left of what I had to give. [982]
Forgive me, brahmin;—no such sum have I.’
- ‘If you refuse me, may your head be split [983]
in seven bits upon the seventh day!’
- With due formalities, the rascal laid [984]
this curse on Bāvarī,—who quaked with fear,
and took no food, but pined in anguish sore; [985]
and Reverie's delights were his no more.
- To help him in his dread and woe, there came [986]
his homestead's deity, who spoke these words:—
‘That greedy rascal nothing knows of heads! [987]
Of heads and riving heads he's ignorant!’
- ‘If you know, madam, let me hear you speak [988]
of heads and riving heads; I yearn to know.’
- ‘I too know nothing, and am ignorant; [989]
'tis only “Conquerors” who know these things.’
- ‘Who then in all the wide, wide world does know [990]
of heads and riving heads? Sprite, tell me this.’

16. 'Purā Kapilavatthumhā nikkhanto lokanāyako
apacco Okkākarājassa Sakyaputto pabhamkaro. [991]
17. So hi, brāhmaṇa, Sambuddho sabbadhammāna' pāragū
sabbābhiññābalappatto sabbadhammesu cakkhumā [992]
sabbadhammakkhayaṃ patto vimutto upadhikkhaye;
18. Buddho so Bhagavā loke dhammaṃ deseti cakkhumā. [993]
Taṃ tvaṃ gantvāna pucchassu; so te taṃ byākarissati.'
19. 'Sambuddho' ti vaco sutvā udaggo Bāvarī ahu; [994]
sok' assa tanuko āsi, pītiñ ca vipulaṃ labhi.
20. So Bāvarī attamano udaggo [995]
taṃ devataṃ pucchati vedajāto:
Katamamhi gāme nigamamhi vā puna
katamamhi vā janapade lokanātho
yattha gantvā namassemu Sambuddhaṃ dipaduttamaṃ.
21. Sāvattiyaṃ Kosalamandire Jino [996]
pahūtapañño varabhūrimedhaso
so Sakyaputto vidhuro anāsavo
muddhādhipātassa vidū narāsabho.
22. Tato āmantayi sisse brāhmaṇe mantapārage:— [997]
Etha, māṇavā; akkhissaṃ; suṇotha vacanaṃ mama.
23. Yass' eso dullabho loke pātubhāvo abhiñhaso [998]
sv' ajja lokamhi uppanno Sambuddho iti vissuto.
—Khippaṃ gantvāna Sāvattihiṃ passavho dipaduttamaṃ.
24. Kathanā carahi jānemo disvā 'Buddho' ti, brāhmaṇa? [999]
Ajānataṃ no pabrūhi yathā jānemo taṃ mayaṃ.
25. Āgatāni hi mantesu mahāpurisalakkhaṇā [1000]
dvattimsā ca vyākhyātā samattā anupubbaso.

'A Sákya of King Okkāka's line
has left their capital to spread the Light.

The Lord of All-Enlightenment is he, [992]
in ev'ry outlook versed; all ken and might
is his; his gaze all outlooks penetrates;
by subjugating all phenomena
life's stuff is spent, and he has won Release.

Th' Enlighten'd and All-seeing Lord is he, [993]
who here on earth proclaims his Doctrine's truth.
Go, ask of him; and he will make all clear'.

'The All-Enlighten'd'—At that name's mere sound, [994]
elation seized on Bāvarī; his grief
abated; joy abounding filled his breast.

Then Bāvarī, elate [995]
with joy, excitedly
besought the sprite to name
the village, town, or realm
where dwelt this Lord of Lords,
that they might go and render homage due
to th' All-Enlighten'd, prince of all mankind.

'At Sāvathī, beneath [996]
a roof in Kosala,
the Victor dwells, profound
in lore, of searching wit.
This matchless Sákya,
from Cankers wholly free,
—this paragon of men—
knows well how heads are split.

'Then Bāvarī addressed his following [997]
of brahmins, masters of the runes, and said:—
'Draw near, young brahmins; list to what I say!

Lo! One whose advent in the world is rare, [998]
to-day is here on earth,—famed far and wide
as "th' All-Enlighten'd". Speed to Sāvathī,
and there behold mankind's unchallenged best.'

'But, brahmin, how can we feel sure we see [999]
a very Buddha? Teach our ignorance'.

'The runes detail the marks of Supermen, [1000]
and of those marks the tale is thirty-two.

26. Yass' ete honti gattesu mahāpurisalakkhaṇā
duve va tassa gatiyo, tatiyā hi na vijjati:— [1001]
27. Sace agāraṃ āvasati, vijeyya paṭhaviṃ imaṃ
adaṇḍena asatthena dhammena-m-anusāsati. [1002]
28. Sace ca so pabbajati agārā anagāriyaṃ,
vivaṭacchado Sambuddho arahā bhavati anuttaro. [1003]
29. Jātiṃ gottaṃ ca lakkhaṇaṃ mante sisse punāpare
muddhaṃ muddhāhipātaṃ ca manasā yeva pucchatha. [1004]
30. Anāvaraṇadassāvī yadi Buddho bhavissati,
manasā pucchite pañhe vācāya vissajessati. [1005]
31. Bāvarissa vaco sutvā sissā soḷasa brāhmaṇā
—Ajito Tissa-Metteyyo Puṇṇako atha Mettagū [1006]
32. Dhotako Upasīvo ca Nando ca atha Hermako
Todeyya-Kappā dubhayo Jatukaṇṇī ca paṇḍito [1007]
33. Bhadrāvudho Udayo ca Posālo cāpi brāhmaṇo
Mogharājā ca medhāvī Pingiyo ca mahā isi— [1009]
34. paccekagaṇino sabbe sabbalokassa vissutā
jhāyī jhānaratā dhīrā pubbavāsanavāsītā. [1009]
35. Bāvariṃ abhivādetvā katvā ca naṃ padakkhiṇaṃ
jaṭṭajinadharā sabbe pakkāmuṃ uttarāmukhā, [1010]
36. —Muḷakassa Paṭiṭṭhānaṃ purimaṃ Māhissatiṃ tadā
Ujjeniṃ cāpi Gonaddhaṃ Vedisaṃ Vanasavhayaṃ. [1011]
37. Kosambirī cāpi Sāketarī Sāvattiṃ ca puruttamaṃ
Setavyaṃ Kapilavatthuṃ Kusināraṃ ca mandiraṃ. [1012]
38. Pāvaṇ ca bhoganagaraṃ Vesālīṃ Māgadhaṃ puraṃ
Pāsāṇakaṃ cetiyaṃ ca ramaṇiyaṃ manoramaṃ. [1013]
39. Tasito v' udakaṃ sītaṃ, mahālābham va vāṇijo,
chāyaṃ ghammābhitatto va, turitā pabbataṃ āruhaṃ. [1014]

- To one who bears those two and thirty marks,
two walks of life are open,—and no third. [1001]
- If house and home be his, the whole wide world
shall own his sway. On righteousness shall rest
his rule, and not on cudgel or on sword. [1002]
- But if from home to homelessness he goes,
he strips the veil from things, and so becomes
the peerless All-Enlighten'd Arahāt. [1003]
- Frame questions mentally about my birth,
and clan, and marks, and runes, and pupils taught,
—and heads and riving heads. Your questions frame,
and, if he Buddha be of boundless ken,
his lips will answer what your minds have asked.' [1004]
- At Bāvarī's behest went sixteen youths,
—named Ājitā and Tissa Mētteyyā,
and Pūṇṇakā and kindly Mēttagū
—with Ūpasīva, Nanda, Dhótakā,
and Hémakā, Todéyya, Kappa too,
and learned Jatukannī, Ūdaya, [1005]
- Bhadrāvudha, the brahmin Pósalā,
quick Mogharāja, and sage Pingiya. [1006]
- Each led his train of pupils; each was famed
throughout the world; they all loved Reverie;
they all could conjure up their former lives. [1007]
- Of Bāvarī these took devout farewell,
then northwards went, hide-clad, with matted hair, [1008]
- through Pātiṭṭhān in Múlakā, through Old
Mahissatī, Ujjēni, Gónaddhá, [1009]
- then Védisā 'the Weald', Kosāmbī next,
Sākéta, Sāvatthī (of cities queen), [1010]
- then Sétavyā, and Kápilāvattthú,
past Kúsinārā town, past Pāvā too, [1011]
- that home of opulence, past Vésālī,
thence on to Mágadhā's proud capital,
and so to Rock-Shrine, fair, delectable. [1012]
- As thirsty folk to cooling waters haste,
as merchants wealth pursue, as men forspent
with heat seek shade, these scaled the mountain-side. [1013]
- [1014]

40. Bhagavā ca tamhi samaye bhikkhusaṃghapurakkhato
bhikkhūnaṃ Dhammaṃ deseti, siho va nadatī vane.
41. Ajito addasa Sambuddhaṃ vītaraṃsi' va bhānumaṃ,
candaṃ yathā pannarase pāripūriṃ upāgataṃ. [1016]
42. Ath' assa gatte disvāna paripūraṇi ca vyañjanaṃ
ekamantaṃ thito haṭṭho manopaṇhe apucchatha :— [1017]
43. Ādissa jammanāṃ brūhi, gottāṃ brūhi salakkhaṇāṃ,
mantesu pāramiṃ brūhi; kati vāceti brāhmaṇo? [1018]
44. Visarivassasataṃ āyu; so ca gottena Bāvarī;
tiṇ' assa lakkhaṇā gatte; tiṇṇaṃ vedāna' pāragū; [1019]
45. lakkhaṇe itihāse ca sanighaṇḍusakeṭubhe;
pañca satāni vāceti; sadhamme pāramiṃ gato. [1020]
46. Lakkhaṇānaṃ pavicayaṃ Bāvarissa, naruttama
taṇhacchida, pakāsehi. Mā no kankhāyitaṃ ahu. [1021]
47. Mukhaṃ jivhāya chādeti; uṇṇ' assa bhamukantare;
kosohitaṃ vatthaguyhaṃ;—evaṃ jānāhi, māṇava. [1022]
48. (Pucchaṃ hi kiñci asuṇanto sutvā paṇhe viyācate
vicinteti jano sabbo vedajāto katañjali :— [1023]
49. Ko nu devo va Brahmā vā Indo vā pi Sujampati
manasā pucchi te paṇhe? Kam etaṃ paṭibhāsati?) [1024]
50. Muddhaṃ muddhādhipātāṇi ca Bāvari paripucchati.
Taṃ vyākaroḥi, Bhagavā; kankhaṃ vinaya no, ise. [1025]
51. 'Avijjā muddhā ti jānāhi; vijjā muddhādhipātini,
saddhāsatisamādhīhi chandaviriyaṇa saṃyutā.' [1026]
52. Tato vedena mahatā santhambhitvāna māṇavo
ekaṃsaṃ ajinaṃ katvā pādesu sirasā pati :—
53. Bāvari brāhmaṇo bhoto saha sissehi, mārisa,
udaggacitto sumano pāde vandati, cakkhuma. [1028]
54. Sukhito Bāvari hotu saha sissehi brāhmaṇo;
tvaṇi cāpi sukkhito hohi;—ciraṃ jīvāhi, māṇava. [1029]

In conclave, by his Almsmen girt around,
the Lord was teaching them the Doctrine's truths
and like a lion's roar his voice rang out.

[1015]

To Ājitā the All-Enlighten'd seemed
the radiant sun, or mid-month's moon at full!

[1016]

A survey of his frame—with marks complete—
filled Ājitā with joy; in reverence
he stood and framed these questions in his mind:—

'Declare our teacher's birth, and clan, and marks,
what runes he knows, what pupils learn of him.'

[1018]

The Lord: Six-score years old, a Bāvarī by clan,
he bears three marks; he knows the Vedas three;

[1019]

is versed in marks and scholarship; instructs
five hundred youths; is perfect in his creed.

[1020]

Ajita: Detail the marks he bears, thou matchless man.
Cravings' uprooter! Leave us not in doubt.

[1021]

The Lord: His tongue can hide his face; a downy tuft
divides his brows; his privities are sheathed.

[1022]

(Hearing replies to questions heard by none,
all present raised their folded palms in awe,

[1023]

wond'ring what godhead—Indra?—or Brahmā?—
was thinking questions; who received replies.)

[1024]

Ajita: Of heads and riving heads, asks Bāvarī.
Explain this, Lord; dispel our doubts, o sage.

[1025]

The Lord: The head is Ignorance,—which Knowledge rives,
Knowledge informed by faith and mindfulness,
by earnest heart and mind, by eager zeal.

[1026]

With deep emotion thrilled, the brahmin youth
his shoulder bared in homage to the Lord,
and bowed his head before the Master's feet.

[1027]

Ajita: O sir (he cried), the brahmin Bāvarī,
with all his pupils, here adores thy feet
in heartfelt thankfulness, All-seeing Lord!

[1028]

The Lord: May all go well with Bāvarī and train,
—and thee, young brahmin! Length of days be thine!

[1029]

55. Bāvarissa ca tuyhaṃ vā sabbesaṃ sabbasaṃsayāṃ
katāvakaṣā pucchavho, yaṃ kiñci manas' icchatha. [1030]
56. Sambuddhena katokāso nisīditvāna pañjali
Ajito paṭhamāṃ pañhaṃ tattha pucchi Tathāgataṃ.

AJITAMĀṆAVA-PUCCHĀ (i)

1. Kena-ssu nivuto loko? Kena-ssu na-ppakāsati?
(icc-āyasmā Ajito)
Ki' 'ssābhilepanaṃ brūsi? Kiṃ-su tassa mahabbhayaṃ?
2. Avijjāya nivuto loko, vevicchā pamādā na-ppakāsati. [1033]
(Ajitāti Bhagavā)
Jappābhilepanaṃ brūmi. Dukkham assa mahabbhayaṃ.
3. Savanti sabbadhī sotā; sotānaṃ kiṃ nivāraṇaṃ? [1034]
(icc-āyasmā Ajito)
Sotānaṃ saṃvaram brūhi. Kena sotā pithiyyare?
4. Yāni sotāni lokasmiṃ, sati tesaṃ nivāraṇaṃ, [1035]
(Ajitāti Bhagavā)
sotānaṃ saṃvaram brūmi,—paññāy' ete pithiyyare.
5. Paññā c' eva satī cāpi nāmarūpaṃ ca, mārisa, [1036]
(icc-āyasmā Ajito)
etaṃ me puṭṭho pabrūhi: Katth' etaṃ uparujjhati?
6. Yam etaṃ pañhaṃ apucchi, Ajita, taṃ vadāmi te: [1037]
yathā nāmaṃ ca rūpaṃ ca asesāṃ uparujjhati,
viññāṇassa nirodhena etth' etaṃ uparujjhati.
7. Ye ca saṃkhātadhammāse, ye ca sekhā puthu idha, [1038]
tesaṃ me nipako iriyaṃ puṭṭho pabrūhi, mārisa.
8. Kāmesu nābhigijjheyya, manasānāvilo siyā, [1039]
kusalo sabbadhammānaṃ sato bhikkhu paribbaje ti.

Seize now this opportunity and raise
your difficulties,—yours, or Bāvari's,
or anyone's. Ask whatsoever you will. [1030]

The All-Enlighten'd having granted leave,
first Ājitā took seat and folded palms
of humble supplication, as he asked
his question of the Lord who Found the Truth: [1031]

Ajita's Question (i)

Ajita: What shrouds the world? What stops its being seen? [1032]
And what defiles, what threatens it, say you?

The Lord: 'Tis Ignorance which shrouds the world; 'tis wants
and sloth which stop its being clearly seen.
Cravings (say I) defile, Ills threaten it.

Ajita: The tides of evil surge around. What force [1034]
can dam them? Say what curb have they? what bar?

The Lord: 'Tis mindfulness dams evil's tides. They have [1035]
a curb (say I);—'tis Knowledge bars their flow.

Ajita: Prithce, take knowledge, and take mindfulness, [1036]
and with them Individuality.
I pray you say what lays this last to rest?

The Lord: Your question, Ājitā, I answer thus:— [1037]
Ere Individuality can cease,
th' informing mind must first be laid to rest.

Ajita: Take experts now, and aspirants, and men [1038]
at large. What way of life do you prescribe?

The Lord: To pleasure deaf, with undistracted mind, [1039]
above phenomena, leave house and home
to be an Almsman watchful and alert.

TISSAMETTEYYAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (ii)

1. Ko 'dha santusito loke? Kassa no santi iñjitā? [1040]
(*icc-āyasmā Tisso Metteyyo*)
Ko ubhanta-m-abhiññāya majjhe mantā na lippati?
Kaṁ brūsi 'mahāpuriso' ti? Ko idha sibbanim accagā?
2. Kāmesu brahmacariyavā vītataṇho sadā sato [1041]
(*Metteyyāti Bhagavā*)
saṁkhāya nibbuta bhikkhu, tassa no santi iñjitā;
3. so ubhanta-m-abhiññāya majjhe mantā na lippati; [1042]
taṁ brūmi 'mahāpuriso' ti; so idha sibbanim accagā ti.

PUṆṆAKAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (iii)

1. Anejaṁ mūladassāvim (icc-āyasmā Puṇṇako) [1043]
atthi pañhena āgamaṁ:—
Kiṁ nissitā isayo manujā
khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṁ
yaññam akappayimsu puthū 'dha loke?
—Pucchāmi taṁ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṁ.
2. Ye kec' ime isayo manujā (Puṇṇakāti Bhagavā) [1044]
khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṁ
yaññam akappayimsu puthū 'dha loke,
āsimsamānā, Puṇṇaka, itthabhāvaṁ
jaraṁ sitā yaññam akappayimsu.
3. Ye kec' ime isayo manujā (icc-āyasmā Puṇṇako) [1045]
khattiyā brāhmaṇā devatānaṁ
yaññam akappayimsu puthū 'dha loke,
kacci-ssu te, Bhagavā, yaññapathe appamattā
atāru' jātīṇ ca jaraṇ ca, mārīsa?
—Pucchāmi taṁ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṁ.
4. Āsimsanti thomayanti abhijappanti juhanti [1046]
(Puṇṇakāti Bhagavā)
kāmaabhijappanti paṭicca lābhaṁ.
Te yājayogā bhavarāgarattā
nātarimsu jātijaran ti brūmi.

Tissa Metteyya's Question (ii)

Tissa Metteyya: Who lives content? Who feels no waverings? [1040]
 Who, seeing both extremes, has wit to tread
 a middle path between them, undefiled?
 Who ranks as Superman? Who conquers Wants?

The Lord: The man 'mid pleasures virtuous, devoid [1041]
 of Cravings, watchful, always on his guard,
 the Almsman who has thought his way to bliss,
 —his fixed mind no waverings beset.

He, seeing both extremes, has wit to tread [1042]
 a middle path between them, undefiled.
 —Him I call 'Superman'; he conquers Wants.

Puṇṇaka's Question (iii)

Puṇṇaka: O thou who cravest nought, whose eye can see [1043]
 the roots of things, a question here I bring.
 Tell me why hosts of sages—nobly born,
 or brahmins—sacrificed on earth to gods?
 Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

The Lord: Because—when old—these hosts [1044]
 of sages cherished hopes
 by sacrifice to gods
 to win some earthy bliss.

Puṇṇaka: But did their tireless zeal [1045]
 for sacrificing save
 these men from birth and eld?
 Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

The Lord: They crave, they laud, they pray, they sacrifice! [1046]
 Praying to be repaid
 in pleasures sensory,
 these sacrificing folk
 who pine for future life
 —have *not* 'scaped birth and eld.

5. Te ce nātariṃsu yājayogā (*icc-āyasmā Puṇṇako*) [1047]
 yaññehi jātiṃ ca jaraṇ ca, mārisa,
 atha ko carahi devamanussaloke
 atāri jātiṃ ca jaraṇ ca, mārisa?
 —Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ.
6. Saṃkhāya lokasmiṃ parôparāni [1048]
 (*Puṇṇakāti Bhagavā*)
 yass' iñjitaṃ na 'tthi kuhiñci loke,
 santo vidhūmo anigho nirāso
 atāri so jātijaran ti brūmīti.

METTAGŪMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (iv)

1. Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ. [1049]
 (*icc-āyasmā Mettagū*)
 maññāmi taṃ vedaguṃ bhāvitattaṃ:
 Kuto nu dukkhā samudāgatā ime
 ye keci lokasmiṃ anekarūpā?
2. Dukkassa ve maṃ pabhavaṃ apucchasi; [1050]
 (*Mettagūti Bhagavā*)
 taṃ te pavakkhāmi yathā pajānaṃ:—
 Upadhiniḍānā pabhavanti dukkhā
 ye keci lokasmiṃ anekarūpā.
- Yo ve avidvā upadhiṃ karoti, [1051]
 punappunaṃ dukkham upeti mando.
 Tasmā pajānaṃ upadhiṃ na kayirā
 dukkhassa jātippabhavānupassī.

Yan taṃ apucchimha, akittayi no.
 Aññaṃ taṃ pucchāma; tad ingha brūhi.
 Kathaṃ nu dhīrā vitaranti oghaṃ
 jātijaraṃ sokapariddavaṇ ca?
 Tam me, muni, sādhu viyākarohi;
 tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.

Puṇṇaka: If sacrifices fail
 to save their votaries
 from birth and eld, say who
 of men and gods is saved?
 Vouchsafe an answer, Lord. [1047]

The Lord: The man whose thought has scanned
 the universe entire,
 who knows no waverings,
 who, good without a trace
 of smould'ring vice, is free
 from tremors or desires,
 —*he*'s saved from birth and eld. [1048]

Mettagū's Question (iv)

Mettagū: I ask thee, Lord, to say
 (for, versed in lore and schooled
 I deem thee) whence arise
 life's teeming, varied Ills? [1049]

The Lord: You ask me whence come Ills;
 that knowledge I'll impart.
 —From Transmigration spring
 life's teeming varied Ills. [1050]

The fool who starts that round,
 through crassness drees a weird
 of oft-repeated Ills.
 Be warned, then; realize
 Ills' birth and origin;
 start not that gruesome round. [1051]

Mettagū: That answers what I asked.
 Vouchsafe to answer this:—
 Pray, how do saints o'ercome
 life's welter, birth, and eld,
 wailing and sorrow's pangs?
 Expound this, sage, for clear
 this outlook is to thee. [1052]

5. Kittayissāmi te dhammaṃ diṭṭhe dhamme anītihaṃ [1053]
 (Mettaḡūti Bhagavā)
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.

6. Tañ cāhaṃ abhinandāmi, mahesi, dhammam uttamaṃ [1054]
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.

7. Yaṃ kiñci sampajānāsi (Mettaḡūti Bhagavā) [1055]
 uddhaṃ adho tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe,
 etesu nandiṃ ca nivesanaṃ ca
 panujja viññāṇaṃ bhava na tiṭṭhe.

8. Evaṃ-vihārī sato appamatto [1056]
 bhikkhu caraṃ hitvā mamāyitāni
 jātijaraṃ sokapariddavaṃ ca
 idh' eva vidvā pajaheyya dukkhaṃ.

Etābhinandāmi vaco mahesino [1057]
 sukittitaṃ, Gotam', anūpadhikaṃ.
 Addhā hi Bhagavā pahāsi dukkhaṃ;
 tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.

10. Te cāpi nūna pajaheyyu' dukkhaṃ [1058]
 ye tvaṃ, muni, aṭṭhitaṃ ovadeyya.
 Taṃ taṃ namassāmi samecca, nāga.
 Appeva maṃ [Bhagavā] aṭṭhitaṃ ovadeyya.

11. Yaṃ brāhmaṇaṃ vedaguṃ abhijaññā [1059]
 akiñcanaṃ kāmabhava asattaṃ,
 addhā hi so oghaṃ imaṃ atāri
 tiṇṇo ca pāraṃ akhilo akankho,

The Lord: That outlook I'll expound to thee:—"Tis here
and now; no hearsay vain. By grasping it,
the man who walks thereby in mindfulness
shall leave the world's entanglements behind. [1053]

Mettagū: This matchless outlook, sage, rejoices me,
—to walk thereby in watchful mindfulness
and leave the world's entanglements behind. [1054]

The Lord: Reject then smug delight
in what—here—anywhere—
senses report. Let not
your nature base its hopes
on mere existences. [1055]

Thus minded, vigilant,
and zealous, Almsman, live
a life with nothing dear,
a life that, here on earth,
has plumbed old-age and birth,
wailing and sorrow's pangs,
and so sheds mortal Ills. [1056]

Mettagū: It gladdens me to hear
sage Gotama extol
a state from life's stuff freed.
Assuredly the Lord
has shed all Ills, so clear
this outlook is to him.

Those too shall shed all Ills
whom thou dost teach so well.
Wherefore, to thee I come
in adoration meet,
and crave thy teachings, Lord. [1058]

The Lord: The man you recognize
as 'Brahmin rich in lore',
emancipate, unsnared
by appetites or life,
—has crossed the welter here
and reached the shore Beyond,
with open'd mind, doubt-free. [1059]

12. vidvā ca so vedagu naro idha [1060]
 bhavābhavē sangam imarū visajja,
 so vitatanho anigho nirāso
 atāri so jātijaran ti brūmīti.

DHOTAKAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (v)

1. Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ; [1061]
(icc-āyasmā Dhotako)
 vācābhikankhāmi, mahesi, tuyhaṃ :
 tava sutvāna nigghosaṃ sikkhe nibbānam attano ?
 2. Tena h' ātappaṃ karoḥi; idh' eva nipako sato [1062]
(Dhotakāti Bhagavā)
 ito sutvāna nigghosaṃ sikkhe nibbānam attano.

Passāṃ' ahaṃ devamanussaloke [1063]
 akiñcanaṃ Brāhmaṇaṃ iriyamānaṃ.
 Taṃ taṃ namassāmi, samantacakkhu.
 Pamūṇa maṃ, Sakka, kathaṃkathāhi.

Nāhaṃ samīhāmi pamocanāya [1064]
 kathaṃkathim, Dhotaka, kañci loke.
 Dhammaṃ ca seṭṭhaṃ ājānamāno,
 evaṃ tuvaṃ oghaṃ imaṃ taresi.

Anusāsa, Brahme, karuṇāyamāno [1065]
 vivekadhammaṃ, yaṃ ahaṃ vijaññiṃ
 yathāhaṃ, ākāso va avyāpajjamāno,
 idh' eva santo asito careyyaṃ.

6. Kittayissāmi te santim diṭṭhe dhamme anītihaṃ [1066]
(Dhotakāti Bhagavā)
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loke visattikaṃ.

7. Tañ cāhaṃ abhinandāmi, mahesi, santim uttamaṃ [1067]
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loke visattikaṃ.

He knows. His lore rejects
all lures of future life;
from cravings purged, devoid
of tremors or desires,
he's saved from birth and eld.

[1060]

Dhotaka's Question (v)

Dhotaka: I ask thee, Lord, to tell,
I yearn to hear, how men
who hearken unto thee
can work salvation out. [1061]

The Lord: Be ardent! Here and now,
by hearkening to me,
shall thought and watchfulness
work man's salvation out. [1062]

Dhotaka: In thee, 'mong gods and men,
I find the 'Brahmin true'
who walks emancipate.
Wherefore, to thee I come
in adoration meet.
All-seeing Lord, free me
from doubts, great Sākyaṇ! [1063]

The Lord: No doubting heart do I
essay to free. Grasp first
this best of Doctrines; then
thou 'lt cross the welter here. [1064]

Dhotaka: In pity, Holy One,
teach me to live Aloof,
that I may clearly see
how—calm as th' ether—I
may dwell in freedom's peace. [1065]

The Lord: That peace will I expound to thee. 'Tis here
and now; 'tis based on thought, not hearsay vain.
Walk thou by it with constant watchfulness,
leaving the world's entanglements behind. [1066]

Dhotaka: This matchless peace, great sage, rejoices me,
—to walk thereby with constant watchfulness
and leave the world's entanglements behind! [1067]

8. Yaṃ kiñci sampajānāsi (Dhotakāti Bhagavā) [1068]
 uddhaṃ adho tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe,
 etaṃ viditvā 'sango' ti loke
 bhavābhavāya mā 'kāsi taṇhan ti.

UPASIVAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (vi)

1. Eko ahaṃ, Sakka, mahantam oghaṃ [1069]
 (icc-āyasmā Upasivo)

anissito no visahāmi tārituṃ.
 Ārammaṇaṃ brūhi, samantacakkhu,
 yaṃ nissito ogham imaṃ tareyyaṃ.

2. Ākiñcaññaṃ pekkhamāno satimā [1070]
 (Upasivāti Bhagavā)

'Na 'tthīti' nissāya tarassu oghaṃ,
 kāme pahāya virato kathāhi
 taṇhakkhayaṃ nattamahābhipassa.

3. Sabbesu kāmesu yo vītarāgo (icc-āyasmā Upasivo) [1071]
 ākiñcaññaṃ nissito hitva-m-aññaṃ
 saññāvimokhe parame vimutto,
 tiṭṭhe nu so tattha anānuyāyi?

4. Sabbesu kāmesu yo vītarāgo (Upasivāti Bhagavā) [1072]
 ākincaññaṃ nissito hitva-m-aññaṃ,
 saññāvimokkhe parame 'dhimutto,
 tiṭṭheyya so tattha anānuyāyi.

5. Tiṭṭhe ce so tattha anānuyāyi,
 pūgam pi vassānaṃ, samantacakkhu,
 tatth' eva so sītisiyā vimutto,
 cavetha viññānaṃ tathāvidhassa?

6. Acci yathā vātavegena khitto (Upasivāti Bhagavā) [1074]
 atthaṃ paleti, na upeti sankhaṃ,
 —evaṃ munī nāmakāyā vimutto
 atthaṃ paleti, na upeti sankhaṃ.

The Lord: Reject then smug delight
 in what—here—anywhere—
 senses report, and know
 'tis but a worldly snare;
 crave not for 'life to come'!

Upasīva's Question (vi)

Upasīva: Alone, without support,
 great Sākyan, I should fail
 to win across life's surge.
 Seer, what support will bear
 a man in safety o'er? [1069]

The Lord: Th' inherent Nothingness
 of things discern. Make this
 conviction—'Naught abides!'—
 support thee safely o'er.
 Scorn pleasures; gossip not;
 strive day and night—each hour—
 cravings to extirpate. [1070]

Upasīva: Will he whom pleasures tempt
 no more, who cleaves to nought
 save Nothingness alone,
 who from Perceptions wins
 entire Deliverance,
 —will he ne'er fall away? [1071]

The Lord: The man whom pleasures tempt
 no more, who cleaves to nought
 save Nothingness alone,
 who from Perceptions wins
 entire Deliverance,
 —will never fall away. [1072]

Upasīva: If, as the years roll on,
 he never falls away
 when Fever's fires are quenched,
 —will Personality
 be born with him again?

The Lord: As flame blown out by wind
 is lost to cognizance,
 e'en so the sage, released
 from whilom qualities,
 has disappeared from ken. [1074]

7. Atthangato so uda vā so na 'tthi [1075]
 udāhu ve sassatiyā arogo?
 Tam me, muni, sādhu viyākarohi,
 tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.
8. Atthangatassa na pamāṇam atthi; (*Upasīvāti Bhagavā*) [1076]
 yena naṃ vajju, taṃ tassa na 'tthi;
 sabbesu dhammesu samūhatesu,
 samūhatā vādapathā pi sabbe ti.

NANDAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (vii)

1. 'Santi loke munayo' (*icc-āyasmā Nando*) [1077]
 janā vadanti. Ta-y-idaṃ katharū su?
 Nāpūpapannarū no munirū vadanti
 udāhu ve jivitenūpapannarū?
2. Na diṭṭhiyā na sutiyā na ñāṇena
 munidha, Nanda, kusalā vadanti.
 Visenikatvā anighā nirāsā
 caranti ye, te munayo ti brūmi.
3. Ye kec' ime samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*icc-āyasmā Nando*) [1079]
 diṭṭhe sutenāpi vadanti suddhirū,
 silabbatenāpi vadanti suddhirū,
 anekarūpena vadanti suddhirū,
 —kacci ssu te [Bhagavā] tattha yatā carantā
 atāru' jātiṃ ca jaraṃ ca, mārisa?
 Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me taṃ.
4. Ye kec' ime samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*Nandāti Bhagavā*) [1080]
 diṭṭhe sutenāpi vadanti suddhirū,
 silabbatenāpi vadanti suddhirū,
 anekarūpena vadanti suddhirū,
 —kiñcāpi te tattha yatā caranti,
 nātarimsu jātijaran ti brūmi.

Upasiva: Does he who 'disappears'
quite cease to be? or last
for ever hale and strong?
Explain this, sage; for, clear
to thee this outlook shows.

The Lord: Whoso thus 'disappears'
is measureless; he keeps
nothing that can be named.
When attributes have gone,
denoting terms go too. [1076]

Nanda's Question (vii)

Nanda: Men talk of 'sages here'.
What mean they? Is it lore
that constitutes a sage?
or is it mode of life? [1077]

The Lord: 'Tis not for 'views' he holds,
insight, or garner'd lore,
that experts style him 'sage'.
Sages, say I, are those
who conquer in the fight
and have no hopes or wants. [1078]

Nanda: Brahmins and anchorites
who say that Purity
resides in views, or lore,
or works, or ritual,
or in what things they will,
—have they 'scaped birth and eld?
Vouchsafe an answer, Lord. [1079]

The Lord: Brahmins and anchorites
who say that 'Purity'
resides in 'views', or lore,
or works, or ritual,
or in what things they will,
—have *not* 'scaped birth and eld. [1080]

5. Ye kec' ime samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*icc-āyasmā Nando*) [1081]
 diṭṭhe sutenāpi vadanti suddhiṃ,
 sīlabbatenāpi vadanti suddhiṃ,
 anekarūpena vadanti suddhiṃ,
 te ce, muni, brūsi anoghatipṇe,
 atha ko carahi devamanussaloke
 atāri jātiṇi ca jaraṇi ca, mārisa?
 Pucchāmi taṃ, Bhagavā; brūhi me tam.
6. Nāham sabbe samaṇabrāhmaṇāse (*Nandāti Bhagavā*) [1082]
 jātijarāya nivutā ti brūmi.
 Ye sīdha diṭṭhaṃ va sutam mutam vā,
 sīlabbataṃ vā pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 anekarūpam pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 taṇhaṃ pariññāya anāsavāse,
 —te ve narā oghatiṇṇā ti brūmi.

Etābhinandāmi vaco mahesino [1083]
 sukittitaṃ, Gotam', anūpadhikaṃ.
 Ye sīdha diṭṭhaṃ va sutam mutam vā,
 sīlabbataṃ vā pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 anekarūpam pi pahāya sabbaṃ,
 taṇhaṃ pariññāya anāsavāse,
 —aham pi te oghatiṇṇā ti brūmi.

HEMAKAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (viii)

1. Ye me pubbe viyākamsu—huraṃ Gotamasāsanā:
 (*icc-āyasmā Hemako*)
 icc-āsi, iti bhavissati, sabbaṃ taṃ itihītihaṃ,
 sabbaṃ taṃ takkavaḍḍhanaṃ; nāhaṃ tattha abhiramim.
2. Tvaṇi ca me dhammaṃ akkhāhi taṇhānigghātanaṃ, muni, [1085]
 yaṃ viditvā sato caraṃ tare loka visattikaṃ.
3. Idha diṭṭhasutamutaviññātesu piyarūpesu, Hemaka, [1086]
 chandarāgavinodanaṃ, Nibbānapadam accutaṃ,
4. —etaḍ aññāya ye satā diṭṭhadhammābhinibbutā [1087]
 upasantā ca te sadā, tiṇṇā loka visattikaṃ ti.

Nanda: If you say all those fail,
 who hold that 'Purity'
 resides in 'views' or lore,
 or works, or ritual,
 or in whatever else,
 —what god or man succeeds?
 Vouchsafe an answer, Lord.

[1081]

The Lord: I do not say that all
 brahmins and anchorites
 are mewed in birth and eld.
 'Safe o'er the Flood' are they
 who sense-impressions scout,
 scout works and ritual
 (and whatsoever else),
 plumb Cravings, Cankers shed.

Nanda: It gladdens me to hear
 sage Gotama extol
 this state from life's stuff freed.
 Yes; 'o'er the Flood' are they
 who sense-impressions scout,
 scout works and ritual
 (and whatsoever else),
 plumb Cravings, Cankers shed.

Hemaka's Question (viii)

Hemaka: The only things I learned from those who taught
 me, till I heard what Gotama proclaimed,
 were hearsay origins and destinies,
 —mere hearsay, fostering perplexities,
 which failed to satisfy my heart within.

[1084]

Expound to me the Doctrine, sage, which roots
 all Cravings out and teaches men to walk
 in mindfulness, escaping worldly snares.

[1085]

The Lord: Nirvāna's Way eternal will dispel
 the hot pursuit on earth of mundane joys;
 and they who, grasping this, have 'passed away'
 while yet in mindfulness on earth they dwell,
 —these sons of peace have done with worldly snares.

[1086]

[1087]

TODEYYAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (ix)

kāmā na vasanti, taṇhā yassa na vij
(icc-ī

kathamkathā ca yo tiṇṇo, vimokkho tassa kīdiso?

2. Yasmiṃ kāmā na vasanti, taṇhā yassa na vijjati,
(Todeyyā
kathamkathā ca yo tiṇṇo, vimokkho tassa nāparo

3. Nirāsaso so uda āsasāno? [1090]
Paññāṇavā so uda paññakappī?
Muniṃ ahaṃ, Sakka, yathā vijaññaṃ,
tam me viyācikkha, samantacakkhu.

Nirāsaso so, na so āsasāno,
paññāṇavā so, na ca paññakappī;
—evam pi, Todeyya, muniṃ vijāna
akiñcanaṃ kāmabhava asattan ti.

KAPPAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (x)

1. Majjhe sarasmiṃ tiṭṭhataṃ (icc-āyasmā Kappo) [1092]
oghe jāte mahabbhaye
jarāmaccuparetānaṃ dīpaṃ pabrūhi, mārisa,
tvaṃ ca me dīpaṃ akkhāhi yatha-y-idaṃ nāparaṃ siyā.
2. Majjhe sarasmiṃ tiṭṭhataṃ (Kappāti Bhagavā) [1093]
oghe jāte mahabbhaye
jarāmaccuparetānaṃ dīpaṃ pabrūmi, Kappa, te;
3. —akiñcanaṃ anādānaṃ etaṃ dīpaṃ anāparaṃ; [1094]
'Nibbānaṃ' iti naṃ brūmi jarāmaccuparikkhayaṃ.

Todeyya's Question (ix)

Todeyya: If appetites no longer dwell within,
if Cravings ne'er arise nor doubts persist,
—say, what Release has such a man attained? [1088]

The Lord: If appetites no longer dwell within,
if Cravings ne'er arise nor doubts persist,
—final Release has such a man attained. [1089]

Todeyya: Longs he for anything?
Or are all longings dead?
Has he won lore? Or must
he still amass fresh lore?
All-seeing Sákyañ,
answer me this, that I
may recognize 'a sage'. [1090]

The Lord: He longs for nothing now;
all longings now are dead.
All lore is won, nor need
he still amass fresh lore.
By this too recognize
'a sage',—that what he was
has passed away, and now
he stands beyond the reach
of pleasures and rebirth. [1091]

Kappa's Question (x)

Kappa: Reveal to those whom fearsome tides surround,
reveal to those forspent with eld and death,
an island citadel. Point out to me
an island where all this will be no more. [1092]

The Lord: Kappa, for those whom fearsome tides surround,
for those forspent with eld, forspent with death,
an island citadel exists (say I). [1093]

Nirvāna is that island's name; and there
the old has passed away and nothing fresh
can lodgment find; no more come death and eld. [1094]

- †. Etad aññāya ye satā dīṭṭhadhammābhinibbutā, [1095]
na te Māravasānugā, na te Mārassa paddhagū ti.

JĀTUKAṆṆIMĀṆĀVAPUCCHĀ (xi)

1. Suttvān' ahaṃ Vīraṃ akāmakāmiṃ [1096]
(icc-āyasmā Jātukaṇṇi)
oghātigaṃ puṭṭhuṃ akāmaṃ āgamaṃ.
Santipadaṃ brūhi, sahājanetta,
yathātacchaṃ, Bhagavā, brūhi me taṃ,

Bhagavā hi kāme abhibhuyya iriyati, [1097]
Ādicco va paṭhaviṃ teji tejasā;
parittapañña me, bhūripañña,
ācikkha Dhammaṃ yaṃ ahaṃ vijāññaṃ
jātijarāya idha vippahānaṃ.

3. Kāmesu vinaya gedhaṃ, nekkhammaṃ daṭṭhu khemato, [1098]
(Jātukaṇṇīti Bhagavā)
uggahitaṃ nirattaṃ vā mā te vijjittha kiñcanaṃ.

4. Yaṃ pubbe taṃ visosehi; pacchā te māhu kiñcanaṃ;
majjhe ce no gahessasi, upasanto carissasi.

5. Sabbaso nāmarūpasmīṃ vītagedhassa, brāhmaṇa, [1100]
āsavā 'ssa na vijjanti yehi maccuvasaṃ vaje ti.

BHADRĀVUDHAMĀṆĀVAPUCCHĀ (xii)

1. Okañjahaṃ taṇhacchidaṃ anejaṃ [1101]
(icc-āyasmā Bhadrāvudho)
nandiñjahaṃ oghatiṇṇaṃ vimuttaṃ
kappañjahaṃ abhiyāce sumedhaṃ;
suttvāna nāgassa apanamissanti ito

And they who, grasping this, have 'passed away'
while yet in mindfulness on earth they dwell, [1095]
are not the thralls of Māra, nor his slaves.

Jatukaṇṇi's Question (xi)

Jatukaṇṇi: News of a 'Victor', dead [1096]
to appetites, and safe
beyond this welter, brings
me here to beg the Lord
(on whom omniscience
flashed sudden and entire)
to shew the way of Peace.

For, as the sunlight dominates [1097]
the earth, so moves the sov'ran Lord
to dominate o'er appetites.
Sage, teach my ignorance
thy Truth, that I on earth
may slough mortality.

The Lord: Get rid of appetite for pleasure's gauds; [1098]
peace in Renunciation find; let nought
find lodgment, nought require to be expelled.

Consume to ashes past iniquities; [1099]
thereafter let no fresh defilement grow;
if—meantime—thou contract no current guilt,
thy feet shall tread the tranquil path of Peace.

If, brahmin, Personality has lost [1100]
its fascination, Cankers never rise
to bind man thrall and vassal unto Death.

Bhadrāvudha's Question (xii)

Bhadrāvudha: I pray the Lord who left [1101]
his home and Cravings quenched,
who scorned delights, who crossed
the Flood, and in Release
shed Time, and wisdom found!
We wait an utterance,
great saint, ere we depart

2. nānā janā janapadehi sangatā, [1102]
 tava, Vīra, vākyam abhikaṃkhamānā.
 Tesam tuvaṃ sādhu viyākarohi,
 tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.
3. Ādānataṇhaṃ vinayetha sabbam [1103]
(Bhadrāvudhāti Bhagavā)
 uddham adho tiriyaṃ cāpi majjhe.
 Yaṃ yaṃ hi lokasmim upādiyanti,
 ten' eva Māro anveti jantum.
4. Tasmā pajānaṃ na upādiyetha [1104]
 bhikkhu sato kiñcanaṃ sabbaloke,
 ādānasatte iti pekkhamāno
 pajam imam maccudheyye visattan ti.

UDAYAMĀNAVAPUCCHĀ (xiii)

1. Jhāyim virajam āsīnam katakiccam anāsavaṃ [1105]
(icc-āyasmā Udayo)
 pāraguṃ sabbadhammānaṃ atthi pañhena āgamaṃ :
 aññāvimokkham pabrūhi, avijjāya pabhedanaṃ.
2. Pahānaṃ kāmaccandānaṃ domanassāna' cūbhayaṃ,
(Udayāti Bhagavā)
 thīnassa ca panūdanaṃ, kukkuccānaṃ nivāraṇaṃ,
3. upekkhāsatisamsuddham dhammatakka purejaraṃ, [1107]
 —aññāvimokkham pabrūmi avijjāya pabhedanaṃ.
4. Kirīṇ-su-saṃyojano loko? Kirī su tassa vicāraṇaṃ? [1108]
 Ki' ss' assa vipphānena nibbānaṃ iti vuccati?
5. Nandisaṃyojano loko; vitakk' assa vicāraṇā; [1109]
 taṇhāya vipphānena nibbānaṃ iti vuccati.
6. Kathaṃ satassa carato viññāṇaṃ uparujjhati? [1110]
 Bhagavantam puṭṭhuṃ āgamma taṃ suṇoma vaco tava.
7. Ajjhataṇ ca bahiddhā ca vedanaṃ nābhinandato [1111]
 evaṃ satassa carato viññāṇaṃ uparujjhatīti.

who come from divers lands [1102]
 to hear the Victor's words.
 Make all things clear; since clear
 this Doctrine is to thee.

The Lord: Shed Cravings to acquire [1103]
 aught here, or anywhere;
 what men assimilate
 brings Māra close at heel.

So, realizing this,
 let mindful Almsmen cleave
 to nothing in this world,
 but view as "Cravings' slaves"
 mankind in Māra's toils.

Udaya's Question (xiii)

Udaya: To him who stainless sits in Reverie, [1105]
 with task fulfilled, with Cankers gone, and versed
 in ev'ry mental state, I come to ask
 this question:—Tell me how can ignorance
 be quenched, till Knowledge brings Deliverance.

The Lord: It comes from shedding appetite for joys [1106]
 and griefs, from quelling Crassness of the mind,
 from stoutly keeping evil deeds at bay;
 it comes (say I) with poise and watchfulness; [1107]
 it follows in the train of thinking right.

Udaya: What fetters, what explores, the world around? [1108]
 What must be dropped before 'Nirvāna' comes?

The Lord: Joys fetter, thought explores, the world around; [1109]
 Cravings must cease before 'Nirvāna' comes.

Udaya: How must man walk in watchful mindfulness [1110]
 to dissipate the heritage of mind?
 —We come to ask the Lord to tell us that.

The Lord: Till feelings—inly bred, or from without— [1111]
 have ceased to fill the heart with wonted joy,
 —on must man walk in watchful mindfulness
 to dissipate the heritage of mind.

POSĀLAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (xiv)

1. Yo atītaṃ ādisati anejo chinnaśaṃsayo,
(icc-āyasmā Posālo) [1112]
pāraguṃ sabbadhammānaṃ atthi pañhena āgamaṃ:—
2. Vibhūtarūpasaññissa sabbakāyappahāyino
ajjhatañ ca bahiddhā ca 'Na 'tthi kiñcīti' passato,
ñāṇaṃ Sakkānupucchāmi: Kathaṃ neyyo tathāvidho?
3. Viññāṇaṭṭhitiyo sabbā
abhiñānaṃ, Tathāgato
tiṭṭhantaṃ enaṃ jānāti: Vimuttaṃ tapparāyanaṃ. (Posālāti Bhagavā) [1114]
4. Ākiñcaññasambhavaṃ ñatvā: Nandī saṃyojanaṃ iti,
evam etaṃ abhiññāya tato tattha vipassati:
Etaṃ ñāṇaṃ tathaṃ tassa Brāhmaṇassa vusīmato ti. [1115]

MOGHARĀJAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (xv)

1. Dvāhaṃ Sakkaṃ apucchissaṃ, na me vyākāsi cakkhumā. [1116]
(icc-āyasmā Mogharājā)
Yāvataṭṭhiyaṃ ca devīsi vyākaroṭīti me suttaṃ.
2. Ayaṃ loko paro loko brahmaloko sadevako;
diṭṭhin te nābhijānāmi Gotamassa yasassino. [1117]
3. Evaṃ abhikkantadassāvaṃ atthi pañhena āgamaṃ:—
Kathaṃ lokaṃ avekkhantaṃ Maccurājā na passatī? [1118]
4. Suññato lokaṃ avekkhassu, Mogharāja, sadā sato
attānudiṭṭhiṃ ūhacca;—evaṃ maccutaro siyā,
evaṃ lokaṃ avekkhantaṃ Maccurājā na passatīti. [1119]

Posāla's Question (xiv)

Posāla: I come to question him who reads the past,
 who yearns for nothing, entertains no doubts,
 and sounds the depths of ev'ry mental state.

I ask thee, Sākyán, what lore is his [1113]
 who scans the Formless, disregards mere Form,
 and finds—within, without—just Nothingness.
 I ask:—Can such a man go further still?

The Lord: Through comprehending each and ev'ry stage
 which mind's accumulations reach, He knows
 (who 'found the Truth'), the stage attained by him
 you cite and what Release his stage ensures.

Your Brahmin who has greatly lived, has grasped [1115]
 from whence proceeds the sense of Nothingness,
 and comprehended joys as 'binding chains',
 —Such knowledge true your Brahmin has achieved.

Mogharāja's Question (xv)

Mogharāja: Twice have I asked thee, Sākyán, yet got [1116]
 no answer. 'But the third time' (rumour says)
 'the godlike sage at last vouchsafes reply.'

Thy views of this and other worlds and skies [1117]
 I know not, Gotama, but hither come

to ask of thee, thou sage supreme, the way [1118]
 to view the world, to be unseen by Death.

The Lord: Then never cease to view the world as void, [1119]
 abjuring 'Personality', till Death
 be overthrown, and thou by him unseen.

PINGIYAMĀṆAVAPUCCHĀ (xvi)

1. Jiṇṇo 'ham asmi abalo vītavaṇṇo, [1120]
(*icc-āyasmā Pingiyo*)
nettā na suddhā, savanaṃ na phāsu;
māhaṃ nassaṃ momuho antarāya;
ācikkha Dhammaṃ yam ahaṃ vijaññaṃ
jātijarāya idha vippahānaṃ.
2. Disvāna rūpesu vihaññaṃāne, [1121]
(*Pingiyāti Bhagavā*)
—ruppanti rūpesu janā pamattā—
tasmā tuvaṃ, Pingiya, appamatto
jahassu rūpaṃ apunabbhavāya.
3. Disā catasso, vidisā catasso, [1122]
uddhaṃ, adho,—dasa disā imāyo.
na tuyhaṃ adiṭṭhaṃ asutaṃ mutaṃ vā
atho aviññātaṃ kiñci na 'tthi loka.
Ācikkha Dhammaṃ yam ahaṃ vijaññaṃ
jātijarāya idha vippahānaṃ.
4. Taṇhādhipanne manuje pekkhamāno [1123]
(*Pingiyāti Bhagavā*)
santāpajāte jarasā parete
tasmā tuvaṃ, Pingiya, appamatto
jahassu taṇhaṃ apunabbhavāyāti.

Idam avoca Bhagavā Magadhesu viharanto Pāsāṇake cetiye paricāraka-
soḷasānaṃ brāhmaṇānaṃ ajjhiṭṭho puṭṭho puṭṭho pañhe vyākasi. Ekamekassa
ce pi pañhassa attham aññāya dhammam aññāya dhammānudhammaṃ paṭi-
pajjeyya, gaccheyy' eva jarāmarasassa pāraṃ; 'Pāraṅamaniya ime dhammā'
ti, tasmā imassa dhammapariyāyassa 'Pārāyanan' t' eva adhivacanaṃ.

1. Ajito, Tissa-Metteyyo, Puṇṇako, atha Mettagū, [1124]
Dhotako, Upasivo ca, Nando ca, atha Hemako,

Pingiya's Question (xvi)

Pingiya: Worn out am I and frail, [1120]
 squalid to view, purblind,
 and hard my hearing grows.
 Lest I in folly die,
 teach me on earth to learn
 how birth and eld to end.

The Lord: In view of th' havoc wrought [1121]
 in men by things of sense
 (senses plague heedless men!),
 take heed to scout them all
 and so escape rebirth.

Pingiya: Ten realms there are in all:— [1122]
 above, beneath; north, south,
 east, west, and four between;
 in none of these has aught
 escaped thy mind or ken!
 Teach me on earth to learn
 how birth and eld to end.

The Lord: Observing Craving's slaves
 harassed and spent with eld,
 take heed, O Pingiya,
 and diligently seek
 to root all Craving out
 and so escape rebirth.

Thus spoke the Lord as he was dwelling among the people of Magadha at Rock-Shrine, when, in response to the train of sixteen brahmins, he answered all their successive questions. Anyone who, comprehending the import of each several question and the Doctrine involved, walks conformably to the plenitude of the Doctrine, will assuredly pass beyond death and eld. For such states of mind 'conduct to the shore beyond'; and therefore this exposition of Doctrine is styled—'The Way Across'.

Came Ajitá and Tissa Métteyyá [1124]
 and Púṇṇaká and kindly Méttagú,
 with Úpasīva, Nanda, Dhótaká.

2. Todeyya-Kappā dubhayo, Jatukaṇṇi ca paṇḍito,
Bhadrāvudho, Udayo ca, Posālo cāpi brāhmaṇo,
Mogharājā ca medhāvī, Pingiyo ca mahā isi,
3. —ete Buddhaṃ upāgañchum sampannacaraṇaṃ isiṃ, [1126]
pucchantaṃ nipuṇe pañhe Buddhasaṭṭhaṃ upāgamum.
4. Tesāṃ Buddho vyākāsi pañhe puṭṭho yathātathaṃ; [1127]
pañhānaṃ veyyākaraṇena tosesi brāhmaṇe Muni.
5. Te tositā cakkhumatā Buddhen' Ādiccabandhunā [1128]
brahmacariyam acarimṣu varapaññāssa santike.
6. Ekamekassa pañhassa yathā Buddhena desitaṃ
tathā yo paṭipajjeyya, gacche pāraṃ apārato,
7. apārā pāraṃ gaccheyya bhāvento maggam uttamaṃ. [1130]
Maggo so pārangamanāya; tasmā 'Pārāyanaṃ' iti.
8. Pārāyanaṃ anugāyissaṃ; (*icc-āyasmā Pingiyo*) [1131]
yathā addakkhi tathā akkhāsi vimalo bhūrimedhaso
nikkāmo nibbano Nāgo. Kissa hetu musā bhape?
9. Pahīnamalamohassa mānamakkhappahāyino
handāhaṃ kittayissāmi giraṃ vaṇṇūpasamhitaṃ:
10. Tamonudo Buddho samantacakkhu [1133]
lokantaḡū sabbabhavātivatto
anāsavo sabbadukkhappahīno
Saccavhayo, brahme, upāsito me.
11. Dijo yathā kubbanakaṃ pahāya [1134]
bahupphalaṃ kānanaṃ āvaseyya,
evam p' ahaṃ appadasse pahāya
mahodadhiṃ haṃsor iv' ajjhapatto.

and Hémaká, Todéyya, Káppa too,
the learned Jatukaṇṇi, Údayá,
Bhadrávuḍhá, the brahmin Póśālá,
quick Mógharājā, Píngiyá the sage.

These came to Buddha, blameless sage, and asked
their searching questions of the matchless Lord,

who answer'd all they asked with words of truth [1127]
which satisfied those brahmins in their quest.

And, being satisfied, they all embraced
the higher life as followers convinced
of that all-seeing Kinsman of the Sun,
Lord of Enlightenment, supreme in Lore.

Now, whoso walks as Buddha's answers teach, [1129]
shall win Across and gain the Shore Beyond,

—shall win across, along that Way of Ways [1130]
which guides men safely o'er the surge of life
and so is rightly styled 'the Way Across'.

[*Píngiya to Bāvari (on return).*]

'The Way Across' my lips shall now proclaim. [1131]

As he discerned it, so he set it forth,
—that spotless, wisest Lord, above delights
and yearnings. Wherefore should he publish lies?

Come, let me tell the lovely utterance [1132]
of him whom crassness smirches not, nor pride
besets, nor foul hypocrisy invades:—

The darkness he dispels, [1133]
—the Buddha, who sees all,
who plumbs the universe,
and overcomes rebirth,
in whom no Cankers dwell,
who triumphs o'er all Ill.
Brahmin, I serve 'Truth's Lord'.

As birds desert the brake
for woodlands bountiful,
so I quit teachers blind
and, like the swan, have gained
the ocean's amplitude.

12. Ye 'me pubbe viyākaraṃsu huraṃ Gotamasāsanaṃ
—icc-āsi, iti bhavissati—sabban taṃ itihūtihaṃ,
sabban taṃ takkavaḍḍhanaṃ.
13. Eko tamanudāsīno jātimā so pabbhaṃkaro
Gotamo bhūripaṇṇāṇo, Gotamo bhūrimedhaso,
14. yo me dhammam adesesi sandiṭṭhikaṃ akālikaṃ [1137]
taṇhakkhayam anītikaṃ yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci.
15. Kin nu tamhā vippavasasi muhuttam api, Pingiya, [1138]
Gotamā bhūripaṇṇāṇā, Gotamā bhūrimedhasā,
16. yo te dhammaṃ adesesi sandiṭṭhikaṃ akālikaṃ [1139]
taṇhakkhayam anītikaṃ yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci?
17. Nāhaṃ tamhā vippavasāmi muhattam api, brāhmaṇa, [1140]
Gotamā bhūripaṇṇāṇā, Gotamā bhūrimedhasā,
18. yo me dhammam adesesi sandiṭṭhikaṃ akālikaṃ [1141]
taṇhakkhayam anītikaṃ yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci.
19. Passāmi naṃ manasā cakkhunā va [1142]
rattindivaṃ, brāhmaṇa, appamatto;
namassamāno vivaseṃ rattim;
—ten' eva maññāmi avippavāsāṃ.
20. Saddhā ca pīti ca mano satī ca [1143]
nāpentī me Gotamasāsanamhā;
yaṃ yaṃ disaṃ vajati bhūripaṇṇo,
sa tena ten' eva nato 'ham asmi.
21. Jijṇassa me dubbalāthāmakassa [1144]
ten' eva kāyo na pareti tattha.
Saṃkappayattāya vajāmi niccaṃ.
Mano hi me, brāhmaṇa, tena yutto.

The only things I learned from those who taught
me, ere I heard what Gotama proclaimed,
were hearsay origins and destinies,
—mere hearsay, fostering perplexities. [1135]

As in lone splendour shines a matchless gem,
dispelling darkness, spreading light around,
—so shines th' abounding lore of Gotama
and his abounding wit to comprehend. [1136]

From him I learn'd his Doctrine,—potent here
and now, yet outside time—which, utterly
destroying Cravings, brings man saving health,
—that peerless Doctrine without counterpart. [1137]

Bāvari: Why then absent yourself one moment's space
from Gotama's abounding wit and lore, [1138]

from whom you learn'd his Doctrine,—potent here
and now, yet outside time—which, utterly
destroying Cravings, brings man saving health,
—that peerless Doctrine, without counterpart? [1139]

Pṅgiyā: I am not absent, sir, one moment's space
from Gotama's abounding wit and lore, [1140]

from whom I learn'd his Doctrine,—potent here
and now, yet outside time—which, utterly
destroying Cravings, brings man saving health,
—that peerless Doctrine, without counterpart. [1141]

My mind has eyes to see
him, brahmin, night and day;
in lauding him I spend
my nights, and never seem
from him to be away. [1142]

His teachings still engage
faith, zest, mind, vigilance;
and wheresoe'er he turns,
I too am thither drawn. [1143]

Worn out and frail am I,
so that my body fails
to hasten thither where
my thoughts consort with him
to whom my mind cleaves fast. [1144]

22. Panke sayāno pariphandamāno
dīpā dīpaṃ upallaviṃ.
Ath' addasāsiṃ Sambuddhaṃ oghatiṇṇaṃ anāsavaṃ [1145]
23. Yathā ahu Vakkali muttasaddho
Bhadrāvudho Āḷavi-Gotamo ca,
evaṃ eva tvaṃ pi paṃuñcassu saddhaṃ
gamiṣṣasi tvaṃ, Pingiya, maccudheyypāraṃ.
24. Esa bhiyyo paṣīdāmi sutvāna munino vaco. [1147]
Vivaṭacchado Sambuddho akhilo paṭibhānavā
25. adhideve abhiññāya sabbaṃ vedi parovaraṃ, [1148]
pañhān' antakaro Satthā kankhīnaṃ paṭijānataṃ.
26. Asaṃhīraṃ asaṃkappaṃ yassa na 'tthi upamā kvaci [1149]
addhā gamiṣṣāmi; na m' ettha kankhā.
—Evaṃ maṃ dhārehi adhimuttacittan ti.

As through life's sloughs from knoll
to knoll I flounder'd on,
mine eyes beheld the Lord
of All-Enlightenment,
in whom no Cankers dwell,
who found the 'Way Across'.

[1145]

The Lord: As trust saved Vakkali,
and saved Bhadrāvudha,
as trust saved Āḷavi,
so Pingiya, evince
an equal trust, and thou
shalt pass beyond the grisly realms of Death.

[1146]

Pingiya: My gladness grows the greater as I hear
the sage's words. The All-Enlighten'd Lord
has stripped away the veil from things; his mind
is all-embracing, ready-witted, sure.

[1147]

Clear vision into things sublime has brought
things great and small within the Master's ken.
He solves all doubts, till doubters doubt no more.

[1148]

To th' unsurpassable, th' unchangeable,
which has no counterpart, assuredly
I shall attain; no doubt of this have I.
Account me, Lord, as winning this Release.

[1149]

THE END

PALI INDEX

(The references are to the gāthās in Fausbøll's numerical order, unless the reference is preceded by the italicized letter *p.*, which indicates a page of the text of the present volume.

This index does not attempt to cover the whole lexicographical field, for which see Helmer Smith's *Vocabulary of Sutta-Nipāta* at pp. 645-791 of his P.T.S. edition of the Paramatthajotikā II. As a rule, only those words are here included which have reference to the *thought* of the Sutta-Nipāta.)

- akankha 477, 1059
- akālika 567, 1137, 1139, 1141
- akiñcana 176, 455, 490, 501, 620, 645,
1059, 1091, 1094
- akkhātā 167
- Aggālava 342
- Aggika-Bhāradvāja *p.* 30
- Aggika-Bhāradvāja-sutta (=Vasala-
s°) *p.* 30.
- Anguttar-āpana *p.* 132
- accanta-suddhi 794
- Ajita Kesakambali *p.* 120
- Ajita (mānava) 1006, 1033 &c.
- ajjhataṃ 7, 203, 516, 521, 526, 527,
530, 532, 738, 916, 917, 919, 1111,
1113
- ajjhata-cintī 174, 388
- ajjhata-santi 837, 838
- aññā-vimokha 1105, 1107
- Aṭṭa *p.* 158
- Atṭhaka-vagga *p.* 184
- attaṭṭhapaññā 75
- attañjaha 790
- attadatta 284
- Attadaṇḍa-sutta *p.* 224
- attānudiṭṭhi 1119
- atthangata 1075, 1076
- adukkhamasukha 738
- adhamma 310, 312, 450
- adhiveva 1148
- anangaṇa 517, 662
- an-aññaneyya 55, 364
- anarahā 135
- anariya-dhamma 782
- anassāvin 853
- an-ālamba 173
- anāvila 160, 161, 483, 515, 637, 1039
- anāsava 178, 212, 219, 765, 996, 1082-3,
1105, 1133, 1145
- anāsasāna 369
- aniketasārin 844, 970
- anissita 66, 363, 364, 748, 752, 753,
811, 849, 856, 947, 1069
- anukampin 693
- anuṇṇata 702
- anuttara 179, 330, 345, 478, 486, 554,
557, 560, 690, 1003
- anuddhata 850
- anudhamma-cārin 69
- anupādāna 546, 572, 753
- anupādiyati 470, 800, 915
- anupādisesa 876
- anubuddha 384
- anuyutta 553, 663, 814, 972
- anurodha-virodha-vippahina 362
- anuvidita 528, 530

- anusaya 14, 342, 369, 545, 571
 anusuyyaka 325
 anusotagāmin 319
 anussada 624
 anūpalitta 211, 392, 468, 790, 845
 aneja 87, 372, 477, 638, 646, 751, 920
 952, 953, 1043, 1101, 1112
 antakara 32, 337, 510, 511, 539, 1148
 antagū 401, 458, 463, 539, 1133
 apihālu 852
 a-ppagabbha 852, 941
 a-ppaṭigha 42
 appiccha 628, 707
 Ababa *and* Abbuda *p.* 158
 abhiññā(ya) 534, 743, 992, 1040,
 1042, 1115, 1148
 abhisamaya 342, 737, 758
 amaccharin 852, 860
 amata 80, 204, 453, 635, 960
 amama 220, 469, 494, 495, 777
 amosa-dhamma 758
 arati 270, 271, 436, 642, 835, 938, 969
 arahat 403, 539, 590, 644, 1003
 ariya 90, 115, 177, 330, 353, 533, 535,
 660, 758, 761, 762, 765, 782, 783,
 822
 alasa 96
 alippamāna 71, 213, 456
 alinacitta 68, 717
 alola 22, 65, 165, 707
 avijjā 199, 277, 729, 730, 1026
 aviddasu 762
 avidvā 728
 aviruddha 365, 630, 704, 854
 avihimsā 292
 avītatanha 776, 901
 avītivatta 796
 avedhadhamma 322
 Asita 679, 686, 698, 699
 asuci 75, 197, 205, 243
 asuddhi 893, 900
 asura 310, 681
 asoka 593
 Ahaha *p.* 158
 ahirika 133
 ākiñcañña 976, 1070-2, 1115
 ājīva 407, 617
 ājīvika 381
 ātappa 1062
 ātāpin 926
 ātura 331
 Āthabbaṇa 927 (the Atharva-Veda)
 ādāna 364, 620, 794, 1103-4
 ādicca 550, 569, 1097
 Ādicca 54, 423, 540, 915, 1128
 ānisaṁsa 256, 784, 797, 952
 Āpaṇa *p.* 132, 137
 āmagandha 240-2, 248, 251
 Āmagandha-sutta *p.* 58
 āyatana 373, 399, 406
 āyāga 486
 āraddha 68, 344
 ārammaṇa 474, 506, 945, 1069
 ālaya 177, 535, 635
 Ālavaka-sutta *p.* 44
 Ālavī 191; *p.* 82; 1146
 āvila 160, 967
 āsaya 56, 972
 āsava 82, 162-3, 178, 370, 374, 535,
 546, 572, 749
 āsasāna 1090-1
 āsā 474, 634, 794, 864-5
 āsimsati 779, 1044, 1046
 āhāra 747-8
 āhuti 249, 458
 icchā 133, 306, 311, 706-7, 872;
 p. 156
 Icchānankala *p.* 146
 iñjita 750-1, 1048
 itibhavābhavatā 6
 itihāsa 1020
 itihītiha 1084, 1135

- ito-ja 271
 ito-nidāna 271, 865, 870
 itthabhāva 729, 740, 752, 1044
 iddhābhisamkhāra *p.* 138
 iddhimant 179
 Inda 310, 316, 679, 1024
 indriya 63, 214, 250, 340, 516, 697
 iriyāpatha 385
 isi 82, 284, 356, 458, 679, 684, 689,
 691, 698, 1008, 1025, 1043-5, 1116
 ukkā-dhāra 335-6
 ukkhitta-paligha 622
 ujju-gata 350, 477
 Ujjeni 1011
 utṭhātar 96, 187
 Uṭṭhāna-sutta *p.* 78
 unṇamati 206, 366, 829, 928
 utūpasevanā 249
 utuveramaṇi 291
 Udaya 1008, 1105, 1125
 uddham (adho, &c.) 537, 1055, 1068,
 1103, 1122
 upakkilesa 66
 upadhi 33-4, 364, 374, 546, 572, 728,
 1050
 upadhika 789, 1057
 upanāhin 116
 upanissita 777
 upaya 786-7, 897
 uparujjhati 724, 726, 1036-7, 1110-11
 uparodhana 732, 761
 upalippati 211, 547, 779, 812
 upavāda 389, 929
 upavutth-uposatha 403
 upasanta 342, 848, 857, 919, 949,
 1087, 1099
 upasama 257, 737
 Upasīva 1007, 1069-70, 1124
 upādā 168-9, 363
 upādāna 170, 358, 475, 546, 742-3
 upādiyati 470, 752, 1103-4
 upādi-sesa 354, 876
 upekkhaka 515, 855, 912
 upekkhā 67, 73, 972, 1107
 uposatha 153, 401-3
 Uppalaka *p.* 158
 ubhantaṃ 1040, 1042
 ubhay-anta 801
 uraga 1-17, 604
 Uruga-vagga *p.* 2; Uruga-sutta *p.* 2
 usabha 26-7, 29, 416, 646, 684, 996
 ussada 515, 624, 783, 855, 920
 kk 43, 29
 ūhacca 1119
 ejā 87, 751, 791
 ettāvat' (aggam) 875-6; 478
 Erāvaṇa 379
 ereti 325, 350
 elamūga 70
 oka 628, 844, 966, 1101
 Okkāka 302, 306, 991
 okkhitta-cakkhu 63, 411, 972
 ogha 4, 21, 173-4, 178, 183-4, 219,
 273, 471, 495, 538, 771, 779, 823,
 1052, 1059, 1064, 1069, 1070,
 1081-3, 1092-3, 1096, 1101
 ottāpin 133
 oma 153, 177, 343, 860, 954
 ora(m) 1-17, 804
 kankhā 58, 477, 514, 541, 1025, 1149
 kankhati 516 (kālaṃ), 540, 1021
 kankhin 510, 1148
 Kaccāyana (Pakudha) *p.* 120
 Kaṇha (= Māra) 355, 439, 967
 Kaṇhasirivhaya (isi) 689
 katakicca 1105
 kathamjīvin 181
 kathamāssin *and* kathamsila 848
 kadariya 133, 362
 Kapilavatthu 991, 1012

- Kapila-sutta (=Dhammacariya-s°)
 p. 68
 kappa 373,
 1101
 Kappa 344, 349, 354
 Kappa (māṇava) 1007, 1092-3, 1125
 kappiya 521, 860, 914
 kappeti 283, 794, 799, 803
 kamma 127, 136, 140, 142, 163 *A and B*,
 164, 215, 253, 324, 330, 365, 407,
 537, 587, 596, 599, 650-4, 661,
 666, 846, 899, 900
 Kalaha-vivāda-sutta *p.* 204
 Kasi-Bhāradvāja-sutta *p.* 20
 kāma 50-1, 60, 92, 139, 160-1, 166,
 175-6, 239, 243, 272, 284, 315, 337,
 359, 361, 423-4, 435-6, 445, 461,
 464, 467, 497, 639, 685, 766-9,
 771-4, 823, 825, 844, 857, 940,
 945, 963, 1039, 1041, 1046, 1070-2,
 1088-9, 1096-7, 1106, 1131
 Kāma-sutta *p.* 184
 kāya 78, 193-4, 198, 203, 206, 340,
 407, 548-9, 669, 1074, 1113, 1144
 Kāyavicchandānika-sutta (=Vijaya-
 s°) *p.* 46
 kāla 73, 130, 326, 343, 386-7, 463-6,
 490-503, 567, 971, 975
 kiccākicca 298, 715
 kiñcana 645, 949, 951, 1098-9, 1104,
 1122 (*and see a-k°*)
 kimissita 458, 1043
 Kimśīla-sutta *p.* 78
 kibbisa 246, 665-6, 671-2, 676
 kimṇattin 513, 518, 528, 533
 kilesa 348
 kukkuc(c)a 82, 481, 850, 925, 972,
 1106
 kutoja 270
 kutonidāna 270, 864, 866, 869, 871
 kuppa 784
 Kumuda *p.* 158
 kumbhadūhana 309
 kuladūsaka 89
 Kuvera (=Vessavaṇa) 380
 kusala 14, 321, 372, 523, 525, 536,
 591, 686, 712, 782-3, 798, 825, 830,
 876, 878-9, 881, 885, 888, 898, 903,
 909, 1078
 kusalanuesin 965
 Kusināra 1012
 kusīta 68
 kuha(ka) 56, 328, 852, 957, 984, 987
 Keniya (a jaṭila) *p.* 132, 134, 136, 140,
 142
 kevala 393, 517, 524-5, 529, 759
 kevalin 82, 481, 490, 519, 595, 878
 Kesa-kambalin (Ajita) *p.* 120
 Kokāliya *p.* 156, 158
 Kokāliya-sutta *p.* 156
 kodha 1, 96, 245, 362, 469, 537, 866,
 868, 928, 968
 kodhana 19, 116
 komāra-brahmacariya 289
 kovida 484, 627, 653, 763
 kosa *p.* 136, 138; 525, 1022
 Kosambī 1012
 Kosala *p.* 158; 422, 976, 996
 Khaggavisāṇakappa 35-75; sutta *p.* 10
 khaṇa 325, 333
 khattiya 114, 138, 314-15, 417-18,
 420, 458, 553, 1043-5
 khanti 189, 292, 294, 623, 897
 khaya 70, 209, 475, 598, 732, 736,
 739, 992
 khara 249, 472
 khila 19, 212, 477, 540, 780, 973,
 1059, 1147
 khīṇa 82, 158-9, 162-3, 370, 481,
 493, 514, 539, 644, 656, 777
 khuppiṇāsa 436
 khetta 82, 473, 481, 486, 524, 769,
 858

- khema 424-5, 454, 809, 896, 953, 1098
 Gangā *p.* 44
 gantha 219, 347, 794, 847, 857, 912
 Gandhabba 644
 gambhīro 173, 175-6, 627
 garaha(tī) 141, 313, 660, 665, 778
 gahaṭṭha 43, 90, 134, 393, 398, 487-9, 628
 -gahaṇika *p.* 146
 gāthābhigīta 81, 480
 giddha 210, 243, 248, 328, 809
 giha 456, 464, 487, 497
 gihiṇ 44, 64, 220-1, 404
 guṇa 50-1, 171, 284, 337, 663, 678, 714
 gutta 63, 78, 250, 413, 971
 guyha *p.* 138; 1022
 Guhaṭṭhaka-sutta *p.* 184
 gedha 65, 210, 819, 945, 1098
 gocara 39, 280, 605, 961
 Gotama 91, 1136-8, 1140
 Gotama (Āḷavi) 1146
 Gotama-sāsana 1084, 1135, 1143
 gotta 104, 315, 423, 455-6, 648, 1004, 1018-19
 Godhāvarī 977
 ghara 43, 188, 337, 359, 406
 ghāteti 309, 394, 629, 705
 cakka 552, 554-7, 684, 698
 cakkhumant 31, 160-1, 405, 541, 562, 570, 596, 706, 956, 992-3, 1028, 1116
 Carṇikī (brāhmaṇa) *p.* 146
 caṇḍālaputta (= Mātanga) 137
 catuvisatakkhara (= Sāvittī) 457 (cf. 568)
 canda 465, 498, 569, 598, 637, 1016
 cāga 188-9, 719
 citta 23, 37, 50, 65, 68, 160-1, 163 A and B, 164, 341, 390, 434-5, 483, 507, 689, 975, 985, 1149
 cutūpapāta 517, 902
 Cunda (kammāraputta) 83-5
 Cunda-sutta *p.* 24
 Cūla-vagga *p.* 54
 Cūla-viyūha-sutta *p.* 210
 cetasa 66, 584, 593
 cetovimutti 725, 727
 chanda 171, 203-4, 364, 387, 767, 778, 781, 835, 865-7, 913, 975, 1026, 1086
 chinna- 219, 711, 715, 948, 1111
 jaṭā 249, 689, 1010
 Jatukannin 1007, 1096, 1125
 janavādadhamma 973
 jap(p)a 328, 595
 jappati 773, 839, 899, 902, 945
 Jambusaṇḍa 552
 jaras and jarā 311, 575, 581, 725, 804, 1044-8, 1079, 1092-4
 Jarā-sutta *p.* 192
 jahāti 1, 211, 362, 500, 506, 589, 790, 809, 1101, 1121
 jāti 104, 136, 139, 141-2, 209, 275, 294, 351, 355, 421, 462, 467, 476, 484, 500, 517, 596, 599, 600-1, 610, 647, 650, 725, 727-9, 1004, 1045-8, 1052, 1056, 1060, 1079, 1081-2, 1097, 1120, 1122; *p.* 146
 jāla 62, 71, 213, 357, 527, 669
 jīgimsa- 690, 700
 jiguccha- 215, 852, 901
 jina 84, 372, 379, 523, 697-8, 989, 996
 jivhā *p.* 136, 138; 1022
 jīva 432
 jīvati 84, 88, 427, 440, 589, 615, 618, 804, 1029

jīvita 74, 275, 427, 574, 577, 589, 676,
775, 804, 931, 1077

jutimant 508, 539

juhātī 428, 1046

jotimant 348

jhāna 69, 156-7, 212, 503, 709, 972,
985, 1009

jhāyati¹ 165, 221, 425, 709

jhāyati² 818

jhāyin 638, 719, 925, 1009, 1105

ñāṇa 55, 372, 378, p. 172, 789, 799,
800, 839, 840, 868, 911, 987, 989,
1077-8, 1113, 1115

ñāti 104, 123, 579, 580, 589

Ṭaṅkitamañca p. 66

ṭhita 215, 250, 327-8, 359, 370, 381,
920, 1017

takka 209, 885-6, 972, 1084, 1107, 1135
taṇhā 3, 70, 83, 114, 306, 339, 355,
495-6, 640, 740-1, 746, 776, 854,
856, 916, 1068, 1085, 1101, 1103,
1109, 1123, 1137, 1139, 1141

tatha 9-13, 172, 1115

tathāgata xix-xx, p. 22; 236-8, 252,
347, 351, 467-78, 557, 1031, 1114

tapa 77, 249, 284, 292, 655, 901

tama 248, 278, 348, 763, 956, 975,

tarati 17, 21, 173-4, 178, 183-4, 273,
319, 321, 333, 367, 515, 545, 571,
706, 771, 791, 1045, 1053-4, 1059,
1064, 1066-7, 1069, 1070, 1085,
1087-9

tasara 215, 464, 497

tādin 86, 154-5, 219, 488, 509, 519,
520, 524-6, 530-2, 697, 712, 803,
957

Tārukkha (brāhmaṇa) p. 146; 594

titthakara pp. 120, 122

titthiya 381

tiriyaṃ 537, 1055, 1068, 1103

Tissa 814, 1006, 1040, 1124

Tissa-metteyya-sutta p. 196

tuma 890, 908

Tuvaṭṭaka-sutta p. 220

Tusita 955

tevijja 594-5

Todeyya 1007, 1088-9, 1091, 1125

thaddha 104

thambha 214, 245, 326, 437

thāvara-tasa 394, 629

thīna 437, 483, 942, 1106

Thera-paṇha-sutta (=Sāriputta-s°)
p. 228

-dakkhiṇa 1010; pp. 106, 156

dakkhiṇā 482, 485

Dakkhiṇāpatha 976

dakkhiṇeyya 488-9, 504, 509

daṇḍa 35, 312, 394, 629, 630, 688

danta 23, 370, 375, 463, 491-2, 513,
516, 570, 624

dama 189, 463, 542, 655

dayā 117

dalha 68, 293, 321, 332, 344, 357,
701, 821, 892-3, 905, 966

dassāvin 1005, 1043, 1118

dassin 57, 176, 209, 219, 344, 371, 385,
474, 478, 693, 793, 809, 848, 887,

diṭṭha 141, 178, 250, 343, 508, 761,
778, 788, 790, 793, 797-8, 802, 808,
812, 887, 897, 901, 914, 955, 1053,
1066, 1079, 1080-3, 1086-7, 1095,
1122

diṭṭhi 55, 116, 243, 471, 474, 781,
785, 787, 796, 799, 800, 802, 832-4,
836-7, 839, 840-1, 846-7, 851,
878, 880, 882, 895, 908, 910-11,
913, 1117, 1119

disā 42, 507, 719, 937, 939, 960, 1122,

dipad-uttama 83, 690, 995, 998

dīpa¹ 501 (attadīpa)

dīpa² 1092-4, 1145

dukkha 32, 36, 61, 67, 80, 170-2,
183-4, 250, 278, 337, 401, 454, 473,
531, 539, 574, 586, 626, 666, 678,
724, 726, 728, 731-2, 734-5, 738-9,
741-2, 744-5, 747-8, 750-1, 760,
762, 770, 774, 873, 970, 1033,
1049, 1050-1, 1056-8

deva 18-30, 139, 310, 333, 346, 384,
404, 521, 527, 543, 679, 680, 1047,
1063, 1081, 1148

devatā p. 26; 316, 986, 990, 995, 1043-5

dvayadhamma 886

Dvayatānupassanā-sutta p. 172

dhañña 60, 285, 302, 305

dhana 60, 104, 122, 185, 187, 285,
302-3, 305-7, 422, 659, 987

Dhaniya-sutta p. 4

dhamma 58, 69, 81, 83, 87-8, 92,
94, 141, 160-1, 163 A and B, 167,
180, 186, 188, 192, 211, 239, 250,
257, 274, 276, 288, 291, 293, 295,
298, 312-14, 316-18, 320, 322-3,
326-7, 330, 343, 351, 353, 361, 365,
368, 378, 380, 383-5, 387, 389,
391-3, 398, 404, 450, 453, 461, 471,
478, 480, 504, 527, 534, 536, 554-7,
575, 693-6, 699, 704, 749, 759,
763-4, 784-5, 787, 801, 803, 824,
837, 840, 861, 866, 868, 880, 886,
891-3, 903-7, 914, 917, 963, 965,
969, 973, 975, 1015, 1020, 1039,
1052-4, 1057, 1064-6, 1075-6,
1085, 1087, 1095, 1097, 1102, 1105,
1107, 1112, 1120, 1122, 1137, 1139,
1141; pp. 24, 30, 34, 114, 132,
134, 154, 172, 266

Dhammacariya-sutta p. 68

Dhamma-sutta (= Nāvā-sutta) p. 76

Dhammika-sutta p. 90

dhāreti 401, 478, 688, 1149; p. 146

dhi-r-atthu 440

dhitimant 462, 542

dhīra 45-6, 165, 211-19, 250, 317,
349, 371, 380, 531, 581, 591, 709,
719, 775, 778, 838, 877, 890, 913,
964, 1009, 1052

Dhotaka 1007, 1061-8

dhona 351, 786, 813, 834

Nanda 1007, 1077-83, 1124

nandī 175, 637, 1055, 1101, 1109,
1115

nāga 29, 53, 166, 379, 421, 518, 522,
543, 573, 845, 1058, 1101

Nātaputta p. 120

Nālaka-sutta p. 164

nāma 153, 344, 648, 808, 872, 1037

nāma-kāya 1074

nāma-rūpa 355, 530, 537, 756, 909,
950, 1036, 1100

Nārada-Pabbatā(ubho) 543

Nāvā-sutta (= Dhamma-sutta) p. 76

nikati 242

niketa 207, 844

nikkama 68, 542

Nigaṇṭha p. 120; 381

Nigrodha-Kappa p. 82; 344

Nigrodha-Kappa-sutta (= Vangīsa-s°)
p. 82

-nighaṇḍu 1020; p. 134

nicchāta 707, 735, 758

nidahati 35, 394, 629

nidāna 270-1, 273, 728, 773, 865,
870, 874

niddhamati 56, 281-2, 962

nidhi 285

nindati 658

nindā 213, 826, 895, 928

- nipaka 45-6, 144, 283, 962, 1038,
 1062
 nipaccavādin 217
 nipuṇa 176-7, 317, 377, 383
 nibbāna 86, 186, 204, 365, 454, 758,
 822, 940, 942, 1061-2, 1086, 1094,
 1108-9
 nibbuta 19, 593, 630, 638, 707, 1041
 nimitta 341-2
 niyāma 55, 371
 niyyāna *p.* 172; 170, 172
 niratta 787, 858, 919, 1098
 Nirabbuda (niraya) *p.* 158; 660
 niraya 248, 277, 531, 660-1, 677-8
 nirāmagandha 251-2, 717
 nirāsa 460, 469, 491-2, 494, 1048,
 1060, 1078
 nirāsaya 56, 369, 634, 1090-1
 nirūpadhi 33-4, 642
 nirodha *pp.* 172, 174, 176, 178, 180;
 372, 731-2, 735, 744, 747, 750,
 754-5, 1037
 nivāta 265, 326
 nivīṭṭha 57, 324, 756, 774, 781, 824,
 892
 nivissavādin 910, 913
 nivuta 348, 763, 1032-3, 1082
 nivesana *p.* 30; 210, 300, 305, 470,
 785, 801, 846, 1055
 nisaṃkhiti 953
 nissita 66, 280, 458, 538, 752, 784,
 798, 824, 910, 938, 1069, 1071-2
 nihina 132, 661, 797, 842, 880, 890,
 905
 nīvaraṇa 17, 541
 nekkhamma 424, 1098
 Nerañjarā 425
 nhātaka 518, 521, 646
 pakappita 648, 784, 786, 802, 838,
 886, 902
 Pakudha (Kaccāyana) *p.* 120
 panka 535, 845, 945, 980, 1145
 paccaya 15, 339
 pajā *p.* 22; 298, 545, 571, 684, 823,
 936, 1104
 pajahāti 586, 789, 806, 1056, 1058
 paññā 77, 83, 90, 182, 184-6, 329-30,
 343, 346, 352, 373, 381, 390-1,
 432, 434, 443, 468, 591, 847, 880-1,
 931, 969, 1036, 1090-1
 paṭigha 42, 371, 536
 paṭiccasamuppādadasa 653
 paṭibaddhacitta 37, 65
 paṭisena 390, 832, 932
 Paṇḍava 414, 416-17
 paṇḍita 115, 254, 335-6, 523, 526,
 578, 653, 721, 733, 743, 820, 875-6,
 1007, 1125
 Paṭiṭṭhāna 1011
 pattheti 18-29, 70, 114, 900, 902, 914,
 976
 patha 139, 176-7, 370, 385, 476, 540,
 868, 976, 1045, 1076
 pada *p.* 106; 88, 204, 208, 252, 374,
 446, 603, 700, 765, 768
 padaka 595
 Paduma (niraya) *p.* 158; 677
 padhāna 70, 424-5, 428-9, 531
 Padhāna-sutta *p.* 100
 panudati 81, 359, 469, 480, 483, 535,
 928, 1055
 papañca 530, 874, 916
 pabbajati 405-7, 564-5, 1003
 pabbajita *p.* 122; 43, 274, 385, 423
 pabbajjā *p.* 122; 252, 405-6, 567
 Pabbajjā-sutta *p.* 98
 pabhankara 991, 1136
 pamatta 57, 70, 329, 332, 399, 430,
 1121
 pamāda 156-7, 184, 218, 334, 942,
 pamutta 212, 465, 498, 524-5, 530,
 532

- pamocana 78, 166, 1064
 parama 68, 87, 138, 219, 293, 296,
 347, 471, 693, 697, 788, 796, 903,
 1071-2
 Paramatṭhaka-sutta p. 192
 parābhava 91-2, 114-15
 Parābhava-sutta p. 26
 parāyana 377, 578, 717, 1114
 pariggaha 393, 470, 779, 805, 809, 872
 pariṇānāti 202, 254, 455, 473, 537,
 737, 748, 755, 778-9, 1082-3
 parideva- 328, 582-3, 585, 590, 592,
 774, 809, 811, 862-3, 923, 969, 970
 parinibbāti 591, 765
 parinibbānagata 514
 parinibbuta 346, 359, 370, 467, 735,
 737, 739, 758
 paribbajati 359-75, 639, 640, 741,
 1031-1032, 1039
 paribbāja- p. 120; 134, 533, 537
 pariyanta p. 136; 214, 537, 577, 964
 parivajjeti 57, 341, 395-7, 768, 771
 parissaya 42, 45, 770, 921, 960, 965,
 969
 parovara 353, 475, 704, 1048, 1148
 pasamsā 213, 256, 825-6, 895
 pasanna 316, 402-3, 550, 690
 pasīdati 356, 434, 563, 1147
 Pasūra 833
 Pasūra-sutta p. 196
 ssati p. 22; 76, 153, 164-5, 176-7,
 229, 313, 435, 580, 587-8, 647, 653,
 666, 676, 739, 761, 763, 784, 797-8,
 907-9, 935, 953, 998, 1063, 1113,
 1118-19, 1142
 pahāya (pajahāti) 17, 46, 66, 74, 209,
 493, 520, 771-2, 786, 791, 800, 844,
 900, 1070, 1082-3, 1134
 pahāyin 1113, 1132
 pahitatta 425, 432-3, 445, 961
 pahīna 250, 351, 370, 546, 558, 572,
 715, 1132
 pahūtapañña 83, 359, 539, 996
 pāgabbhiya 930
 pāṇa 117, 156-7, 220, 242, 247, 394,
 400
 pāṇin 201, 220, 307, 575, 587
 pātimokkha 340, 921
 pāpa 22-4, 57, 116, 133, 140, 216,
 246, 257, 280, 282, 399, 407, 452,
 520, 547, 636, 662, 674, 790; p. 156
 pāpaka 127, 215, 519, 664
 i
 pāpiyo 275
 pāragata 21, 210, 359, 638, 803
 pāragu 167, 251, 539, 699, 771, 1019,
 1105, 1112
 pāramī 1018, 1020
 Pārāyana 1130-1
 pāva 782, 789, ~
 Pāvā 1013
 Pāsānaka (cetiya) 1013; p. 266
 Pingiya 1008, 1120-1, 1123, 1125,
 1138, 1146
 pīti 257, 687, 695, 766, 969, 994, 1143
 puggala 544, 684
 puñña 82, 427-8, 431, 463-6, 481,
 486-9, 503, 505, 520, 547, 569, 636,
 697, 790
 Puṇḍarika (niraya) p. 158
 Puṇṇaka 1006, 1043-8, 1124
 putta 24, 33-4, 38, 41, 43, 48, 60, 137,
 255, 579, 686, 858
 puthujja 897, 911
 puthujjana 351, 455, 706, 816, 859
 puthuso 891-2
 punabbhava 162-3, 273, 502, 514,
 730, 733, 743, 746, 754
 puppha 2, 5
 pubbavāsanavāsita 1009
 pubbenivāsa 647
 pura 192, 695, 976, 1012-13
 purakkharoti 199, 277, 421, 784, 794
 803, 844, 849, 969, 1015

purisa 91, 102, 112, 181-2, 303, 316,
323, 348, 544, 657, 664, 806-7
Pūraṇa (Kassapa) *p.* 120
pūralāsa 459, 467-79, 486
pekkhati 36-7, 39, 49, 580, 1070,
1104, 1123
pecca 185, 188, 248, 278, 598, 661
peta 585, 590, 807-8
peyya 303
pesala *p.* 156; 678
pesuṇa- 362, 389, 663, 852, 862-3,
928, 941
Pokkharasāti *p.* 146; 594
porisa 256, 769
porohicca 618
posa 110, 662
Posāla 1008, 1112, 1114, 1125
posin 65, 220

phandati 587, 777, 936
pharusa 247, 932, 971
phala 80, 191, 239, 256, 576, 896, 977,
34
phassa 387, 506, 736-7, 759, 778, 851,
870-2, 923, 964, 966, 974
phassati 54, 393, 967
phusati 693, 739, 871-2, 918, 923,
966

bandhana 29, 44, 242, 367, 491, 522,
524, 532, 948
bandhava 60, 140
bandhu 54, 241, 430, 769, 911
bala 4, 68, 212, 297, 623, 770, 992
bahiddhā 203, 388, 516, 521, 526-7,
530, 532, 738, 917, 1111, 1113
bahussuta 58, 316, 320, 322-3
bāla 199, 318, 399, 578, 657, 662, 721,
825, 879, 880, 882, 887-8, 890, 893
Bāvarī 981, 984, 986, 994-5, 1006,
1019, 1021, 1025, 1028-9-30
Bimbisāra *p.* 134; 409

bija 77, 209
buddha 81, 83, 85-6, 134, 157, 161,
167, 202, 252, 276, 357, 377, 383,
386, 401, 408, 429, 454, 486, 513,
517, 523, 545, 558, 571, 622, 643,
646, 696, 993, 999, 1005, 1126-9,
1133
Belatṭhiputta (Saṇḍhaya) *p.* 120
Bodhisatta 683
brahmā 241, 285, 293, 315, 479, 508,
519, 524-5, 656, 982, 1024, 1065,
1133
brahmacariya 32, 274, 289, 292, 294,
326, 354, 396, 428, 463, 566-7, 655,
693, 696, 1128
brahmacārin 695, 973
Brahmaloka 139, 508-9, 1117
brāhmaṇa 81, 100, 129, 130, 136, 138,
140, 142, 189, 285, 291, 298, 301,
303, 305, 308, 344, 356, 382, 455-
60, 463-6, 469, 480, 490-503, 518,
529, 560, 566, 596, 599, 612-20,
649-50, 655, 790, 802-3, 843, 911,
946, 976, 979, 992, 997, 999, 1006,
1008, 1018, 1029, 1043-5, 1063,
1079, 1080-2, 1115, 1125, 1127,
1144; *pp.* 30, 70, &c.

bhakūṭi 485
Bhagavant 19, 31, *et passim*. Te bhaga-
vanto *p.* 136
Bhadrāvudha 1008, 1101, 1103, 1125,
1146
bhaya 37, 49, 51, 167, 207, 546, 561,
576, 753, 935-6
bhava 5-6, 16, 69, 175-6, 361, 367,
472, 514, 639, 640, 736, 746, 764,
773, 776-7, 836, 839, 856, 867, 869,
870, 923, 1046, 1055, 1133
bhavābhava 6, 496, 776, 786, 801,
877, 901, 1060, 1068
Bhāradvāja (Aggika-) *pp.* 30, 34

- Bhāradvāja (Kasi-) *p.* 20
 Bhāradvāja (māṇava) *p.* 146; 596
 Bhāradvāja (Sundarika-) *p.* 106
 bhāveti 256, 277, 322, 341-2, 507,
 558, 1049, 1130
 bhikkhācariyā 700
 bhikkhu 1-17, 87-8, 202, 204, 221,
 276, 280, 343, 359, 361-2, 366-8,
 384-6, 388-9, 392-3, 411-12, 416,
 513-14, 551, 735, 739, 741, 751,
 753, 783, 798, 915, 919, 920, 923,
 925, 928-30, 933, 958-9, 960-1,
 964, 975, 1015, 1039, 1056, 1104.
 bhīru 437
 bhūta 35, 146-7, 154-5, 194, 321,
 394, 542, 629, 742, 793, 975
 bhūnahu 664
 bhūripaṇṇa 346, 376, 538, 792, 1097,
 1136, 1138, 1140, 1143
 bhūrimedhasa 996, 1131, 1136, 1138,
 1140
 bhedāsankin 255
 bherava 546, 923, 959, 965, 984
 bhoganagara 1013
 bhovādīn 620

 marhsika 244
 makkha 56, 437, 631, 1132
 Makkhali (Gosāla) *p.* 120
 makkhin 116
 maga 275, 763, 880
 Magadha 408; *pp.* 20, 266
 magga 55, 84-9, 277, 347, 429, 441,
 582, 627, 724, 726, 736, 1130
 mangala 360
 macca 249, 574, 576-7, 580, 766
 maccu 332, 357-8, 578-9, 581, 587,
 755, 776, 1092, 1094, 1100, 1104,
 1118-9, 1146
 macchara 811, 862-3, 954
 maccharin 133, 663, 852
 macchariya 863, 928
 maññati 199, 206, 349, 382, 539, 588,
 756-7, 799, 806, 813, 822, 840,
 842, 855, 918, 1049, 1142
 mada 218, 245, 328, 399
 manas 77, 154-5, 252, 270-1, 330,
 365, 388, 449, 470 512, 659, 660,
 678, 680, 689, 692, 697, 766, 780,
 829, 834, 873, 889, 942, 967, 985,
 1004-5, 1024, 1039, 1142, 1144
 manuja 458, 553, 661, 1043-5, 1123
 manussa 75, 333, 335-6, 521, 568,
 607, 612-19, 683, 964
 mano-chatṭha 171
 mano-paṇḥa 1017
 manopadosa 702
 manta 249, 302, 306, 850, 1000, 1004,
 1018
 mantā *and* mantar 140, 159, 251, 455,
 690, 916, 1040, 1042
 manteti 126, 379; *p.* 136
 manda 666, 674, 728, 820, 1051
 mamatta 806, 871-2, 951
 mamāyati 119, 466, 777, 805, 809,
 922, 950, 1056
 maraṇa 32, 318, 426-7, 575-6, 742
 mahāpurisa 549, 1000-1, 1040, 1042 ;
pp. 134, 136, 138
 mahāvīra 543, 562
 mahiddhika *p.* 122
 mahesi 82, 176-7, 208, 646, 915,
 1054, 1057, 1061, 1067, 1083
 Māgadha 1013
 Māgandhiya 837-41
 Māgha (māṇava) 487-9
 Māgha-sutta *p.* 114
 Mātanga 137-8
 māna 4, 132, 245, 328, 342, 370, 469,
 473, 631, 756, 786, 830, 846,
 862-3, 889, 943, 1132
 māmaka 719, 806, 927
 māyā 89, 116, 245, 357, 469, 494,
 537,

Māra 33, 429-31, 442, 545, 561, 563,
 Māhissati 1011
 micchā 438, 815
 Migāra-mātar *p.* 172
 mitta 37, 58, 75, 185, 187, 244,
 254-5, 296, 338
 mithu 825, 882
 mukha 91, 93-114, 198, 275, 550,
 568-9, 608, 657-8, 664, 686, 1010,
 1022; *p.* 140
 muñja 28, 440
 muṇḍa(ka) *pp.* 30, 106
 muṇḍiya 249
 muta 714, 790, 793, 797-8, 802,
 812-13, 887, 1086, 1122
 muti 344, 846
 mutimant 61, 321, 385, 539, 881
 mutta-saddha 1146
 muddhā 682, 689, 983, 987-90, 996,
 1004, 1025-6
 muni 31, 83, 87, 163A-165, 207-21,
 251, 359, 414, 462, 508, 523, 527,
 540-1, 545, 571, 698, 700, 703,
 708, 711, 723, 779-80, 809, 811-12,
 821, 823, 838, 844-5, 850, 860,
 877, 912, 914, 941, 946, 1052,
 1074-5, 1077-8, 1081, 1090-1,
 1127, 1147
 Muni-sutta *p.* 48
 musā- 100, 122, 129, 158-9, 242,
 397, 400, 757, 843, 883, 886, 967,
 1131
 mūga 70, 713
 mūla 14, 239, 369, 524-5, 530, 532,
 916, 968, 1043
 Mettagū 1006, 1049, 1124
 mettā 73, 967
 Metteyya (Tissa) 814-15, 1006
 methuna 218, 291, 293, 400, 609, 704,
 814-17, 820-1, 835, 926
 medha 303

medhaga 893-4, 935
 medhāvin 323, 627, 1008, 1125
 Moggallāna *p.* 156
 Mogharājā 1008, 1116, 1119, 1125
 mona 540, 718, 723
 moneyya 484, 698, 700-1, 716
 momuha 840-1, 1120
 mosa-dhamma 739, 757-8
 mosa-vajja 819, 866, 868, 931, 943
 moha-dhamma 276
 moh-antara 478
 moha-magga 347
 moheti 332, 352, 1076
 yakkha 153-63, 168, 179, 273, 449,
 478, 875-6; *pp.* 44, 66
 yajati 302-3, 307, 463-6, 487-503,
 505-6, 509, 569; *p.* 114
 yañña 249, 295, 308, 458, 461, 482,
 484, 505, 509, 568, 1043-5, 1047
 yata 78, 216, 220, 490, 723, 850, 971
 yathākammūpaga 587
 yathātaccha 1096
 yathātatham 172, 600, 699, 732, 1127
 yathātathiya 368
 yathābhūtam 194, 202, 653
 yasa 138, 438, 817
 yasassin 179, 298, 343, 1117
 yācayoga (*or* yājaya^o) 487-9, 509,
 1046-7; *p.* 114
 yogakkhema 79, 425
 rakkhasa 310
 raja 139, 207, 275, 334, 391-2, 406,
 517, 662, 665, 974, 980
 rasa 65, 181-2, 243, 257, 387, 759,
 854, 922, 974
 rāga 2, 11, 74, 139, 204, 270-1, 341,
 361, 364, 370, 476, 493, 631, 764,
 795, 891, 974, 1046
 Rāga 835
 Rājagaha 408

- rājā 46, 72, 299, 303, 308-9, 332, 379-80, 411-12, 415-16, 419, 422-3, 455, 552-5, 568, 619, 652, 831, 991
 Rāhu 465, 498
 riñceti (ritta) 69, 156-7, 823, 844, 941, 958, 963
 rūpa 387, 530, 754-5, 759, 872-4 &c.
 roga 24, 51, 311, 530
 roseti 125, 130, 216

 lakkhaṇa 360, 408-9, 690, 927, 1004, 1018-21
 lābhā 31, 438, 828, 854, 929, 1014, 1046
 linga 601-7, 610
 lippati (limpati) 71, 250, 547, 625, 778, 811-12, 913, 1040, 1042
 lina 68, 717
 ludda 247
 Lumbineyya 683
 lūkhasa 244
 loka 9, 25, 59, 73, 83, 86, 115, 135, 139, 168-72, 185, 219, 249, 298, 339, 359-75, 394, 443, 455, 458, 466, 490, 496, 501, 522, 534, 560, 579, 581, 598-9, 633-4, 648, 683, 728, 768, 772, 775-6, 783, 786, 793-4, 796, 816, 845, 847, 855, 861, 864-7, 871, 894, 912-13, 915, 922, 940, 947-8, 950, 960, 974, 991, 993, 995, 998, 1035, 1040, 1043-5, 1047-9, 1053-4, 1064, 1066-8, 1077, 1087, 1103, 1122, 1133
 lobha 10, 367, 371, 537, 663, 706, 864-5, 928, 941
 lolo 22, 63, 922
 lolupa 56, 165, 707
 lohita 196, 433-4, 671; *p.* 156

 Vakkali 1146
 371, 800, 912
 350, 668, 955
 Vangīsa *p.* 82
 Vangīsa-sutta *p.* 82
 vaco 54, 330, 356, 365, 663, 890, 988, 994, 1006, 1057, 1083, 1110, 1147
 vacana 202, 417, 699, 932, 981, 984, 986, 997

 vañceti 100, 129, 356
 vata (*or* -bata) 89, 624, 782, 792, 798, 839, 898
 Vanasavhaya 1011
 vambhaya 905
 vara 301, 391, 408, 564-5, 683, 698, 996, 1128
 vasa *p.* 156; 274, 297, 315, 332, 444, 561, 578, 586-7, 968
 vācā 49, 125, 130, 214, 254, 353, 426, 451-4, 660, 678, 711, 850, 930, 971, 973, 1005, 1061
 vāda 100, 315, 327, 381-2, 390, 780, 787, 819, 827, 829, 832, 859, 906, 913, 973, 1076
 vādin 59, 217, 357, 382, 430, 620, 661, 910
 vādiyati 824, 832, 892
 vādayati 682
 Vāsavassa (deva) 384
 Vāseṭṭha (mānava) 612-19, 656; *pp.* 146, 154
 Vāseṭṭha-sutta *p.* 146
 vikappeti 7, 793, 802, 918
 vikkhambheti 969
 vigāhati 2, 825
 vigganhati (viggayha) 844, 878-9, 883, 904
 vighāta 814, 830
 vicāraṇa 1108-9
 vicikicchā 343, 346-7, 437, 540
 vicināti 5, 517, 524-6, 529, 658, 933
 vijānāti 93-113, 253, 316, 482, 656, 720, 739, 763, 953, 967, 1065, 1090-1, 1097, 1120, 1122
 vijigucchati 41, 253, 958, 963

- vijjati 20-1, 23, 11 431-2, 611,
 634-5, 715, 856-7, 987, 989, 1001,
 1088-9, 1098, 1100
 vijjā 162-4, 289, 334, 594, 656, 730
 viññāṇa 323, 329, 734-5, 1037, 1055,
 1073, 1086, 1110-1, 1114, 1122
 viññu 39, 294, 313, 317, 396, 403
 vitakka 7, 270-1, 970, 1109
 vitatha 9-13
 vitarati 495, 514, 746, 779
 vitta 102, 181-2, 302, 307
 vidita 504, 1052, 1057, 1075, 1102
 vidu 758, 762
 vidhūpita 7, 472, 475
 vidhūma 460, 1048
 vippamutta 176, 218, 363, 373, 472,
 483, 492, 501, 913-14
 vibhava 514, 856, 867, 869, 870
 vibhavati 871-4, 1113
 vibhāveti 230, 318
 vibhūsā 59
 vimala 378, 384, 476, 519, 637, 1131
 vimāna 887-8
 vimuccati 23, 211, 354, 475, 491-2,
 522, 534, 536, 755, 847, 975, 992,
 1071-4, 1101, 1114
 vimutti 54, 73, 725, 727
 vimokha 1071, 1088-9, 1105
 viyatta 800
 viyāpanna 314
 vīramati 59, 175, 218, 367, 400, 531,
 704, 828, 900, 925, 943, 953, 1070
 virāgaratta 795
 viriya 68, 79, 184, 353, 422, 432, 528,
 531, 548, 966, 1026
 viruddha 73, 248, 365, 630
 vivajjeti 53, 399, 407
 vivaṭa 19, 374, 763, 793, 921, 1003,
 1147
 vivattacchadda 372, 378
 vivadati 830, 832, 842-3, 879, 883-4,
 895-6
 vivāda 596, 796, 828, 862-3, 896, 907,
 912
 vivitta 221, 338, 810, 845
 viveka 474, 772, 814, 822, 851, 915,
 1065
 visarhyutta 621, 626, 634, 641
 visatta 38, 272, 1104
 visattikā 333, 768, 857, 1053-4, 1067,
 1085, 1087
 visama 57, 215, 243, 468, 774-5, 843
 visalla 17, 86, 367
 visuddha 67, 517, 687, 693
 visuddhi 813, 824, 840, 892
 visūka 55
 visenī 793, 833, 914, 1078
 visesin 799, 842, 855, 905
 1099
 vissuta 137, 597, 998, 1009
 vihanati 168-70, 673, 975, 1121
 vihāra 220, 391, 679
 vihārin 45, 375
 vihirīsati 117, 451
 vihesā 247, 275, 277
 vītivatto 6, 375, 796
 vīmaṃsati 215, 405
 vīra 44, 543, 573, 642, 646, 1096,
 1102
 vīvadāta 784, 881
 vutti(r) 68, 81, 220, 326, 676
 vusita 463, 493, 514
 Vetaraṇī 674
 veda 462, 529, 792, 995, 1019, 1023,
 1027
 vedagū 322, 458-9, 463, 472, 479,
 503, 528-9, 749, 846, 890, 947,
 1049, 1059-60
 vedeti 211-19, 251, 346, 467, 643,
 647, 758, 762, 878, 1148
 vedanā 435, 529, 739, 1111
 Vedisā 1011
 vevicchā 941, 1033
 Vesālī 1013

- vesiyā 108
 Vessavaṇa 380
 vyappatha 158, 163A-4, 961
 vyāruddha 936, 938

 saṃyata 88-9, 156-7, 216, 284, 464, 716
 saṃyama 264, 326, 655, 898
 saṃyuta 574, 1026
 saṃyutta 194, 300, 304
 saṃyojana 62, 74, 175, 363, 375, 476, 491-2, 621, 736, 1109
 saṃvara 1034-5
 saṃvuta 340, 413
 saṃsaya 682, 1030, 1112
 saṃsarati 730, 740
 saṃsāra 517, 519, 638, 729, 740, 746, 752
 saṃsuddha 162-3, 372, 881, 1107
 sakāyana 892-3, 906
 Sakka (= Indra) 346, 656, 679
 Sakka (= Sākyan) 345, 1063, 1069, 1090, 1113
 sakkhi 84, 122, 479, 508, 921, 934
 Sākya (= Sākyan) 225, 683, 685-6, 690-2, 991, 996
 saṃkappa 154-5, 280, 444, 818, 1144
 saṃkhata 21, 784
 saṃkhaya 74
 saṃkhā 209, 874, 911, 916, 1074
 saṃkhāyati 70, 209, 351, 391, 749, 1038, 1041, 1048; *p.* 158
 saṃkhāra 372, 731-2, 751
 sanga 61, 212, 250, 386, 390, 473, 527, 532, 621, 636, 791, 948, 1060
 saṃgha 421, 550, 569, 589, 680, 1015; *p.* 24
 saṃghāṭi 391-2, 456
 sacca 59, 78, 182, 187-9, 450, 453, 463, 479, 508, 632, 756, 758, 824, 832, 843, 882-6, 895, 903-4, 941, 946, 1133
 saññā 175, 535, 732, 779, 841, 847, 874, 886, 1071-2, 1113
 saṭha 133, 931
 sata 466, 741, 751, 753, 768, 771, 855, 916, 933, 962, 964, 1041, 1053-4, 1056, 1066-7, 1087, 1095, 1104, 1110-1
 sati 77, 340, 434, 444, 1026, 1035-6, 1107, 1143
 satimant 45, 70, 88, 174, 212, 411, 446, 503, 515, 973-5, 1070
 satta 248, 378, 387, 435, 643, 654, 683-4, 730, 754
 satthar 31, 153, 179, 343, 345, 545, 547, 556, 571, 573, 955, 1148
 sadda 71, 213, 387, 685, 759, 974; *pp.* 106, 136
 saddahati 186
 saddha 188, 371, 663, 853
 saddhā 77, 90, 182, 184, 286, 337, 432, 1026, 1143, 1146
 sa-dhamma 906, 1020
 santa (sammati) 460, 475, 656, 702, 721, 746, 783, 839, 861, 912, 946, 954, 1048, 1065
 santi 204, 208, 330, 332, 584, 593, 784, 837, 845, 900, 915, 919, 1066-7, 1096
 santhava 37, 168-9, 207, 245, 844
 sandiṭṭhi 567, 881, 891, 1137, 1139, 1141
 sannidhi 306, 924
 sapadānaṃ 65, 413
 sabbadhamma 167, 534, 699, 793, 914, 992, 1039, 1105, 1112
 sabbaloka 25, 56, 348, 378, 486, 515-16, 521, 527, 642, 761, 1009, 1104
 Sabhiya (paribbājaka) 510-14, 547; *pp.* 120, 122, ...132
 Sabhiya-sutta *p.* 120
 sama¹, 896

- sama² 47, 57, 90, 215, 220, 468, 508,
 661, 668, 670, 672, 799, 842-3,
 860, 952, 954
 samaṇa 83-4, 100, 129-30, 282, 515,
 518, 520, 529, 550, 714, 722, 828,
 866, 868, 883-4, 890, 932
 samaṇa-brāhmaṇā 189, 190, 441,
 859, 1079-82
 samatta 402, 781, 881, 889, 1000
 samatha 67, 732
 samantacakkhu 345-6, 378, 1063,
 1069, 1073, 1090
 samādhi 329, 330, 434, 921, 1026
 samāhita 174, 212, 214, 471, 477,
 519, 972
 samitāvin 499, 520
 samuggaṇhāti 352, 785, 795, 797, 801,
 837, 841, 907
 samuppāda 653
 samūhata 14, 360, 369, 1076
 samecca 361, 374, 475, 792, 1058
 sampajāna 413, 931, 1055, 1068
 sampadā 47, 505
 samparāya 141, 190, 864-5
 sampassati 81, 480, 582
 sambuddha 178, 180, 192, 446, 541,
 555, 559-60, 597, 994-5, 998, 1003,
 1016, 1031, 1145, 1147
 -sambudha 764
 sambodhi 478, 503, 693, 696, 963
 sambhava 620, 724, 726, 731, 734,
 741-2, 744, 747, 750, 1115
 sambhavati 272, 731, 734, 744, 747,
 750
 sammata 713, 760
 sammāsitar 69
 Sammāsambuddha 565
 sammuti 648, 897, 904, 911
 Sayampabha (deva) 404
 saraṇa 31, 179, 570, 591; *pp.* 24, 34,
 74, 114, 132
 sarīra 478, 584, 611
 salla 17, 51, 331, 334, 592-3, 767,
 938-9, 985
 sallakatto 560, 562
 savana 265, 345, 1120
 sahati 20, 253, 942, 969, 974
 sahassanetta 346
 sahājanetta 1096
 sahāya 35, 40-1, 45-7, 57
 Sākiya 423, 695
 Sāketa 1012
 sāta 773, 867, 869-70
 Sātāgira 153, 155, 157, 159, 161, 163
 Sātāgira-sutta (= Hemavata-s°) *p.* 38
 sādhu 45-6, 376, 379, 393, 482, 519,
 678, 712, 1052, 1075, 1102; *p.* 134
 &c.
 sārathi 83; *p.* 132 &c.
 Sāriputta 557, 955, 963
 Sāriputta-sutta *p.* 228
 Sāriputta-Moggallānā *p.* 156-8
 sāvaka 90, 134, 345, 357, 376, 389,
 391, 393, 395, 444; *p.* 22 &c.
 Sāvattihī 996, 998, 1012; *p.* 26 &c.
 sāvitti 457, 568
 sāsana 445, 482, 565, 570, 698, 815,
 933-4, 1084
 s(i)neha 36, 66, 209, 272, 943
 siva 115, 478
 sissa 997, 1004, 1006, 1028-9
 sīta 52, 467, 642, 966, 1014, 1073
 sīmanta 484
 sīmātigo 795
 sila 244, 246-7, 292, 294, 324, 381,
 783, 839, 840, 848
 silabbata (silavata) 174, 212, 624, 782,
 790, 797-9, 803, 836, 839-40, 887,
 898, 900, 961, 1079-83
 sukha 59, 67, 181-2, 256, 297-8, 323,
 383, 439, 592, 658, 683, 738, 760-2,
 873, 981
 Sugata 32, 391, 643, 659
 suci 75, 128, 205, 243, 410, 678-9

- Sujampati 1024
 sujñhāti 487, 508, 789
 sutavant 70, 90, 371
 suti 839-40, 1078
 suddha 90, 283, 435, 476, 636-7, 662, 788, 1120
 suddhi 373, 478, 526, 789-90, 794, 824, 830, 839-40, 875-6, 891, 898-901, 906, 908-10, 1079-81
 Suddhodana 685
 sudhammatā 180, 192
 subbata 89, 220, 441
 Sundarika-Bhāradvāja (brāhmaṇa) *pp.* 106, 114
 Sundarika-Bhāradvāja-sutta *p.* 106
 Sundarikā (nadi) *p.* 106
 subha 199, 341, 633, 824, 910
 sura 681
 surādhutta 106
 Sūciloma *p.* 66
 Sūciloma-sutta *p.* 66
 sūra 439, 831
 sekha 970, 1038
 Setavya 1012
 senā 436, 439, 443, 556, 561
 Seniya (Bimbisāra) *p.* 136
 Sela (brāhmaṇa) *p.* 134
 Sela-sutta *p.* 132
 sevati 47, 57, 72, 75, 88, 385, 391, 927
 soka 449, 469, 584, 586, 591, 593, 809, 862, 985, 994, 1052, 1056
 Sogandhika (niraya) *p.* 158
 socati 34, 79, 185, 188, 333, 445, 581, 805, 827, 861, 944, 948, 950-1
 1. sota 322, 345, 461, 922
 2. sota 197, 250, 319, 355, 433, 715, 6
 sottiya 533-4
 sopadhika 789
 sopāka 137
 somanassa 67
 soracca 78, 292, 330
 sorata 309, 513, 515, 540
 haṁsa 221, 350
 (loma-)haṁsa 270
 (loma-)haṁṭha-jāta 1017; *p.* 24
 hadaya-nissita 938
 hāpeti 37, 90
 hiraṁsati 117, 309, 368, 515, 583, 585
 hita 233, 665, 683, 692-3, 697
 Himavant 422
 hiri 77, 133, 253, 462, 719
 hīna 725, 776, 796-9, 816, 827, 899, 903-5
 huta 459, 461, 479, 487
 hutta 249; *p.* 106
 huram 468, 470, 496, 801, 1084, 1135
 hetu 16, 122, 775, 1131
 Hemaka 1007, 1084, 1086, 1124
 Hemavata (yakkha) 154, 156, 158, 160, 162, 168-9
 Hemavata-sutta *p.* 38

II

ENGLISH INDEX

- Abhidhamma-Piṭaka *p.* xiii
 Across 539, 1129; *pp.* 235, 267
 Adept 143, 528-9, 595, 782-3, 798,
 838, 870, 903, 1038
 Affection(s) 36, 41, 185, 187, 209,
 811, 863-5
 Ajita 1006, 1016-17, 1124
 Ajita's Question Sutta *p.* 243
 Ājavi 1146
 Alert 413, 751, 753, 1039
 Almsman 1, 43, 87, 202, 204, 221,
 252, 266, 276, 278, 280, 282, 343,
 374, 385-6, 389, 392-3, 403, 411-
 12, 416, 513-14, 573, 700, 715,
 735, 739, 741, 745, 751, 753, 783,
 919, 920, 923, 975, 1039, 1041,
 1104; *pp.* xiii, xix, 105, 133, 135,
 175, 183
 Almsman's Life and Householder's,
 Sutta *p.* 91
 Almswomen *p.* xix
 Alone 35-75, 388, 718, 821; *pp.* 25,
 143
 Aloof(ness) 213, 257, 718, 810, 821-2,
 852, 900, 915, 1065; *pp.* xxi, 25,
 143
 Anāthapiṇḍika *pp.* 27, 31, 65, 71, 91
 Anchorite 83, 99-100, 129-30, 189,
 375, 385, 441, 515, 518, 520, 529,
 533, 537, 551, 689, 718, 722, 816,
 820, 828, 883-4, 890, 932, 1079,
 1080, 1082; *pp.* 31, 45, 67, 121,
 123, 133, 135, 137
 Anchorite's Ideal Sutta *p.* 87
 " 133
 Anger *see* Wrath
 Anguttara Nikāya *pp.* xiii, xv
- Apt Words Sutta *p.* 105
 Arahat(s) 186, 539, 644, 1003; *pp.* 25,
 33, 135, 137, 139, 143, 147
 Arise! Sutta *p.* 79
 Armed Hand Sutta *p.* 225
 Arrow 331, 335
 Asita's *Nunc Dimittis* Sutta *p.* 165
 Asoka xiv, xviii
 Augustine, St. *pp.* xxii
 Austerity 77, 249, 267, 284, 292, 792;
 pp. xix, xxi
- Barbs 367
 Bāvarī 981, 984, 994-5, 997, 1006,
 1010, 1019, 1025, 1028-9, 1030;
 p. xviii
 Beauty Scorned Sutta *p.* 201
 Beliefs, outworn 1
 Bewilderment 347
 Beyond 1059, 1129; *p.* 267
 Bhadrāvudha 1008, 1125, 1146
 Bhadrāvudha's Question Sutta *pp.*
 xviii, 261
 Bhāradvāja 595; *pp.* ... 155
 Bhāradvāja (Aggika) *p.* 31, 35
 Bhāradvāja (Kasi) *p.* 21, 25
 Bhāradvāja (Sundarika) *pp.* 107, 115
 Bhāradvāja Sutta *p.* 21
 Bimbisāra *p.* 135
 Birth 136, 139, 141-2, 456, 462, 476,
 596, 599, 620, 650, 733, 1045-8,
 1052, 1056, 1060, 1079, 1080,
 1082; *p.* 107
 Birth and Death 32, 351, 467, 484,
 500, 517, 520, 725, 727, 729, 1122
 Blameless 1126
 Blamelessness 88

- Bliss 5, 228, 249, 323, 399, 478,
 525-6, 561, 709, 892, 1044
 Bliss, final 78, 86, 115, 139
 Body, last 471, 478
 Bonds 29, 375, 476, 491-2, 522, 532
 Bondages 347
 Boon of Boons Sutta *p.* 65
 Brahmā(s) 310, 315, 479, 508-9, 656,
 1024; *p.* 135
 Brahmin(s) 129, 136, 138, 140-42,
 286-93, 301, 303, 308, 382, 441,
 455, 458, 460, 462-3, 469, 518,
 529, 596, 599, 612-21, 647, 649-50,
 655, 790, 795, 802-3, 843, 907, 911,
 946, 1059, 1063, 1079, 1080, 1082,
 1115; *pp.* 31, 67, 107, 135, 147
 Brahminism's Golden Age Sutta *p.* 71
 Buddhaghosa *p.* xiv *n.*
 Buddha(s) 202, 204, 224, 226, 233-4,
 236, 276, 330, 401, 429, 446, 454,
 468, 559, 683, 696, 957, 999, 1005,
 1126, 1129, 1133; *pp.* xix-xx,
 135, 137
 Buddhahood 558; *p.* xx
 Butler, Dom Cuthbert *p.* xxii

 Calm, Calmly 67, 82, 322, 341-3, 434,
 460, 467, 491-2, 519, 534, 630, 642,
 707, 721, 839, 915, 917, 953
 Cankers 162-3, 178, 219, 367, 374,
 471, 481, 535, 539, 546, 572, 644,
 749, 765, 913, 996, 1082-3, 1100,
 1105, 1133, 1145; *p.* 183. *See*
 Uncankered
 Cankī *p.* 147
 Canon *pp.* xiii-xviii
 Carrion Sutta *p.* 59
 Cause(s) 209, 473-4
 Certitude 55, 70
 Cessation 754-5; *p.* 181
 Charpentier, J. *p.* xvii *n.*
 Chastity 396; *p.* xx
 Cleanse 279, 351, 435, 476, 508, 636,
 739, 834; *p.* xxi
 Commentary *pp.* xiv and *n.*, xvi, xviii
 Companionship 36-7, 40-41, 45, 47,
 54, 57-8
 Comprehension 329, 352, 537, 847;
 pp. xix, 183
 Conceit 4, 245
 Concentration 329, 434; *pp.* xxi, xxii
 Conduct 136, 142, 145, 263, 324, 376,
 393, 650, 848, 898, 914, 962; *p.* 79
 Confession 921
 Conscience (fear to err) 77, 133
 Consciousness 734-5, 874, 886; *pp.*
 xxi, 177
 Constancy 531
 Contact 736-7, 870-2; *p.* 177
 Contemplation 226, 810; *pp.* xxi,
 xxii
 Contentions Sutta *p.* 205
 Control 154-5, 250, 340, 850
 Conversion 227
 Cool 467
 Council, First *p.* xiv; Asoka's *pp.* xiv,
 xviii
 Covetise 367, 371, 663, 706, 954
 Crassness 13, 212, 772, 1051, 1106,
 1132
 Craving(s) 3, 70, 82-3, 211, 272, 306,
 339, 436, 474, 495, 592, 635, 640,
 715, 740-1, 746, 854, 916, 953,
 1021, 1033, 1041, 1060, 1070,
 1082-3, 1085, 1088-9, 1101,
 1103-4, 1109, 1123, 1137, 1139,
 1141; *p.* 177
 Cunda 83, 85
 Cunda Sutta *p.* 25

 Death 576, 578-9, 581, 587, 590, 629,
 755, 776, 806, 876, 1100, 1118-19,
 1146
 Deathlessness 80, 204, 225, 635

- Deceit 56, 116, 242, 328, 926
 Defile 1032-3
 Defilement 334, 949, 1099
 Deliverance *see* Release
 Detached 811, 853
 Desire(s) 367, 706-7, 766-9, 771
 773, 856, 902, 1048, 1051; *p.* 185
 Desires Sutta *p.* 185
 Dhammapada *pp.* xv, xvii
 Dhammika *p.* 91
 Dhaniya 30
 Dhaniya Sutta *p.* 5
 Dhotaka 1007, 1124
 Dhotaka's Question Sutta *p.* 251
 Dīgha Nikāya *pp.* xiii, xxi
 Discipline 7, 23, 898, 964, 974
 Disillusion Sutta *p.* 47
 Doctrine 69, 70, 81, 83, 87, 182, 186,
 188, 225, 257, 265, 276, 316,
 326-7, 374, 389, 450, 453, 461,
 480, 570, 694-6, 763, 785, 792,
 905, 921, 933, 947, 975, 993, 1015,
 1085, 1102, 1122, 1137, 1139,
 1141; *pp.* xx, 25, 35, 75, 105,
 133, 135, 267
 Donor 458
 Doubt(s) 58, 86-7, 231, 249, 318, 320,
 343, 346-7, 367, 477, 500, 510,
 514, 534, 540-1, 559, 635, 638,
 682, 866, 868, 972, 1059, 1063-4,
 1088-9, 1112, 1148-9
 Dread 231, 257, 270-1, 546, 572, 850,
 923, 948
 Dyads Sutta *p.* 173

 Effort 79, 184; *p.* xxi
 Eightfold 401-2
 Elephant 166
 Ender 467
 Energy 432
 Enlightened 81, 83, 85, 134, 180, 192,
 408, 523, 541, 545, 555, 560, 565,
 571, 643, 696, 993-5, 998, 1003,
 1016, 1031, 1147; *pp.* 135, 137,
 139, 417
 Enlightenment 139, 167, 178, 191-2,
 478, 503, 513, 517, 597, 622, 646,
 693, 992, 1128, 1145; *pp.* xix
 'Ere Dissolution comes' Sutta *p.* 203
 Errors, 470, 493, 638, 786, 846, 889
 Erudite 533-4
 Evil 519, 521, 1034-5
 Existence(s) 742, 1055

 Faculty 63, 340
 Failure 91-115
 Failures Sutta *p.* 27
 Faith 77, 182, 184, 286, 337, 371, 432,
 719, 749, 1026, 1143
 Fausbøll, V. *p.* vii, xvi
 Fear(s) 167, 546, 561, 572, 902
 Feelings 738-9; *p.* 177
 Fetters 62, 74, 175
 Fire-worshipper *pp.* 133, 135, 141,
 143
 Fires 19
 Flood 21, 173-4, 178, 183-4, 210,
 219, 273, 471, 495, 515, 771, 779,
 1082-3, 1101
 Fool(s) 61, 259, 399, 662, 706, 721,
 825, 879, 880, 882, 890, 893, 1051
 Forbearance 294
 Form 754-5; *p.* 181
 Formless 754-5; *p.* 181
 Franciscan Exhortation *p.* xx
 Free, freed 473, 475, 490-2, 501, 508,
 536, 546, 572, 593, 626, 643, 715,
 758, 823, 839, 852, 877, 897, 975,
 1057. *See* Release
 Friendship Sutta *p.* 63
 Fruit(s) 227, 486
 Further Shore 771, 823

- Gayā *p.* 67
 Gem 224-35
 Gem Sutta *p.* 55
 Generosity 187-8
 Goal 68, 228, 318, 377, 627, 725, 727, 911, 940
 God(s) 333, 346, 377, 443, 521, 527, 543, 680-1, 756, 956, 1043; *p.* 135
 Godhāvarī 977
 Good 94, 152, 219, 229, 239, 274, 324, 450, 460, 662, 1048
 Good Life Sutta *p.* 69
 Good Ship Sutta *p.* 77
 Goodwill 73, 223, 507
 Goodwill Sutta *p.* 37
 Gotama 91, 153, 164, 167, 448, 461, 487, 848, 933, 1117, 1135-6, 1138, 1140; *pp.* xiii, xiv, xix, xx, xxii, 23, 25, 31, 35, 71, 75, 115, 121, 123, 133, 135, 137, 155
 Gotama's Pilgrimage Sutta *p.* 99
 Gotama's Temptation Sutta *p.* 101
 Greed 328, 928, 941, 945
 Grief(s) 805, 809, 811, 948, 1106
 Growth(s) 14, 208, 235, 272, 329, 731, 913
 Growths Sutta *p.* 67
 Grudging 809, 811, 860
 Grumbling 43
 Hankerings 470, 758, 852
 Harm, Injury 35, 117, 148, 156-7, 200, 223, 288, 368, 513
 Hatred 12, 74, 150, 371, 493, 631
 Heart(s) 6, 23, 63, 75, 160-1, 183-4, 203, 228, 259, 269, 282, 341, 402-3, 435, 437, 482, 506, 531, 659, 725, 727, 746, 766, 778, 943, 975, 1026, 1111; *pp.* 135, 183
 Hemaka 1007, 1124
 Hemaka's Question Sutta *p.* 257
 Here and Now 343, 567, 626, 775, 1062, 1066, 1137, 1139, 1141; *pp.* 25, 143, 173, 183
 Hereafter 730, 786
 Hero(es) 439, 642, 646, 684
 Higher Life 326, 354, 566, 695-6, 717, 1128; *pp.* 135, 143
 Himālayan Sprite Sutta *p.* 39
 Hindrances, the Five 17, 66
 Holiness 285, 288, 487, 693, 697
 Holy Life 267, 274, 289, 292, 294, 463, 493, 655; *p.* xxi
 Homeless(ness) 274, 376, 406, 487, 497, 741, 751, 753, 844, 966, 970, 1003; *pp.* 25, 133, 143
 Hooker, Richard, xx
 Horner, I. B., *p.* xi and xix *n.*
 Household Life 43-4, 64
 Humility 326
 Hunger 436
 Hurrying and Lagging 8-13
 Ignorance 277, 347, 729, 730, 1026, 1033, 1105; *p.* 175
 Ill(s) 32, 36, 80, 170-2, 183-4, 250, 252, 283, 337, 454, 473, 537, 539, 626, 724, 726, 728, 731-2, 734-5, 739, 741-2, 744-5, 747-8, 750-1, 753, 760, 762, 770, 774, 789, 937, 1033, 1049, 1050-1, 1056-8, 1133; *pp.* 173, 175, 183
 Illumination *pp.* 173, 183
 Illusion 56, 74, 160-1, 847
 Ill-will 270-1, 507
 Inda 310, 316, 679
 Indifference 67, 73
 Individuality 1036-7
 Insight 55, 152, 163 A and B, 184-6, 323, 373, 425, 539, 706, 743, 837, 848
 Island 1092-4

- Jains 381
 Jānussoṇi *p.* 147
 Jātaka *p.* xvii *n.*
 Jatukannī 1007, 1125; *pp.* xviii, 261
 Jealousy 56, 109-10
 Jewels, the Seven *p.* 137
 Joy(s) 33, 67, 327, 330, 853, 1106, 1109, 1111
 Kaccāyana *p.* 121
 Kapilavatthu 1012
 Kappa 344, 349, 354, 356, 358, 1007, 1093, 1125; *p.* 83
 Kappa's Destiny Sutta *p.* 83
 Kassapa (Buddha) 242
 Kassapa, Pūraṇa *p.* 121
 Khandhakas *p.* xiv *n.*
 Khuddaka-Nikāya *p.* xiii
 Khuddaka Pāṭha *p.* xv
 King 553-4
 Know 317, 504, 527, 528, 530, 723, 730, 733, 737, 788, 792, 908-9, 1060
 Knowledge 322, 334, 378, 722-3, 868, 877, 1026, 1035-6, 1105; *pp.* xx, 135
 Kosala 976, 996
 Lanman, C. R. *p.* xvi *n.*
 Largesse Sutta *p.* 114
 Layman 44, 64, 220-1
 Lecher 107-8, 814-15
 Lechery 816-17, 820-21, 926; *p.* 197
 Lechery Sutta *p.* 197
 Lévi, S. *p.* xvi *n.*
 Lie(s) 397, 400, 1131
 Life 5, 175-6, 235, 243, 278, 746, 752, 764, 775, 779, 801, 875-7, 923, 1046, 1059, 1060, 1068
 Life's fuel 742-3; *p.* 179
 Life, last 502, 624
 Light 378, 501, 910, 991
 Lion 166, 546, 562, 684, 1015; *p.* 137
 Long Book *p.* 98
 Lore 70, 83, 261, 432, 434, 443, 463, 468, 503, 528-9, 539, 627, 733, 749, 789, 799, 846, 947, 969, 996, 1059, 1079, 1080, 1090-1, 1136, 1138, 1140
 Love 150, 162-3, 678
 Loyalty Sutta *p.* 63
 Lust(s) 176-7, 228, 243, 247, 270-2, 315, 367, 445, 467, 472, 483, 631, 913, 974
 Magadha 408, 1013; *pp.* 21, 267
 Māgha *pp.* 115, 121
 Mahā-pajāpati *p.* xix
 Majjhima Nikāya *pp.* xiii, xv, xix, xxi
 Makkhali Gosāla *p.* 121
 Man *and* Men 324, 333, 364, 377, 435, 443, 508, 521, 527, 558, 607, 610-19, 654, 740, 756, 792, 806-7, 936, 938
 Māra 33, 355, 357-8, 429, 430-1, 435, 439, 442, 545, 561, 563, 571, 733, 764, 835, 967, 1095, 1103-4; *pp.* 67, 135
 Matter 872-4
 Meditation *p.* xxi
 Meek 499, 513, 515, 623-4, 662, 719, 852
 Mendicants 381
 Mental State(s) 69, 264, 372, 478, 699, 787, 917, 1105, 1112
 Merit 82, 427-8, 431, 463, 481, 486-7, 490, 503, 505, 569, 697, 744-5, 953; *pp.* 115, 179
 Mettagū 1006, 1124
 Mettagū's Question Sutta *p.* 247
 Migāra's Mother *p.* 173
 Mind 14, 19, 58, 154-5, 171, 203, 270-1, 388, 434, 470, 478, 558,

- 699, 717, 725, 727, 783, 872, 1026, 1037, 1039, 1110-11, 1143-4; *pp.* xx-xxii
- Mindful 413, 975, 1104; *p.* xxi
- Mindfulness 45, 70, 77, 88, 973, 1026, 1036, 1053-4, 1085, 1087, 1110-11; *p.* xxi
- Moggallāna *pp.* 157, 159
- Mogharāja 1008, 1125
- Mogharāja's Question Sutta *p.* 265
- More Rejoinders Sutta *p.* 215
- Müller, Max *p.* xvii
- Nālaka 697, 699
- Nanda 1007, 1124
- Nanda's Question Sutta *pp.* xviii, 255.
- Nāta-putta *p.* 121
- Nerañjarā 425
- Niddesa *pp.* xiv *n.*, xv, xvi, xviii
- Nikāyas *pp.* xiii, xv
- Nirvāna 86, 204, 233, 267, 365, 453-4, 514, 758, 822, 940, 942, 1086, 1094, 1108-9
- Noble 533, 535, 758, 761-2, 765, 783; *pp.* xix, 181, 183
- Obeys, 340
- Obsession 916
- Octad of the Den Sutta *p.* 185
- Octad of Malice Sutta *p.* 187
- Octad of Purity Sutta *p.* 189
- Octad of Perfection Sutta *p.* 193
- Octads, Book of *pp.* xvii, 185
- Offerings Sutta *p.* 107
- Okkāka 302, 306, 991
- Open-handed(ness) 505, 509
- Order 227, 232, 235, 238
- Owning 805, 809
- Pack 626
- Pangs of Grief Sutta *p.* 145
- Paragon 518, 522, 543
- Paramatthajotikā *p.* xiii
- Parivāra *p.* xiv *n.*
- Passion 2, 11, 74, 139, 204, 341, 370, 465, 476, 493, 498-9, 507, 751, 795, 813, 823, 933
- Path(s) 227, 323, 374, 441, 514, 696, 714, 789, 790, 947, 949, 1040, 1042, 1086, 1099, 1130
- Pātimokkha *p.* xiii
- Patna *pp.* xiv, xviii
- Peace 79, 143, 146, 204, 208, 225, 257, 268, 332, 424-5, 454, 465, 481, 499, 519, 593, 683, 707, 714, 735, 737, 739, 746, 753, 765, 772, 783-4, 809, 837-8, 857, 896, 900, 912, 915, 919, 933, 946, 949, 954, 1065-7, 1087, 1096, 1099
- Perception(s) 732, 1071-2
- Perfect 376, 393, 788, 848, 947, 953, 1020
- Perfection 87, 788; *p.* 193
- Perplexity 510
- Personality 231, 530, 537, 756, 761, 950, 1073, 1100, 1119
- Pilgrim(s) 407, 456, 639, 640; *pp.* 25, 133, 137, 143
- Pilgrimage 405, 564-5, 567
- Piṅgiya 1008, 1125, 1146
- Piṅgiya's Question Sutta *pp.* xviii, 267
- Piṭakas *pp.* xiii, xiv
- Plastic Force 372, 731-2, 751; *p.* 175
- Pleasure(s) 50-1, 59-60, 152, 160-1, 166, 171, 175, 243, 284, 337, 435-6, 464, 497, 625, 639, 704, 719, 738, 772, 774, 845, 873, 940, 1039, 1041, 1046, 1070-2, 1091, 1098; *pp.* xxi, 121
- Poise, Poised 67, 73, 328, 515, 855, 952, 972, 1107; *p.* xxi
- Pokkharasāti 594; *p.* 147
- Posāla 1008, 1125

English Index

- Posāla's Question Sutta *p.* 265
 Power(s) 498
 Pride 203-4, 244-5, 328, 342, 370, 438, 469, 473, 493, 537, 631, 756, 786, 830, 853, 862-3, 889, 926, 942-3, 968, 1132
 Psychic Power *p.* 137
 Puṇṇaka *p.* xviii, 1006, 1124
 Puṇṇaka's Question Sutta *pp.* xviii, 245
 Pure, Purity 90, 162-3, 283, 372-3, 476, 517, 526, 636-7, 662, 678, 788-9, 790, 794, 824, 830, 839, 840, 875-6, 891-2, 898, 900-901, 906, 908-9, 910, 1079, 1080; *pp.* xxi, 135, 189
 Quaking 752, 902, 923; *p.* 181
 Rāhula Sutta *p.* 81
 Rājagaha *p.* 115
 Rancour 6
 Reality 9-13, 759
 Rebirth 16, 147, 152, 162-3, 209, 230, 273, 278, 339, 474, 496, 499, 514, 519, 535, 546, 572, 638, 647, 656, 740, 743, 746, 754, 839, 901-2, 1091, 1121, 1123, 1133; *pp.* 25, 143
 Rejoinders Sutta *p.* 211
 Release 10-13, 54, 66, 73, 166, 170, 172, 176-7, 211-12, 231, 344, 354, 373, 465, 472, 498, 522, 534, 725, 727, 746, 755, 847, 914, 992, 1071-2, 1088-9, 1101, 1105, 1114, 1149
 Renunciation 424, 1098; *p.* xix
 Resolve 187, 444, 921
 Return *p.* 173
 Reverie 69, 156-7, 165, 221, 425, 503, 638, 709, 719, 925, 972, 985, 1009, 1105
 Rhinoceros 35
 Rhinoceros Sutta *pp.* xv, 11
 Rhys Davids, T. W. *p.* xvi *n.*
 Right 215
 Right Conduct Sutta *p.* 79
 Righteousness 554, 1002
 Rites 231, 249, 1079, 1080
 Ruth 189, 292, 378
 Sabhiya *pp.* 121, 123, 125, 127, 129, 131, 133
 Sabhiya's Questions Sutta *p.* 121
 Sage(s) 39, 82-3, 87, 115, 177, 209, 210-11, 213, 216, 218-19, 220-1, 225, 252, 284, 343, 460, 481, 484, 523, 538, 540-1, 545, 591, 646, 691-2, 695, 698, 700, 703, 721, 723, 749, 778-9, 780, 809, 811-12, 821, 823, 845-6, 850, 860, 877, 889, 890, 912, 914-15, 941, 946, 953-4, 1074, 1077-8, 1090-1
 Sage Sutta *p.* 49
 Saint(s) 90, 135, 235, 250, 277, 441, 453, 458-9, 490, 518, 521, 573, 590, 656, 659, 775, 786, 848, 857, 861, 932, 954, 1052
 Sāketa 1012
 Sakka 346, 656, 679
 Sakyan 423, 683, 685-6, 691-2, 695, 991, 996, 1069; *pp.* 133, 137
 Salvation 371, 545, 571, 1061-2
 Saṃyutta Nikāya *pp.* xv, xviii
 Sāriputta 557; *pp.* 157, 159
 Sāvattthī 976, 996, 998, 1012; *pp.* 27, 31, 65, 71, 91, 105, 157, 173
 Schooled 513, 516
 Scion 528, 532
 Scornful 335-6
 See 317, 346, 374, 504, 908-9, 910
 Sela 554; *pp.* 135, 137, 139, 141, 143
 Self 271-2, 425, 432-3, 445, 477, 756, 790, 858, 918-19, 961; *pp.* 25, 143, 173, 183
 Self-bred 516, 527

- Self-denial 655
 Self-mastery, -restraint, -control 189,
 216, 284, 326, 413, 463, 490, 497,
 624, 723
 Self-poised 328
 Self-will 329
 Sense(s) 144, 214, 250, 373, 413, 436,
 526, 529, 535, 538, 697, 714, 719,
 778-9, 790, 792-3, 797-8, 802,
 812-13, 846-7, 851, 861, 887, 897,
 901, 914, 940, 943, 975, 1055, 1068,
 1082-3, 1121; *p.* xxi
 Serene 174, 328, 342, 972
 Short Book *p.* 54
 Sin 399
 Sinless 795
 Slander's Doom Sutta *p.* 157
 Slokas *p.* xvii
 Sloth 157, 334, 430, 436, 942, 1033
 Snake-book *p.* 2
 Snakes 1
 Solitude 718, 959, 969; *p.* xxii
 Souls 284
 Speech 450-1, 453, 961
 Stainless 176, 468, 515, 517, 624, 913,
 1105
 Steadfast 228-9, 519, 591, 719;
 p. xxi
 Steadfastness *pp.* xx-i
 Stream 173
 Stuff of Existence, of Life 728, 915,
 992, 1057, 1083; *pp.* 173, 175, 183
 Suddhodana 685
 Sumangala Vilāsinī *pp.* xiv and *n.*,
 xx *n.*
 Superman 165, 548, 1000, 1040,
 1042; *pp.* 135, 137
 Superman Sutta *p.* 133
 Sure 17, 324, 370, 477, 536
 Sustenance 747-8; *p.* 179
 Sutta *pp.* xiii, xiv, xviii
 Sutta-Nipāta *p.* xiii, *et seqq.*
 Sutta-Piṭaka *p.* xiii
 Sutta-Vibhanga *p.* xiii-iv and *n.*
 Tamer *p.* 135
 Tathāgata *pp.* xiv *n.*, xix
 Taylor, Jeremy *p.* xx
 Theft 395
 Thirst 436
 Thought(s) 7, 63, 69, 149, 154-5,
 211-12, 270-1, 330, 444, 506, 516,
 524-6, 717, 793, 1048, 1062, 1066,
 1109, 1144
 Threefold Lore 594-5, 656
 Tie(s) 473, 522, 527, 634, 717
 Time 535, 567, 860, 1101, 1137, 1139,
 1141
 Tissa Metteyya 1006, 1124
 Tissa Metteyya's Question *p.* 245
 Todeyya 1007, 1124; *p.* 147
 Todeyya's Question *pp.* xviii, 259
 Toiling and Moiling *p.* 179
 Tranquillity *p.* xxi
 Transmigration 69, 1050
 Trenckner, V. *p.* xvii
 Truth 182, 187-9, 224-38, 267, 318,
 320, 323, 327, 351, 353, 365, 368,
 378, 383, 397, 450, 453, 463, 467,
 471, 478, 536, 543, 554, 632, 684,
 693, 698, 756, 758, 763-4, 785, 792,
 856, 882-6, 895, 907, 934, 946, 993,
 1015, 1031, 1097, 1133; *pp.* xix,
 xx, 105, 181
 Truth-finder *p.* 23
 Udāna *p.* xvi *n.*
 Udaya 1007, 1125
 Udaya's Question Sutta *p.* 263
 Unburdened 495, 501
 Uncankered 493
 Undefined 1040
 Unfettered 68

- Unfevered 542, 642
 Upasiva 1007, 1124
 Upasiva's Question Sutta *p.* 253
 Upright 533, 536

 Vakkali 1146
 Vangisa *pp.* 83, 105
 Vāsetṭha *pp.* 147, 155
 Vedas 1019; *pp.* xvii and *n.*, 135
 Veil 372, 378, 763, 1147; *p.* 137
 Vesālī 1013
 Vice 348
 Vigilance 466, 768, 1143
 Vigilant 855, 1056
 Vinaya-Piṭaka *pp.* xiii, xiv et seqq.
 Violence 394
 Virtue 226, 294, 509, 665, 678, 717, 763, 783
 Vision 231, 290, 471, 635, 647, 795, 934, 1115, 1148
 Vita brevis Sutta *p.* 193

 Wanderer *p.* 133
 Want(s) 10, 56, 210, 280, 372, 460, 491-2, 537, 865-7, 1033, 1040, 1042, 1078
 Warring Sects Sutta *p.* 197
 Wastrel 116-36, 142
 Wastrel Sutta *p.* 31
 Watchful 446, 515, 751, 753, 933, 964, 1039, 1110-11
 Watchfulness 434, 771, 916, 1052, 1066-67, 1107, 1119
 Waverings 750-1, 1040, 1048; *p.* 179
 Way 55, 84-9, 176-7, 454, 701, 716, 724, 726, 906, 1096; *pp.* 235, 267
 Way Across 1130-1, 1145; *p.* xiii
 Way-across Book *pp.* 235, 267
 Weal 53, 146, 181-2, 258, 269, 326, 377, 385, 439, 453, 460, 592, 683, 760-2, 838; *p.* 183
 'What is a brahmin?' Sutta *p.* 147
 What Sāriputta asked, Sutta *p.* 229
 Wheel 554-7, 684, 693, 698
 Wisdom 77, 182, 565, 718, 723, 947, 962, 1101
 Wise 259, 349, 581, 653, 733, 743, 792
 Woe(s) 34, 61, 273, 574, 658, 666, 694
 Women 703; *p.* xix
 Woodland Sprite Sutta *p.* 45
 Words 254, 454, 850; *p.* 105
 Works 790, 803, 846, 887, 961, 1079, 1080, 1082-3
 World(s) xviii, 1, 9-13, 25, 56, 71, 73, 86, 135, 150, 168-70, 219, 340, 378, 441, 516, 520, 581, 666, 759, 845, 963, 1032-3, 1104, 1108-9, 1117-19; *pp.* 135, 137
 Worth 58, 488-9, 509; *pp.* 135, 137
 Wrath 1, 216, 245, 469, 537, 850, 866, 868, 928
 Wrong 14, 22-24, 57, 215-16, 369, 400, 531, 627, 757

 Yoke 641

 Zeal 88, 156, 184, 334, 344, 528, 531, 1026
 Zealous 445, 1056
 Zest 1143; *p.* xxi

DESCRIPTIVE LIST
OF THE
HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

Advertising Pages, giving the titles of the volumes of the
Series, and of some other works concerning India which
are published by
The Harvard University Press.

PREFATORY NOTE

THE HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES was founded in 1891. It aims to make available for us people of the West the incomparable lessons which (if we be wise enough to maintain the teachable habit of mind) the Wise Men of the East can teach us. These lessons concern mutual good will as between persons and nations, repose of spirit by the overcoming of ill will and worry and hurry, moderation of our desires, the simple life, and above all, the search after God, and the realization — whether by reasoning or by faith — of the divine immanence.

Buddha (563-483 B.C.) was the greatest teacher of pre-Christian Asia. His precepts and example have been or are an untold blessing to India and Ceylon and the Far East. The West and the Far East have now become near neighbors. From the responsibilities and the consequent results of such neighborhood there is no escape. Already, across the Pacific, there is at work an interchange of mighty influences that will affect profoundly, for better, for worse, the politics and literature and philosophy and religion and morals of both East and West, in short, the habits of mind of both hemispheres.

The first league of nations, we are told, was the International Telegraphic Union (1865); and the second was the Universal Postal Union. A concrete example, say of a universal tariff

truce, if strikingly successful, might prove to be the most effective possible world-lesson. Such agencies of world-progress, involving for each member a partial surrender of individual freedom, are now many and various. Their logical outcome is a League of All Nations and a World Court and the outlawry of war. To make such outlawry effective, mutual distrust and fear must give way to a pervading spirit of good will.

For working out this miracle, we need everywhere, as leaders, men of action who can command the sympathies and enthusiasm of great masses. And behind these leaders must stand scholars who know what the best and noblest achievements of the East and of the West are, and who can bring them to bear upon the life and ways of thought of the West and of the East. The work of the scholar is in vital relation with the practical needs of today.

The volumes of this Series may be roughly grouped as follows:

VEDAS, BRAHMANAS, UPANISHADS — 16 VOLUMES

The Veda of Praise or Rig-Veda, volumes 33*, 34*, 35*
 The Veda of the Sacrifice or Yajur-Veda, volumes 18, 19
 The Veda of Magic Charms or Atharva-Veda, volumes 7, 8
 Vedic Concordance, volume 10
 Rig-Veda Repetitions, volumes 20, 24
 Rig-Veda Brahmanas (Aitareya, Kaushitaki), volume 25
 Brhad-Devata, deities and myths of the Rig-Veda, volumes 5, 6
 Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads, volumes 31, 32
 Rig-Veda Index, volume 36*

BUDDHISM — 8 VOLUMES

Buddhism in Translations, volume 3
 Buddha's Teachings or Sutta-Nipata, Pali and English, volume 37
 Buddhist Legends, volumes 28, 29, 30
 Buddha's Former Births or Jataka-Mala, Sanskrit, volume 1
 Buddha-ghosa's Way of Holiness or Visuddhi-magga, Pali, volumes 39*, 40*

PHILOSOPHY — 2 VOLUMES

Sankhya System, by Vijnana-Bhikshu, Sanskrit text, volume 2
 Yoga System of Patanjali, Sanskrit text, volume 17

STORIES, COURT EPIC, PROVERBS — 8 VOLUMES

Pancha-tantra, oldest recension, Sanskrit text of Kashmir, volume 14
 Pancha-tantra of Purna-bhadra, Sanskrit text, volumes 11, 12, 13
 Vikrama's Adventures, Sanskrit (four texts) and English, volumes 26, 27
 Bharavi's Arjuna and the mountaineer, German, volume 15
 Indian Epigrams, done out of Sanskrit into English verse, volume 38*

DRAMA — 6 VOLUMES

Kalidasa's Çakuntala, Sanskrit and Prakrit text, volume 16
 Shudraka's Little Clay Cart, English, volume 9
 Raja-çekhara's Karpura-manjari, Prakrit text and English, volume 4
 Bhava-bhuti's Later Rama-history, Part 1, English, volume 21
 Bhava-bhuti's Later Rama-history, Part 2, Sanskrit, Prakrit, volume 22*
 Bhava-bhuti's, Later Rama-history, Part 3, text-criticism etc., volume 23*

* Of the above-listed forty volumes, nine are marked with a star to show that they are not yet actually issued. But of those nine, not less than seven have a good chance of being soon issued; for each of the seven is all, or nearly all, in type or printed. The seven volumes are: three of Rig-Veda, two of Buddha-ghosa, one of Indian Epigrams, and one (Part 2, text) of the Rama-play. — Thus, happily, there remain only two volumes of less assured future: they are Part 3 of the Rama-play, and the Rig-Veda Index.

Foreign Governments and various Learned Corporations, during the forty-odd years in which the volumes of the Harvard Oriental Series have been appearing, have intimated their confidence in the value and trustworthiness of these works by conferring upon the responsible editor such titles as Honorary Fellow or Correspondent or the like. — Of these

public marks of confidence in the Series, the Harvard University Press, as its official Publisher and in these advertising-pages, would mention the following:

From the Government of India, Hon. Correspondent (1912) of the Archæological Department; from the Gov't of French Indo-China, Hon. Life-member of the *École Française d'Extrême Orient*; from the University of Aberdeen on her Four-hundredth Anniversary (1906), and from Yale University (in 1902), Honorary Doctor of Laws;

Honorary Fellow (1896: now Senior) of the Asiatic Society of Bengal (founded, Calcutta, 1784); Honorary Member of the *Société Asiatique* (Paris, 1822), of the Royal Asiatic Society (London, 1823) and of its North-China Branch (Shanghai), and of the *Deutsche Morgenländische Gesellschaft* (Leipzig, 1845);

Member of the American Philosophical Society (1727); Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences (1780); Member of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts; President (1889) of the American Philological Association (1869); President (1907, 1919) of the American Oriental Society (1842);

From the Academy of Sciences of the Institute of Bologna (1712), the Imperial Russian Academy of Sciences (1725), the Royal Society of Sciences at Göttingen, Prussia (1751), the Royal Bohemian Society of Sciences (Prague, 1759), the Oriental Institute (Czechoslovakia), the Finnish-Ugrian Society (Helsingfors), the British Academy, the Academy of Inscriptions and Belles-Lettres (1663) of the Institute of France, — Correspondent.

HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

Founded in 1891 by CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN and HENRY CLARKE WARREN.

Edited, with the coöperation of various scholars (from volume 1), by C. R. LANMAN, and continued (from volume 41) by WALTER EUGENE CLARK, Wales Professor of Sanskrit at Harvard University.

Published by the HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS, Cambridge, Massachusetts, U.S. of America.

Agent of the Press in Great Britain is HUMPHREY MILFORD, Oxford University Press, Amen House, Warwick Square, London, E.C. 4, England.

Direct application for books of this Series may be made, with remittance, to the Harvard University Press at Cambridge, Massachusetts. The volumes will then be sent by post direct to the buyer.

The List-prices are subject to a trade-discount. No extra charge is made for postage. This list is here revised up to date of 1932. Prices of previous revisions are cancelled.

Descriptive List. A substantial pamphlet, containing a list of the volumes of this Series, and a brief Memorial of HENRY CLARKE WARREN, joint-founder, will be sent free upon application to the Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts. — The List tells the general nature and contents of these works, and the uses which they are designed to serve.

Externals of the volumes. The books of this Series are all printed on paper of high quality and tensile strength, and durably bound in full buckram. The edges are cut, but the margins are ample; and the tops are gilded, not for ornament, but to make cleaning easy. The backs are properly lettered. No work is issued until it is complete. Volume 10 is royal quarto (32 cm.); volumes 7 and 8 are super-royal octavo (28 cm.); and the rest are royal octavo (26 cm.).

HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

LIST OF THE HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

REVISED TO DECEMBER, 1932

Volume 1. Jātaka-Mālā. Stories of Buddha's former incarnations, by Ārya Cūra. Edited in Sanskrit [Nāgarī letters] by Professor HENDRIK KERN, University of Leiden, Netherlands. 1891. Second issue, 1914. Pages, 270. Royal 8°. *Out of print.*

A masterpiece, as to language and style and metrical form, of Buddhist literature of the Northern Canon. By the Honorable (ārya) Cūra. Stories used as homilies in old Buddhist monasteries. Editio princeps. Kern (1833-1917), long the honored Dean of the Dutch Orientalists, thought that Cūra flourished not far from 600 A.D., or earlier. English translation by Speyer, London, 1895, Frowde.

Volume 2. Sāṅkhya-Pravachana-Bhāṣhya, or Commentary on the Exposition of the Sāṅkhya philosophy. By Vijñāna-Bhikṣhu. Edited in Sanskrit [Roman letters] by Professor RICHARD GARBE, University of Tübingen, Germany. 1895. Pages, 210. Royal 8°. *Out of print.*

Sāṅkhya is dualistic. It recognizes souls and primeval matter, but not God. Vijñāna, however, is a pronounced theist. But in spite of his distortions of the original system, his Commentary (about 1550 A.D.) is the fullest source that we have for a knowledge of the Sāṅkhya system, and one of the most important (Garbe's Preface). Garbe studied the whole work with Bhāgavata Āchārya in Benares. German translation by Garbe, Leipzig, 1889, Brockhaus. Partial English version in J. R. Ballantyne's *The Sāṅkhya Aphorisms of Kapila*, London, 1885, Trübner.

Volume 3. Buddhism in Translations. Passages selected from the Buddhist sacred books, and translated from the original Pāli into English, by HENRY CLARKE WARREN, late of Cambridge, Massachusetts. 1896. Eighth issue, 1922. Pages, 522. Royal 8°. Price, \$3. Of Warren's Buddhism, a seventh issue, abridged, giving the Life of Buddha, for circulation in India, was published in 1922. Pages, 173. Strong paper covers. Royal 8°. Price, \$1. — The Warren Memorial (see below) was also reprinted in both the seventh and eighth issues.

Buddhism portrayed in the words of the Buddhists themselves. The life of Buddha (a beautiful narrative), his teachings, and his monastic order form the substance of this work. The Pāli passages, done into vigorous English and accurately rendered, are chosen with such broad and learned circumspection that they make a systematically complete presentation of their difficult subject. Warren's material is drawn straight from the fountain-head. It is this fact that has given to his work an abiding importance and value. It has been highly praised by competent judges. Moreover, it has enjoyed a very wide circulation in America and Europe and the Orient. And nearly half of the work was included by President Eliot in *The Harvard Classics* (New York, P. F. Collier and Son), of which a quarter of a million sets and more have been sold. The usefulness of Warren's work has thus been incalculably enhanced.

The life of Henry Warren as a scholar is memorable in the annals of American learning. A brief memorial of his life and public services is appended to volume 30 of this Series, of which he was joint-founder. It is also issued with the Descriptive List of this Series (see above, page 1). The List may be had, free, upon application to the Harvard University Press.

Volume 4. Karpūra-Mañjarī. A drama by the Indian poet Rāja-çekhara (900 A.D.). Critically edited in the original Prākṛit [Nāgarī letters], with a glossarial index, and an essay on the life and writings of the poet, by STEN KONOW, Professor of Indic Philology

HARVARD ORIENTAL SERIES

at the University of Christiania, Norway, and Epigraphist to the Government of India. — And translated into English with introduction and notes, by C. R. LANMAN. 1901. Pages, 318. Royal 8°. Price, \$5.

A play of court-intrigue, and the only extant drama written entirely in Prākṛit. It presents interesting parallels with the Braggart Soldier of Plautus.

Volumes 5 and 6. *Brhad-Devatā* (attributed to Cāunaṅka), a summary of the deities and myths of the Rīg-Veda. Critically edited in the original Sanskrit [Nāgarī letters], with an introduction and seven appendices [volume 5], and translated into English with critical and illustrative notes [volume 6], by Professor ARTHUR ANTHONY MACDONELL, University of Oxford. 1904. Pages, 234 + 350 = 584. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$7.50.

The Great-Deity (-book), "hardly later than 400 B.C.," is one of the oldest books ancillary to the Rīg-Veda. It includes very ancient epic material: so the story of Urvācī, the nymph that loved a mortal (whence Kālidāsa's great drama, *Urvācī*). The text is edited in a way that meets the most rigorous demands of exact philological criticism. The typographic presentation of text, version, and notes (critical and expository) is a model of convenience.

Volumes 7 and 8. *Atharva-Veda*. Translated, with a critical and exegetical commentary, by WILLIAM DWIGHT WHITNEY, late Professor of Sanskrit in Yale University, Editor-in-Chief of *The Century Dictionary*, an *Encyclopædic Lexicon of the English Language*. — Revised and brought nearer to completion and edited by C. R. LANMAN. 1905. Pages, 1212. Super-royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$15.

The *Atharva-Veda* is, next after the Rīg-Veda, the most important of the oldest texts of India. Whitney (1827–1894) was the most eminent American philologist of his century, and these monumental volumes form the crowning achievement of his life-long labors as an Indianist. For his translation, he expressly disclaims finality; but his austere self-restraint, resisting all allurements of fanciful interpretation, makes of his version, when taken with his critical and exegetical commentary, the sure point of departure for future study of this Veda and for its final comprehension.

The text-critical notes form the most important single item of the work. These give the various readings of the "authorities." The term "authorities" includes not only manuscripts (of Europe, India, Kashmir), but also living reciters (the Hindu equivalents, and in some respects the superiors, of manuscripts); and, in addition, the corresponding (and often variant) passages of the other Vedas. Whitney gives also the data of the scholiast as to authorship and divinity and meter of each stanza; extracts from the ancillary literature concerning ritual and exegesis; and a literal translation. Version and Comment proceed *pari passu*. Prefixed is an elaborate historical and critical introduction, and a sketch of Whitney's life, with a noble medallion portrait. A leaf of the birch-bark ms. from Kashmir is beautifully reproduced in color. The typography is strikingly clear.

Few texts of antiquity have been issued with appurtenant critical material of so large scope. And never before or since has the material for the critical study of an extensive Vedic text been so comprehensively and systematically gathered from so multifarious sources, and presented with masterly accuracy in so well-digested form.

Volume 9. *The Little Clay Cart* (*Mṛc-chakaṭika*). A Hindu drama attributed to King Shūdraka. Translated from the original Sanskrit and Prākṛits into English prose and verse by ARTHUR WILLIAM RYDER, Instructor in Sanskrit in Harvard University. 1905. Pages, 207. Royal 8°. Price, \$3.

A play of such variety, humor, and swift-moving action, that it has often been pro-

duced on the modern stage. Version, true and spirited. "The champagne has been decanted, and has not lost its fizz." Noble typography (Merrymount Press). Most books of this Series are technical. This one, like Warren's *Buddhism*, may be happily chosen as a gift-book.

Volume 10. Vedic Concordance: being an alphabetic index to every line of every stanza of the published Vedic literature and to the liturgical formulas thereof, that is, an index [in Roman letters] to the Vedic mantras, together with an account of their variations in the different Vedic books. By Professor MAURICE BLOOMFIELD, of the Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore. 1906. Pages, 1102. Royal 4°. Price, \$25.

The Vedas are, in general, the oldest extant records of the antiquity of India, and indeed of Indo-European antiquity. They are the sacred books of the oldest religion of the Hindus. They represent parts of a mass of traditional material, current in the various schools of Vedic learning, and handed down from teacher to pupil by word of mouth. What was originally one and the same stanza, appears in the texts of the various schools in more or less varying forms. The variations are often such as appear in the varying forms of popular ballads or of church hymns. Thus it happens that the texts of these different Vedic schools are often virtually related to each other and to their presumable original, as are the several kindred manuscripts of (let us say) a Greek play to each other and to the archetype from which they are descended. The comparison of these variant forms of a given text is often indispensable for ascertaining its original form and true meaning. This comparison is just what the Concordance enables us easily to effect. It is a tool of the very first importance for future editors and revisers and translators of Vedic texts.

The Concordance covers nearly all the important published texts, and is in one single alphabetic arrangement and one single volume. It is a royal quarto of over 1100 pages, of double columns, containing 125,000 lines or more. For the lines of the Rig-Veda alone, about 40,000 entries are required. The lines of the Atharva-Veda by themselves would require over 18,000 entries, but are often merged with those of their Rig-Veda correspondents. No less than 119 texts have been drawn upon for contributions to the work.

The book was printed (in the early years of the century) in a limited edition of 1000 copies, now half exhausted; and was printed, not from electrotype plates, but from type. The expense in money alone, to say nothing of scholarly labor, was about seven thousand dollars. It is not likely that any publisher or scholar will soon undertake a new edition. For many decades, doubtless, the work will maintain its value unimpaired, an enduring monument to the industry and learning and resolute will of Professor Bloomfield.

Volume 11. The Pañcha-tantra: a collection of ancient Hindu tales, in the recension (called Pañchākhyānaka, and dated 1199 A.D.) of the Jaina monk, Pūrṇa-bhadra, critically edited in the original Sanskrit [in Nāgarī letters; and, for the sake of beginners, with word-division] by Dr. JOHANNES HERTEL, Professor am königlichen Realgymnasium, Doebeln, Saxony. 1908. Pages, 344. Royal 8°.

Volume 12. The Pañchatantra-text of Pūrṇabhadra: critical introduction and list of variants. By Professor HERTEL. 1912. Pages, 246. Royal 8°.

Volume 13. The Pañchatantra-text of Pūrṇabhadra, and its relation to texts of allied recensions, as shown in *Parallel Specimens*. By Professor HERTEL. 1912. Pages, 10: and 19 sheets, mounted on guards and issued in atlas-form. Royal 8°. Vols. 11-13 not sold separately. Price of all three together, \$5.

Volume 14. The Pañchatantra: a collection of ancient Hindu tales, in its oldest recension, the Kashmirian, entitled *Tantrākhyāyika*. The original Sanskrit text [in Nāgarī letters],

editio minor, reprinted from the critical editio major which was made for the *Königliche Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen*, by Professor HERTEL. 1915. Pages, 160. Royal 8°. Price, \$4.

For two thousand years and more, the tales of the Panchatantra have instructed and delighted the Hindus. The Panchatantra has exercised a greater influence than any other work of India upon the literature of the world. It was the Panchatantra that formed the basis of the studies of the immortal pioneer in the field of comparative literature, Theodor Benfey. His *Pantschatantra* laid the foundation of the scientific treatment of the history of the fable. From the Panchatantra there came the lost Pahlavi translation, among whose effluxes are some of the most famous books of south-western Asia and of Europe, the Arabic *Kalilah and Dimnah*, the *Directorium* of John of Capua (1270), the *Buch der Beispiele* (1483) in German of great vigor and beauty, — and so on, down to that gem of racy Tudor English, Sir Thomas North's translation of *Doni* (1570), reprinted by Joseph Jacobs, London, 1888.

Hertel gives us here one recension of known authorship and date (1199), and another, the Kashmirian, many centuries older. To volume 11, Lanman adds an essay on *The External of Indian Books*. Of the Kashmirian recension, Hertel made a German version (Berlin, 1909, Teubner). The typography of both editions is clear and beautiful. The confusing embboxments of the stories (a second in the first, a third in the second, and so on) are disentangled in a most ingenious and simple way.

Volume 15. Bhāravi's poem *Kirātārjuniya*, or Arjuna's combat with the Kirāta. Translated from the original Sanskrit into German, and explained, by CARL CAPPELLER, Professor at the University of Jena. 1912. Pages, 232. Royal 8°. Price, \$3.50.

The subject-matter is taken from the great epic of India, the *Mahā-Bhārata*. Like the Ajax of Sophocles as compared with the Ajax of Homer, this poem is an instructive example for the student of literary evolution or literary genetics. For centuries it has been acknowledged in India as one of the six *Mahā-kāvyas* or most distinguished specimens of artificial poetry, a masterpiece of its kind.

Volume 16. *Çakuntalā*, a Hindu drama by Kalidāsa: the Bengālī recension, critically edited in the original Sanskrit and Prākṛits by RICHARD PISCHEL, late Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Berlin. 1922. Pages, 280. Royal 8°. Price, \$5.

As descendants of Bhārata, the Hindus are called Bhāratans. Their "continent" is called Bhārata-varsha, and their great epic is called the Great Bhāratan (Story or Fight), *Mahā-Bhārata*. *Çakuntalā* is the mother of Bhārata, and the beautiful story of her birth and life is told in the Great Epic. This play is a dramatization of that story, and is the masterpiece of the literature of India.

In 1898, Pischel wrote: "Es ist der sehnlichste Wunsch meines Lebens eine korrekte Ausgabe zu machen." His Prākṛit Grammar was off his hands in 1900. In 1902 he was called to the Berlin professorship. The six years of his tenancy were crowded with toil (finds from Chinese Turkestan, etc.). Then came the call to Calcutta, and, in 1908, his death at the threshold of India. Under many difficulties, the book (all but a couple of sheets) was printed at Stuttgart (Kohlhammer). Then came the world-conflagration. . . . The printed sheets reached America November 28, 1923.

Volume 17. The Yoga-system of Patañjali, or the ancient Hindu doctrine of concentration of mind. Embracing the Mnemonic Rules, called Yoga-sūtras, of Patañjali; and the Comment, called Yoga-bhāṣya, attributed to Veda-Vyāsa; and the Explanation, called *Tattva-vāiṣaradī*, of Vāchaspati-Miśra. Translated from the original Sanskrit by JAMES HAUGHTON WOODS, Professor of Philosophy in Harvard University. 1914. Second issue, 1927. Pages, 422. Royal 8°. Price \$5.

Three works in one pair of covers. The Rules are a set of mental pegs on which to hang the principles and precepts of a system which you must learn from the living teacher of your "school." The Comment is a reinvestiture of the skeleton of the Rules with the flesh and blood of comprehensible details. And the Explanation is of course a commentary on the Comment. The Comment is the oldest written systematic exposition of Yoga-doctrine in Sanskrit that we possess.

Of the Hindu philosophies, by far the most important are the ancient dualism called Sāṅkhya, the monism of the Vedānta, and the Yoga-system. Kāuṭīya, prime-minister of Chandragupta (300 B.C.), mentions Sāṅkhya and Yoga as current in his day. But the elements of Yoga, rigorous austerities and control of the senses, are indefinitely antique, and are one of the oldest and most striking products of the Hindu mind and character.

When one considers the floods of pseudo-scientific writing with which the propagandists of Indian "isms" in America have deluged us, one is the better prepared to appreciate the self-restraint of Dr. Woods in keeping all that pertains to miracle-mongering and sensationalism in the background, and in devoting himself to the exposition of the spiritual and intellectual aspects of Yoga. His work "continues the tradition of austere scholarship" which has, from the beginning, characterized the Harvard Oriental Series.

Volumes 18 and 19. The Veda of the Black Yajus School, entitled Tāittirīya Samhitā. Translated from the original Sanskrit prose and verse, with a running commentary. By ARTHUR BERRIEDALE KEITH, D.C.L. (Oxford), of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-law, and of His Majesty's Colonial Office, sometime Acting Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Oxford, Author of 'Responsible Government in the Dominions.' Volume 18, kāṇḍas I-III; volume 19, kāṇḍas IV-VII. 1914. Pages, 464 + 374 = 838. Royal 8°. Price, \$10. Not sold separately.

The Rig-Veda holds unquestioned primacy in the sacred literature of the Hindus; but their greatest mediæval scholiast on the Vedas, Sāyaṇa, did not write his commentary on the Rig-Veda until after his commentary on the Yajur-Veda, because (as he expressly tells us) of the transcendent importance of the Yajur-Veda for the sacrifice. The Yajur-Veda is the Veda of sacrificial formulas. An accurate edition of the Tāittirīya-Samhitā was published in 1871-2 by Weber. It waited nigh fifty years for a translator.

For the difficult task of translation, no English or American Sanskritist was so well qualified by previous studies as Keith. To it he has brought his wide and varied learning, and with such effectiveness as to produce a work, which, in spite of its large extent, is notable for its well-rounded completeness. The entire text is translated. The commentary runs *pari passu* with the version, embodies the gist of Sāyaṇa's scholia, and is presented with the utmost typographical perspicuity. An elaborate introduction is given, treating of the relation of this text to kindred texts, its contents, language, style, and date ('about 600 B.C.'), and the religious ritual of ancient India.

Volumes 20 and 24. Rig-Veda Repetitions. The repeated verses and distichs and stanzas of the Rig-Veda in systematic presentation and with critical discussion. By MAURICE BLOOMFIELD, Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology in the Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore. 1916. Pages, 508 + 206 = 714. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$10.

Volume 20 contains Part 1: The repeated passages of the Rig-Veda, systematically presented in the order of the Rig-Veda, with critical comments and notes. Volume 24 contains Part 2: Comments and classifications from metrical and lexical and grammatical points of view, and from the point of view of the themes and divinities of the repeated passages. Also Part 3: Lists and indexes.

The aim of this work is to help us to understand the oldest religious document of Indo-European antiquity. The arrangement of Part 1 enables the student to bring under his eye at one time all the passages that he needs to compare, and to do so with utmost ease and speed. The material of this work was, from a typographical point of view, exceedingly intractable. The result as a whole is a marvel of clarity and convenience.

This work is the first of the natural sequels to the late Professor Bloomfield's Vedic Concordance (see above, volume 10). Others, begun or planned by him, are in course of publication by Professor EDGERTON of Yale University. They are issued, under the title "Vedic Variants," by the University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia.

Volumes 21 and 22 and 23. *Rāma's Later History, or Uttara-Rāma-Charita*, an ancient Hindu drama by Bhavabhūti. Critically edited in the original Sanskrit and Prākṛit, with an introduction and English translation and notes and variants, etc. By ŚHRIĀD KRISHNA BELVALKAR, Graduate Student of Harvard University. (Now, 1920, Professor of Sanskrit at Deccan College, Poona, India.)

Dr. Belvalkar, when returning to India in 1914 from his studies at Harvard, shipped his manuscript-collations and other papers and his books by the German freighter, Fangturm. In August, 1914, the Fangturm was interned at the port of Palma, Balearic Islands. In 1919, she was released. In May, 1920, Dr. Belvalkar recovered his papers.

Volume 21 was issued in 1915, complete.

Of volume 22, the first 92 pages, containing the text of the whole play, have been in print since January, 1915, awaiting for nigh eighteen years the recovery of the material for the rest of the book.

Of volume 23, the material included collation-sheets giving the readings of manuscripts from widely-separated parts of India, from Nepal to Madras, from Calcutta to Bombay. In spite of the generous assistance of His Majesty's Secretary of State for India in Council, the work of getting the loan of these mss. was so great that it seemed best not to try to do it again, but to await the release of the Fangturm. — There is hope now that volumes 22 and 23 may be issued.

Volume 21. *Rāma's Later History. Part 1.* Introduction and translation. (Prefixed is a convenient synoptic analysis of the play. The introduction treats of Bhavabhūti's life and date and works, and includes a summary of the Rāma-story as given by the Rāmāyaṇa. Lanman adds an essay entitled 'A method for citing Sanskrit dramas.' The method is very simple and practical.) 1915. Royal 8°. Pages 190. Price, \$3.

Volume 22. *Rāma's Later History. Part 2.* The text, with index, glossaries, etc. (This was printed at Bombay, with the exquisitely beautiful type, newly cast for this work, of Jāvaji's Nirṇaya Sāgara Press, and upon paper made expressly for this edition at the Wolvercote Mill of Oxford. Each Prākṛit speech is followed by the Sanskrit version in immediate sequence.) See above.

Volume 23. *Rāma's Later History. Part 3.* Explanatory and critical epilogue. (Critical account of the manuscripts. Running expository comment. The variant readings of the mss. The typographical 'make-up' of Comment and Variants into pages is such that they go *pari passu*. These epigomena close with an essay on the two text-traditions of the play, a time-analysis, a note on the Hindu stage, etc.) See above.

Volume 24. *Rig-Veda Repetitions. Parts 2 and 3.* By Professor BLOOMFIELD. Described above, with volume 20.

Volume 25. Rig-Veda Brāhmaṇas: The Aitareya and Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇas of the Rig-Veda. Translated from the original Sanskrit. By ARTHUR BERRIEDALE KEITH, D.C.L., D.Litt., of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-law, Regius Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology at the University of Edinburgh. 1920. Pages, 567. Royal 8°. Price \$7.50.

In August, 1915, this work was ready for printing. In August, 1916, it was delivered to the Controller of the Oxford University Press. In 1918, the Press had nigh 350 men at the war. Of the older men who were left, many were busy with urgent war-work, such as a Report on Trench-fever for the American Expeditionary Force. And when, after the armistice, the printing was resumed, the author was engrossed in the work of Lord Crewe's Committee on the Home Administration of Indian Affairs.

The Vedic literature falls into three clearly sundered groups: the Vedic hymns or Mantras; the Brāhmaṇas, 'the priestlies' or 'priestly (discourses)'; and the Sūtras. Keith thinks that the Aitareya is not later than 600 B.C. The plan of the work is like that of volumes 18-19: elaborate introduction; translation; running comment on the same page. The skill of the priestly story-tellers is at its best in the splendid legend of Āyāṇḍeya (threatened sacrifice of son by father: cf. Isaac, Iphigeneia, Phrixos). Despite the pseudo-profundity and puerility of the Brāhmaṇas, they are of genuine significance to the student of Hindu antiquity, social and religious. And they are in fact the oldest Indo-European prose extant.

Volumes 26 and 27. Vikrama's Adventures, or The Thirty-two Tales of the Throne. A collection of stories about King Vikrama, as told by the Thirty-two Statuettes that supported his throne. Edited in four different recensions of the Sanskrit original (Vikrama-charita or Sinhāsana-dvātriṅcakā) and translated into English with an introduction, by FRANKLIN EDGERTON, Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Pennsylvania. 1926. Pages, 372 + 384 = 756. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$10.

Vikrama's Adventures is one of the most famous story-books of mediæval India. Vikrama is one of the most noted quasi-historical heroes of his times. His magic throne, hidden upon his death, is discovered by a later king, Bhoja. Each of the thirty-two (dvā-triṅcat) statuettes that support his throne (sinhāsana) tells one story to Bhoja. Hence the alternative title. The theme of the tales is Vikrama, who is meant to serve as a kind of Hindu King Arthur, an example for real kings.

Edgerton hopes that his work may prove suggestive as a model for students of comparative literature. The text of each of the recensions (Southern, Metrical, Brief, Jain) is printed in horizontally parallel arrangement, so that the stories which correspond to each other in substance are given, each story in all four recensions, in immediate juxtaposition. And the translation is treated in like manner. Comparisons are thus facilitated to a degree never before attained in a work of this kind.

From all this, Edgerton reconstructs, with some detail, and with reasonable certainty, the original work from which the current versions are derived. This he presents in the form of a Composite Outline, the concrete solution of a problem in literary genetics.

Volumes 28 and 29 and 30. Buddhist Legends. Translated from the original Pāli text of the Dhammapada Commentary, by EUGENE WATSON BURLINGAME, Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, sometime Harrison Fellow for Research at the University of Pennsylvania, and Johnston Scholar in Sanskrit at the Johns Hopkins University, and Lecturer on Pāli in Yale University. 1921. Pages, 366 + 370 + 378 = 1114. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price \$20.

Dhāmma-pada, or Way of Righteousness, is the name of one of the canonical books of the Buddhist Sacred Scriptures. It consists of 423 stanzas. These are reputed to be the very words of the Buddha himself. The Dhammapada Commentary, composed by an unknown author in Ceylon about 450 A.D., purports to tell the circumstances under which Buddha uttered each one of these stanzas. In telling them, it narrates 299 stories or legends. These stories are the preponderating element of the Commentary, and it is these which are here translated.

In style and substance the tales resemble those of the famous Jātaka Book, the Buddhist Acta Sanctorum, a counterpart of the Legends of the Christian Saints. And they present many parallels to well-known stories of mediæval literature, Oriental and European. For the comparative study of such parallels, Dr. Burlingame's Synopses, clear and brief, will prove a very great convenience. His vigorous diction suggests familiarity with such "wells of English undefyled" as the Bible and the Book of Common Prayer. The work gives a vivid picture of the every-day life of the ancient Buddhists — monks, nuns, lay disciples. It is thus, incidentally, an admirable preparative for the study of the more difficult Buddhist books in the original. As especially attractive stories may be cited: Lean Gotami seeks mustard-seed to cure her dead child; Murder of Great Moggallāna; Buddha falsely accused by Chinchā; Visākha; the Hell-pot. A critical and historical introduction is prefixed. At the end is an *intelligent* index, modeled after that of George Foot Moore's *History of Religions*.

In September, 1909, Mr. Burlingame came to Harvard University to pursue his studies with Mr. Lanman. It was at the suggestion of the latter that Mr. Burlingame undertook the task of translating into English the Dhammapada Commentary. He first made a table of contents of the work, giving the title of each story and the place of its occurrence in the Burmese text and also in the Cingalese text. He added an index to the titles, and an extremely good analysis of Books 1 to 4. This most useful preliminary work was formally presented to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences on December 8, 1909, by Mr. Lanman. The manuscript of the article was delivered February 5, 1910, and published soon after as pages 487–550 of volume 45 of the Proceedings of the Academy. The admirably elaborated manuscript of the entire translation of the Dhammapada Commentary was delivered by its author on January 10, 1917, just before the War.

Volumes 31 and 32. The Religion and Philosophy of the Veda and Upanishads. By ARTHUR BERRIEDALE KEITH, D.C.L., D.Litt., of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law, and of the Scottish Bar; Regius Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology at the University of Edinburgh; formerly of the Colonial Office. 1925. Pages 332 + 380 = 712. Not sold separately. Royal 8°. Price \$10.

This work aims to deal objectively with Vedic religion and philosophy as distinctive manifestations of the *Indian genius*. Free use has indeed here been made of the light thrown on the development of Indian religion by modern studies of other religious origins and types. But the fundamental fact has been constantly borne in mind that the Vedic religion is a system *sui generis*; and that (no matter what it may share with other religions) the character of this Vedic religion, as revealed in the elaborate Vedic literature itself, is, and for us should be, throughout the whole exposition, the feature of prime importance.

Of all classes among the people of India, it was the Brahman class of whose genius the Vedic literature is the manifestation. From earlier and simpler beliefs, the Vedas have evolved a definite and strikingly individual system of deities and a unique conception of the relations of men with their gods. — Doubtless in other, non-Brahmanic, elements of the people of India, there existed beliefs and practices quite different from those

recorded in the Vedas, and more in keeping with what modern study rates as marks of a low order of civilization. — But India is entitled to have her religion judged by the essential product of her highest intellects. Accordingly, in this work, the Vedic religion is presented essentially as it appears in the Vedas, and as it was no doubt felt by those responsible for these texts.

The philosophy of Vedic India, likewise, has been presented objectively, with full recognition of the fact that the Upanishads are the work of many minds, often in discord upon essentials, upon such final problems as being and non-being, birth and death, good and evil. To later thinkers of India, the Upanishads became sacred texts whose messages had to be brought into harmony. No attempt has been made to do this here. The author does not try to disguise the primitive character of much of this early thought; but on the other hand, fails not to point out the remarkable glimpses of a deep intuition into the problems of reality which the Upanishads do present. It is easy to overestimate these evidences of insight; but it is wrong to depreciate the intellectual achievement of some of these early Indian sages, or to deny their right to be set beside the great names of the pre-Socratic philosophy of Greece. — Due regard has also been had to the evolution, from the unsystematic Upanishads, of the Indian philosophical systems.

Keith's treatise is disposed under five main parts: 1. the sources; 2. the gods and demons of the Veda; 3. the Vedic ritual; 4. the spirits of the dead; 5. the philosophy of the Veda. — The references to the great mass of modern books appurtenant to the Veda are so ample that this treatise may well serve as an adequate bibliography of its vast themes. The usefulness of the work is enhanced by two indexes (they fill about 100 columns), a General index and a Sanskrit index. — Of the whole, Professor Frederick William Thomas of Oxford (*Journal of Theological Studies*, 31.250) writes: "A treatise of such character and compass as in the case of an ordinary scholar might well be the crown of a life's work."

Volumes 33 and 34 and 35. The Veda of Praise, or Rig-Veda. Translated from the original Sanskrit into German, with a complete running Commentary. By KARL FRIEDRICH GELDNER, late Professor of Sanskrit at the University of Marburg in Hesse, Editor of the Avesta or Sacred Books of the Parsees. — Part One, Books 1 to 4, revised edition, Pages, about 500; Part Two, Books 5 to 8, Pages, 444; Part Three, Books 9 and 10, Pages, 412. Pages in all three Parts, about 1356. Royal 8°. Not sold separately. Price, \$20.

Geldner was born December 17, 1852 (not 1853!), and died, a little over 76 years old, early in 1929. In his twenty-first year, in 1873, he came to Tuebingen to be a pupil of Rudolph Roth, the greatest Occidental master of Vedic learning. Geldner's first book was *Siebenzig Lieder des Rigveda, uebersetzt von Karl Geldner und Adolf Kaegi. Mit Beiträgen von R. Roth*, 1875. Forty-eight years later, in 1923, Part One of Geldner's *Der Rigveda, uebersetzt und erlaeutert*, was issued. It was published under the auspices of the Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Göttingen, and contains Books 1 to 4, pages 442.

In consequence of the World-war, the completion of this work seemed uncertain. The Göttingen Society graciously accepted the proposal that the Harvard Oriental Series should carry it through to the end. By 1928, the printing of Part Two, Books 5 to 8, and that of Part Three, Books 9 and 10, was finished. It remained to print a revised edition of Part One, Books 1 to 4. In spite of discouragements and obstacles, the printing of this revision was going on, when, early in 1929, Geldner suddenly died.

Whitney, the translator of the Atharva-Veda, as well as Geldner, were pupils of Roth. Both pupils devoted over fifty years of a busy life to the study and interpretation of the

Vedas. The life of each was proved otherwise fruitful: Whitney's, notably by The Century Dictionary, an Encyclopedic Lexicon of the English Language; and Geldner's, notably by his edition of the Avesta. Both Vedic works, the Atharva-Veda and the Rig-Veda, may truly be said to have been on the stocks for over half a century. The issue of each was postponed by the author's death, — Whitney's for about a decade. It is reasonable to hope that Geldner's may appear in 1933.

Volume 36. Index to Geldner's Rig-Veda translated. The plans of author and editor included a Historical and Critical Epilogue, to be issued, with an Index to Parts One and Two and Three, and as Part Four, volume 36 of this Series. To avoid further delay in the distribution of the translation, the Index will be treated as a Supplement to the translation, and completed as soon as is feasible.

Volume 37. Buddha's Teachings. Being the Sutta-Nipāta or Discourse-Collection. Edited in the original Pali text, with an English version facing it. By LORD CHALMERS, G. C. B., Hon. D. Litt., Oxford. Sometime Governor of Ceylon. Sometime Master of Peterhouse, Cambridge University. 1932. Pages 326. Royal 8°. Price, \$5.

A word as to the English title of this volume from the publisher's point of view. For students of Pali and Buddhism, the traditional name, Sutta-Nipāta, is doubtless the best name by which to call the Pali work itself. But for the general reader, the title Discourse-Collection is far too vague to be useful. Accordingly, since the suttas or discourses are mostly didactic and pronounced by the Buddha, the difficulty is perhaps best met by calling the volume "Buddha's Teachings, being the Sutta-Nipāta or Discourse-Collection."

The Jātaka or stories of the Buddha's former births, translated from the Pali by various hands (complete in six vol's, 1895-1907), marks an epoch in Occidental studies of Buddhist literature. The first volume (stories 1-150) was done by Robert Chalmers of Oriol College, Oxford, a friend and pupil of Rhys Davids. — Three years later, continuing and completing Trenckner's edition of the Pali text of the Majjhima-Nikāya (vol. 1, 1888), Chalmers issued, in quick succession, in 1898, vol. 2, and, in 1899, vol. 3.

After long and distinguished public service, begun (1882) in Her Majesty's Treasury and covering some years as Governor of Ceylon, Lord Chalmers became, in 1924, Master of Peterhouse, the oldest of Cambridge Colleges (founded in 1284 by Hugo de Balsham, Bishop of Ely). The Master's experience in translating and editing Pali texts (Jātaka, Majjhima), his residence in Ceylon (where Buddhism is a living religion), and his command of the outcome of the work of his colleagues (notably the work of Rhys Davids, and "the illuminating labours of Mrs. Rhys Davids in interpreting philosophical terms and ideas"), — these are some of the elements of a rare equipment for the exceedingly hard and important task of translating Buddha's teachings as set forth in the Suttas or Discourses or Dialogues of the Majjhima. And for that task, the years of relative leisure in Peterhouse (1924-1931) offered the occasion. Lord Chalmers made those years signally fruitful by issuing, promptly, and again in quick succession (1926, 1927), the two volumes of his translation. To us moderns, the teachings of the Majjhima are strange in form and alien in substance. That substance is so *thoroughly done into genuine English* that the version has become a true rendering. We can understand it without comments and without knowing the original Pali. By cutting out the profuse and tiresome repetitions, the three volumes of the Pali have become two in the English. With Hesiod, we may say, The half is more than the whole, *ἡμισυ παντός*.

His Majjhima work ended, with unabated vigor Lord Chalmers turned to the editing and translating of Sutta-Nipāta. In his *Introduction* thereto, he states and weighs the facts that bear upon the age of certain parts of Sutta-Nipāta, to wit, The Way-across (book 5) and The Octads (book 4) and The Rhinoceros (Sutta 3 of book 1). These he deems "the earliest elements of our present canonical Sutta-Nipāta." For there exists a commentary, actually named Nid-deśa or Ex-position, upon these "certain parts," which commentary was admitted into the Canon. And a commented text must be prior to its commentary, and is usually long prior. — Again, he holds that the narrative Suttas (1-2 of book 3), which tell of Gotama's renouncing the world and of his struggle with the Tempter, are clearly marked as primitive records by their straightforward simplicity and austere avoidance of fanciful embellishment. — Or again, for the age of some Suttas (1.12; 3.11; 4.16), he adduces the fact that they are cited in the Emperor Asoka's rock-inscriptions, of about 250 B.C.

But apart from their venerable antiquity, the Suttas of Sutta-Nipāta are of import also as Pali poetry. Take for example the dramatic scene (1.2) on some Indian Rio Grande (Mahi-tīre), where Gotama, now a Buddha, meets and converts the brahmin herdsman named Wealthy. — The herdsman has worked hard and likes to tell that he is prosperous. The first two items of his boasting are that he's well-fed and well-housed. The first he expresses by the phrase 'Done is my rice,' *pakk-odano*. The Pali word *pakka*, 'cooked, done,' Anglo-Indian *pucka*, is common to this day in the senses 'well-done, substantial.' His meaning is 'Substantial is my food.' And for 'well-housed' he says 'My hut is snug with rain-tight thatch and cozy fire.' And adds, in snug defiance, 'So, if the heavens will, the storm may burst again.' — Gotama gives the herdsman a Roland for his Oliver, and answers in quiet dignity, but with a pun of age-long fame, *a-kkodhano*, 'Without anger am I. My roof's aleak. The fires [of lust] are quenched. Let the storm burst.'

Herdsmen: Pakk-odano, Done is my broth = My food is drest.

Gotama: A-kkodhano, None am I wroth = My mood is blest.

And so on to the end, Gotama matches each wholesome joy of the layman's life with a higher joy of the spiritual quest. The storm bursts again. The herdsman sees a new light.

The Sutta-Nipāta, taken on the whole, is the clearest extant picture of primitive Buddhism. The most practical of Buddha's Teachings is his doctrine of Goodwill. In one century or another this has proved an incalculable blessing to one people or another. So may it do again! Goodwill, beyond all else, is what the world needs just now.

Volume 38. Indian Epigrams, done out of Sanskrit into English Verse. By CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN, Professor at Harvard University.

This is a small collection of Sanskrit epigrams, mostly done into English many years ago. They are such as the translator hoped and thought might prove acceptable as gifts to his friends. The Series, as a whole, consists mainly of books which are hard to study or even to read, and yet harder to write or even to edit. For the maker of a gift-book, near the end of his eighty-third year, — it is "Now or never."

Volumes 39 and 40. Buddha-ghosa's Visuddhi-magga or Way of Salvation. Edited, in the original Pali, by the late Henry Clarke Warren, and revised by Dharma-ananda Kosambi. Pages 638. Royal 8°.

Buddha-ghosa flourished about 400 A.D. His *Way of Salvation* is an encyclopedia *raisonnée* of Buddhist Doctrine. There is a certain fitness in calling him the Saint

Augustine of India. Both were men of majestic intellect and wide learning. Both were authors of works which for fifteen hundred years have maintained for themselves, each in its sphere, a place of surpassing influence. It is highly probable that Buddha-ghosa, at Great Minster in Ceylon, was composing the Visuddhi-magga at about the same time as that in which (413-428) Saint Augustine was writing *The City of God*.

Warren (1854-1899) planned to publish a scholarly edition of the Pali text of the Visuddhi-magga, in English letters, with English translation, index of names, and so on. — Accordingly, he had the text of the entire Visuddhi-magga copied out four times just as it stands in his four chief palm-leaf manuscripts, two Burmese and two Cingalese. These copies were made on the type-writer, and in Roman characters. The text of each manuscript was copied from beginning to end, in bits, each bit as long as the width of the paper would conveniently allow, the four corresponding bits of each manuscript in four horizontally parallel lines, and in the order B1, B2, C1, C2; and so on with the next bit. Thus the readings of any given word form a short four-line vertical column. This makes it very easy to collate the readings of the four different manuscripts and to note the points of agreement and disagreement. — Moreover, he had prepared a type-written manuscript of the whole work which he hoped might serve as final copy for the printer. And of the English translation he had made about one third, considerable portions having already appeared in his *Buddhism*. — Buddha-ghosa makes constant reference to the Sacred Texts of Buddhism, quite after the manner of the Fathers of the Christian Church. And of these quotations about one half had been identified by Warren in the extensive literature from which Buddha-ghosa drew.

Shortly before Warren died, Lanman told him that he, Lanman, hoped and expected to take up the work on Buddha-ghosa's *Way of Salvation* and finish it. "But," he added, "the obligation to Professor Whitney is the prior one." To "revise, bring nearer to completion, and edit" and issue Whitney's *Atharva-Veda* took much of Lanman's best working years, from Warren's death to the issue of the Whitney volumes in 1905. The general editorial conduct of the Harvard Oriental Series on the one hand, and on the other hand the work of finishing Buddha-ghosa's *Way*, — both these were for Lanman conflicting duties, too heavy perhaps for any one pair of shoulders.

Meantime, Buddhist scholars of Siam and Burma and Ceylon had not been idle. Their editions of Visuddhi-magga and appurtenant commentaries are in Asiatic letters. The first edition of the text of Visuddhi-magga in English letters is that of Mrs. C. A. F. Rhys Davids. On page ix of her *Foreword*, dated 1920, Mrs. Davids, with the modesty and unselfishness of a nobly true scholar, speaks of all these works as "error-clearing helps" for "the great edition to which my collaborators and I shall have served as stepping-stones." And now, in his turn, Henry Warren, no less true and noble, would be the first to welcome as a stepping-stone this long-delayed issue of his own work, in the same spirit of unselfish and practical devotion to the ideals of the scholar.

THE HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS

publishes other works relating to India, as follows:

Sanskrit Reader: Text and Vocabulary and Notes. By CHARLES ROCKWELL LANMAN, Wales Professor of Sanskrit at Harvard University. Seventh issue, 1920. Royal 8°. Pages, 430. Price, \$3.

The Reader furnishes the text for 60 or 80 lessons, and with it the needed lexicon and notes. The notes make constant reference to Whitney's Sanskrit Grammar: see below. These two volumes supply all that is strictly indispensable for the beginner. The text is in the Oriental (Nāgarī) letters; but a transliteration of the first four pages in Roman letters is added. The Reader is designed especially to meet the needs of those who have not the aid of a teacher.

The text is chosen: 1. from Classical Sanskrit works (Nala-story, fables of Hitopadeśa, "Manu's Laws"); and 2. from the Vedic literature (Rig-Veda hymns, Brāhmanas, Sūtras for wedding and burial). A literary-historical introduction is given for each kind of text. The vocabulary is in Roman letters, and is elaborated with the utmost care. Special heed is given to the development of the meanings (semantics: pāda, foot, leg, leg of lamb, quarter, quarter of a four-lined stanza, line, line of a three-lined stanza), and also to the etymological cognates in English, Greek, and so on (ta-d, τό, θά-t. tha-t, is-tu-d).

Parts of Nala and Hitopadesha in English letters. Prepared by C. R. LANMAN. 1889. Royal 8°. Pages, 50. Price, 50 cents.

A reprint of the first 44 pages of the Reader (see above), transliterated from the Oriental characters into English letters. It corresponds page for page and line for line with its original, so that the references of the Vocabulary and Notes of the Reader apply exactly to this reprint. With the Grammar and Reader and this reprint, the student is enabled to acquire a knowledge of the structure of the Sanskrit and to do some reading, without first learning the Oriental letters.

Sanskrit Grammar: including both the Classical language, and the older dialects of Veda and Brāhmana. By WILLIAM DWIGHT WHITNEY, late Professor of Sanskrit at Yale University. Fifth issue, 1923, of second edition, 1889. 8°. Pages, 578. Price, \$4.50.

The greatest extant repository of the grammatical facts concerning the Sanskrit language. A masterpiece of orderly arrangement. Prefixed is a brief account of the literature of India.

Vedanta Philosophy. Outline of the Vedanta system of philosophy according to Shankara. By PAUL DEUSSEN. Translated by JAMES H. WOODS, Professor of Philosophy at Harvard University, and CATHARINE B. RUNKLE of Cambridge, Massachusetts. Second edition. 1915. 8°. Pages, 56. Price, \$1.

This book, a translation of the summary given by Deussen at the end of his monumental work, *Das System des Vedanta*, was first published in 1906. Since then, thanks to the learning and enthusiasm of Charles Johnston, the whole great work has been made accessible in an English version (Chicago, 1912, The Open Court Publishing Company). Nevertheless, the small book was so inexpensive and practical that a new edition was made in 1915. The summary, although brief and compact, is yet so lucid and adequate, — in short, so altogether admirable, that it is not likely soon to be superseded by a better exposition of what has been to untold millions at once a philosophy and a religion.

IN PREPARATION

Sanskrit Grammar. The essentials, in briefest form and for beginners, as to sounds and sound-changes and inflection. With an appendix of linguistic Comment, entirely separate from the Grammar, and drawn from English and Greek and Latin. By C. R. LANMAN. 1924. Royal 8°. Pages, about 50 + 50.

Of all the Indo-European languages, Sanskrit is incomparably well adapted as an elementary study for the purposes of mental discipline in general and of rigorous linguistic training in particular. The transparency of its structure is absolutely unique. The various elements — prefix, root, derivative suffix, inflectional ending — which in synthesis constitute the word, are easily made the subject of quick and certain analysis by the veriest beginner. Thus Sanskrit serves best to reveal the fundamental principles which underlie the structure of English, Greek, Latin, etc. For these have suffered linguistic erosion to such a degree that their original structural features are often no longer recognizable. The habit and power of alert observation and of linguistic reflection (such, for example, as shows you without reference to any book, the connection of *batch* with *bake*, of *fil-th* with *foul*, of *gris-t* with *grit*) are best won by the study of some foreign language. One single year of Sanskrit may, with proper books, be made so fruitful, that any intending Anglicist or Hellenist or Latinist may well hesitate to forego the unmatched opportunity which it offers for winning a habit and a power that shall enable him to tackle his English or his Greek or his Latin more vigorously and effectively.

For this purpose, the mastery of Oriental alphabets is of no use whatever. The inflections and sound-changes of Sanskrit are far less difficult than is commonly supposed, and are positively easy if you separate the difficulties of the language from those of the writing. Therefore this grammar prints all Sanskrit words in Roman letters. The use of Roman letters makes clear to the eye, instantly and without a word of comment, countless facts as to the structure and analysis of the forms. And by combining ingenious typographic arrangement with the use of Roman letters, it is possible to accomplish wonders for the visualizing memory.

The explanatory or illustrative matter, drawn from English, Greek, and Latin, will be found helpful and often entertaining. Thus palatalization (important in Sanskrit: *k* becomes *ch*, *g* becomes *j*) is illustrated by *drink drench*, *hang hinge*, and so on. The section-numbers of the Comment correspond throughout with those of the Grammar, so that reference from the one to the other is 'automatic.'

Bhāratān Readings. Easy and interesting stories from the Mahā-Bhārata in the original Sanskrit. Printed in Roman letters, with a literal English version. By C. R. LANMAN.

These show to the beginner how exceedingly easy the easy epic texts are. They are chosen with common sense and good taste, and are purged of long-winded descriptive passages. They are in simple unstilted language, entertaining, full of swift-moving action and incident. Among them are the story of Çakuntalā (heroine of the masterpiece of the Hindu drama, and mother of Bhārata: see above, page 9), the Flood, the great Gambling-scene, the Night-scene on the Ganges (in which the fallen heroes come forth from the river and talk with the living), Vipulā (who restrains Ruchi from a lapse of virtue by hypnotizing her), the Man in the Pit (prototype of the famous mediæval allegory), Nalā and Damayantī (cut down from a thousand stanzas to a few hundred), and so on. To make easier and quicker the understanding of the text, each stanza is printed as four lines (not two), and the literal version is given in a parallel column.